



کتابخانه

جامعہ ملیہ اسلامیہ

دہلی

نمبر 320.5

شمارہ R 91

معدودتہ 13770

THE ROUND TABLE

QUARTERLY REVIEW OF THE POLITICS OF THE
BRITISH COMMONWEALTH

CONTENTS

The Empire, the League, and Security

Shipping An Empire Problem

Newfoundland

An Australian Economist looks at the United States

Northern Ireland and Partition

The United States Recovery and Reform

The Church in the Third Reich

India Towards the Goal

Great Britain Social and Industrial Reform

The Irish Free State Quo Vadis?

Canada

*The Political Scene—The Tariff Board and
Tariff Policy*

Australia

*The Financial Position—Constitutional and
other Problems*

Southern Africa

*Political Chronicle—The Altogetherness of
Everything*

New Zealand

The Budget—The Bank Problem

ARCH

MCMXXXIV

NUMBER 94

Price 5/-

THE ROUND TABLE is a co-operative enterprise conducted by people who dwell in all parts of the British Commonwealth, and whose aim is to publish once a quarter a comprehensive review of Imperial politics, free from the bias of local party issues. The affairs of **THE ROUND TABLE** in each portion of the Commonwealth are in the hands of local residents who are responsible for all articles on the politics of their own country. It is hoped that in this way **THE ROUND TABLE** will reflect the current opinions of all parts about Imperial problems, and at the same time present a survey of them as a whole. While no article will be published in the interest of any political party, articles may from time to time be published explaining the standpoint of particular parties or sections of opinion. In such cases, however, the character of the article will be made clear by an introductory note.

THE ROUND TABLE

A QUARTERLY REVIEW OF THE POLITICS OF
THE BRITISH COMMONWEALTH

CONTENTS

	PAGE
The Empire, The League, and Security	227
I. <i>The Collective System</i> II <i>Security To-day</i> III <i>The Problem before the Commonwealth</i> IV. <i>The Need for an Imperial Conference</i>	
Shipping: An Empire Problem	241
I. <i>The Shipping Crisis</i> II <i>The Battle Against Subsidies</i> III <i>A Problem for the Commonwealth.</i>	
Newfoundland	256
I. <i>The Causes of Collapse</i> II <i>The Amulree Commission</i> III. <i>Reconstruction</i>	
An Australian Economist Looks at the United States	270
I <i>The President's Task</i> II <i>Ordered Inflation.</i> III. <i>Criticisms and Reflections</i>	
Northern Ireland and Partition	290
I <i>Thirteen Years Ago</i> II <i>Changes Since 1921</i> III <i>Has Northern Home Rule Succeeded?</i>	
The United States Recovery and Reform	304
I. <i>Principles of the New Deal</i> II <i>Assaults on Orthodoxy</i> III <i>Difficulties Ahead</i>	
The Church in the Third Reich	319
I. <i>The Historical Background</i> II <i>The National Socialist Revolution</i> III <i>The Opposition in the Church</i> IV <i>The Office of Reich Bishop</i> (Continued on next page.)	

Nº 94. MARCH MCMXXXIV Price 5/-

London: MACMILLAN & CO., LTD.

Entered as second class matter March 15th, 1929, at the Post Office at
Boston, Mass., under the Act of March 3rd, 1879 (Sec. 397, P.L. and R).

CONTENTS (continued)

India : Towards the Goal	334
I. <i>The Reserve Bank Bill.</i> II. <i>The Cotton Negotiations.</i> III. <i>Army Finance and Other Problems.</i>	
Great Britain : Social and Industrial Reform	347
I. <i>Housing.</i> II. <i>Unemployment Insurance.</i> III. <i>Industrial Reorganisation.</i>	
The Irish Free State : Quo Vadis ?	367
I. <i>Dominion or Republic ?</i> II. <i>Martial Law.</i> III. <i>Financial and Economic Difficulties.</i>	
Canada	386
I. <i>The Political Scene.</i> II. <i>The Tariff Board and Tariff Policy.</i>	
Australia	403
I. <i>The Financial Position.</i> II. <i>Constitutional and Other Problems.</i>	
Southern Africa	424
I. <i>Political Chronicle.</i> II. <i>The Altogetherness of Everything.</i>	
New Zealand	448
I. <i>The Budget.</i> II. <i>The Bank Problem.</i>	

CONTENTS OF Nos. 92 and 93

No. 92. SEPTEMBER 1933

	PAGE
The Fruits of Anarchy	717
A Policy for the Pound	722
A Commonwealth Tribunal	742
The Honeymoon of the New Deal	757
An Australian View of the World Conference	771
Capitalism and Communism	787
India : Mr. Gandhi Again	807
Trade Prospects	823
Shipping Subsidies	836
Great Britain : The Government's Record	849
The Irish Free State : Ourselves Alone	866
Canada : Public Administration	883
Australia : <i>Australia's Response to the Ottawa Agreement— Appeals to the People—Public Finance and the Loan Council</i>	895
South Africa : <i>The Coalition—The Tax on the Gold Premium— The Amalgamation Movement</i>	915
New Zealand : <i>Finance—Loan Conversion—Ottawa Obligations —The Restriction Proposals</i>	925

No. 93. DECEMBER 1933

The Future of the League ?	1
Roosevelt's Road to Recovery	14
Japan's Bid for World Trade	29
British Commonwealth Relations	42
The Problem of South-East Europe	62
Australia and Japan	85
Was Moses Right ?	102
"The Dole"	116
India : The Trail of Anarchy	131
Great Britain : Light and Shadow	146
Ireland : Mr. de Valera's Objective	164
Canada : <i>Canadian Labour—The Banff Conference—The British Commonwealth Relations Conference</i>	182
Australia : The British Settlers in Victoria	203
New Zealand : <i>Central Banking and Exchange—Unemployment— London Interest on Local Loans—Defence</i>	209

THE ROUND TABLE

can be obtained through any bookseller or any of the following:



GREAT BRITAIN AND IRELAND

Messrs. Macmillan & Co., Ltd., St. Martin's Street,
London, W.C.2.

CANADA

The Macmillan Co. of Canada, Ltd., 70 Bond Street, Toronto

AUSTRALIA

Messrs. Macmillan & Co., Ltd., 32 Flinders Street,
Melbourne.

No.

SOUTH AFRICA

-J. Tyndall, Esq., 126 Corporation Buildings, Johannesburg.

NEW ZEALAND

The Secretary, THE ROUND TABLE, c/o Messrs. McKay and Little, A.M.P. Building, Wellington.

INDIA

Messrs. Macmillan & Co., Ltd., Bombay, Calcutta and Madras.

THE UNITED STATES

The Macmillan Co., 60 Fifth Avenue, New York.

EGYPT

The Express Book and Stationery Store, near Sheppard's Hotel, Cairo.

CHINA (AND STRAITS SETTLEMENTS)

Messrs. Kelly & Walsh, Shanghai, Hong-Kong and Singapore.

JAPAN

The Maruzen Company, Ltd., 14-16, Nihonbashi Tori
Sanchoe, Tokyo.

Should information be required or difficulty experienced in obtaining a copy of *THE ROUND TABLE*, application should be made to *THE ROUND TABLE*, 2 Paper Buildings, Temple, London, E.C.4, or to the above mentioned, or in Australia to Professor T. Laby, F.R.S., The University, Melbourne.

The price of THE ROUND TABLE is 5s. or \$1.00 per copy, and the annual subscription (including postage) 20s., in U.S.A. and Canada \$4.

Covers for binding volumes, 3s. 6d. each, and back numbers, price 3s. (except three or four out of print) can also be obtained from Messrs. Macmillan & Co., Ltd., London.

THE EMPIRE, THE LEAGUE, AND SECURITY

IT is evident that we are rapidly approaching the time when very far-reaching decisions will have to be taken by the nations of the British Commonwealth in the realm of international policy. The next Imperial Conference may prove to be the most momentous that has taken place since 1911, when for the first time the Dominions were admitted to the secrets of the already dangerous pre-war situation. For two major issues now confront us. The first is whether the collective system for dealing with international problems, represented by the League of Nations and the Kellogg Pact, on which the Empire has mainly based its foreign policy and its sense of security since 1918, can be restored so as to be an effective instrument for maintaining international liberty, prosperity and peace. The second is whether, in the present state of the world, our naval, military and air preparations are adequate either for making effective the collective system, or, if that system breaks down, for the defence of the members of the British Commonwealth or of the free institutions upon which it rests.

I. THE COLLECTIVE SYSTEM

DESPITE all that has happened in the last few years, we stand unrepentantly behind the League or collective system of dealing with international affairs. In its present form it may seem to be somewhat disabled. But the alternative is to drift back to the international anarchy,

The Empire, the League, and Security

the competitive armaments, and the military alliance system that inevitably both undermines liberty and ends in world war. It may well be that the present reaction from the collective system may prove to be valuable in the end. It takes a long time to educate popular majorities, whether they support democratic governments or dictatorships. It may be that only when they have looked back into the abyss of reaction, terror, dictatorship, poverty and war, which a return to anarchy implies, the nations, or at least the liberal nations, will realise that they must make the collective system a success or lose the free basis of their civilisation.

The weakness of the League hitherto has been twofold. In the first place the two largest world Powers, the United States and Russia, never joined it, and now two other first-class Powers, Japan and Germany, have left it. No collective system can ensure either peace or security so long as four world Powers remain outside. In the second place, even in the heyday of the League, none of its more important members really relied upon it for their own security or took seriously their obligations to ensure the security of others. The British Commonwealth relied primarily upon its navy. So did Japan. Italy relied upon her army and her alpine frontier. And France relied upon her army and her military alliances with Poland and the Little Entente.

The League, indeed, has hitherto been in great measure but a project of a League. It has done a great deal to make nations understand the world and one another's difficulties. It has proved a focus for world opinion. It has given the small nations a status and an influence they never had before. It has solved successfully a large number of difficult international problems. It has developed in high degree the technique of international conference. But it has never yet given security to its members, either by producing universal disarmament or by creating effective guarantees against aggression, and until it succeeds in doing these things it will never be more than

The Collective System

the project of what the League of Nations was intended to be.

Signor Mussolini has declared that if the League is to survive it must be reformed. That the Covenant may require some modification is possible. For instance, it would clearly be wise to separate the Covenant from the Treaty of Versailles. It ought, like a political constitution, to be outside and above all treaties or ordinary legislation. Signor Mussolini suggests that the great Powers should have a special position, on the ground that it is they who in the last resort make the serious wars or maintain peace. There is something to be said for this view. We are inclined to think that the original composition of the Council was sounder than its present composition, and that the smaller Powers over-played their hand when they insisted, in 1926, on being given more seats. There may, too, be something to be said for bringing the text of certain articles, such as Article 10, into line with what has become the agreed practice of the League in the light of experience.

But when all is said and done, these are quite minor matters. Any league system that is to fulfil the ideals of 1918 must have two primary characteristics: it must be universal, and its pacific procedure must be made effective through the existence of trustworthy sanctions against those who take the law into their own hands by going to war. Unless it has these characteristics it cannot do its work. One or two great Powers outside its membership can paralyse its capacity to give security in certain parts of the world, just as the abstention of the United States, by immobilising the British navy, has paralysed the effectiveness of Article 16 as a security for European peace. And unless the league can build up some system of mutual guarantee against aggression which nations can trust, disarmament will be impossible. Every nation will be forced to rely for security upon its own armaments, and, if these do not suffice, on alliances with other menaced Powers, with the inevitable result that the world will be divided

The Empire, the League, and Security

into rival groups instead of being united in a single organisation seeking to give security, justice and peace on equal terms to all. On the other hand, if the league can give security to its members, the fear of war will abate, national animosities will subside, and the question of revision of treaties and frontiers, which is almost impossible in the present state of world tension, will become manageable.

But there is another aspect of any effective league that cannot be left out of account—the economic side. In the original scheme of the League it was intended that it should lessen impediments to, and promote, international trade. It is probably true to say that while the abstention of the United States has been the main reason for the failure of the League, the second reason has been the unemployment and economic distress caused by unrestrained economic nationalism, reparations and war debts. Nations have so dislocated the world balance between supply and demand by obstructions to commerce and by excessive demands for debt and reparation payments, regardless of the effect on themselves, their neighbours or the world as a whole, that economic suffering has provoked domestic revolutions and dictatorships, and has made international political co-operation and good will almost impossible. The first condition of a sound world order, as of order within a nation, is security against those who try to get their way by violence. The second is security against ruin recklessly wrought by economic war. It ought to be an element of any true league system that, just as armaments should be limited by agreement, tariffs and other obstructions to trade should be the result of international negotiation and not be altered unilaterally, to the detriment of others, except after prior conference with those affected. Such a system is quite compatible with a large degree of national control over internal development and even of self-sufficiency, but it would mean that the external effects of tariffs and other restrictions would have to be considered at the same time as their internal effects, and that there

Security To-day.

would be an end of the present ruthless and reckless international economic warfare.

II. SECURITY TO-DAY

THESE considerations show how far removed the League as it exists to-day is from being an effective instrument for peace, security and prosperity. How far are we likely to make it into such a true collective system at the present time? The answer will depend mainly upon the outcome of the present disarmament negotiations. If a treaty can be signed that stabilises, say for ten years, the armaments of all nations at a defensive level that gives to each of them reasonable power to defend itself against aggression, and makes the chances of sudden and successful aggression extremely small, and if the signatories bind themselves to take effective sanctions against a violator of such a treaty, the foundation will have been laid upon which the other sides of a true collective system can be confidently developed during those ten years. We therefore in general support the proposals put forward by the British Government on January 31. They are not ideal proposals. The ideal basis would have been the abandonment by all nations of the "offensive" weapons forbidden to Germany under the Treaty of Versailles. A universal treaty on such a basis would have implied a real "change of heart" among the nations and a real possibility of a new and better international order. It would have freed the world from the fear of militarist aggression and have been an earnest of the nations' conviction that they can solve their difficulties and revise their treaties by the pacific procedure of the League, that is by conference, arbitration and judicial process. At the same time it would have made far smaller both the risk and the burden of the obligation to take "sanctions" against an aggressor.

But it seems quite clear that such an ideal consummation

The Empire, the League, and Security

is now out of reach. The first condition of any progress is an armament agreement acceptable both to France and to Germany. There will be no basis for reconstruction in Europe until Germany is given "equality," that is, until she is no longer by treaty rendered defenceless against her neighbours. The British proposal is an attempt to find the *via media* between "equality," which is the irreducible minimum of the German demand, and "security" against a Power potentially stronger than herself, by reason both of its population and of its industrial resources, which is the irreducible minimum of the French demand. It gives to Germany "defensive equality" at an early date and it endeavours to give to France security not only by allowing her a certain advantage in armaments, but also by making any infraction of the disarmament convention, once it is established by a permanent supervisory Commission, a matter for immediate international conference by all the signatories, and by requiring the return of Germany to membership of the League as one of the conditions of the ultimate convention. We do not propose to discuss here the technical details. The central issue is whether, while giving to Germany the "equality" to which she is inherently entitled, the nations, and especially the great Powers, are willing to make security a reality by binding themselves to take action that will be effective against a violator of the disarmament convention or an aggressor. If so, we shall begin to move forward again towards international peace and a true collective world system. If not, we shall inevitably move closer to the system of finding security by military groupings and alliances, which must weaken the collective system even on the diplomatic side and which in the end almost inevitably spells war.

There are many difficulties in the way of an effective system of international sanctions against an aggressor or a disarmament treaty violator. How are you to define the aggressor? Who decides when the *casus fœderis* has arisen? What happens if there is an acute difference of

Security To-day

opinion or if some signatories refuse to come into line? What is the most effective form of international pressure or "sanctions"? Unless it is so overwhelming as to make compliance certain it may only precipitate world war. Can any form of economic or financial sanctions be effective unless the whole of the rest of the world combines to sever financial and economic contracts with the aggressors? These problems, also, we do not propose to discuss in this article. We would only say that the root problem is not technical but how to create the will among the Powers to act simultaneously and effectively against an aggressor. If the great Powers really mean business, if, instead of relying upon their own armaments alone or on military alliances with one or two Powers, they decide that their own security can best be attained by resolute combination to prevent resort to war, they will be able to find the means appropriate to the circumstances of each particular case. But if that will is not there neither Article 16 nor any other similar assurances will work, even if the smaller Powers and one or two great Powers are willing to do their part. The value of "sanctions" depends upon their being really collective. It is the fact that all other nations combine against an aggressor that makes them overwhelming and so preventive of war. For one or two nations to be willing to take "sanctions" by themselves gives no real "security" and probably only spells war.

What does this mean so far as the British Commonwealth is concerned? The nations of the Commonwealth are already wholly pledged to the League system and the Kellogg Pact. They are parties to almost all the treaties that provide for pacific procedure and arbitration. They are committed to Article 16 of the Covenant. We consider that they should now be willing to enter into whatever system of collective sanctions against an aggressor may be necessary to make a disarmament treaty possible or pacific procedure effective, provided, in the first place, that the United States is also a party

The Empire, the League, and Security

to such a system, and provided, in the second place, that so far as Europe is concerned both Russia and Germany, as well as France and Italy and the smaller Powers, are also parties to it. For the issue before us is not between collective sanctions and glorious disentanglement and isolation. It is between an obligation that is the beginning of a move towards an ordered, free, and peaceful world, and an entanglement in a system of high armaments and alliances or *ententes*, in which every nation is liable to be dragged into war, not in order to defend world law and order, but because one of its allies in self-defence has been forced into war, or because its own vital interest or some strategic position, vital to its own security, is threatened by a war in which other Powers alone are at first engaged. But we are against their entering into any such obligation unless the United States and the other great Powers are also committed, for reasons given in the preceding paragraph.

We do not believe in any of the proposals for international armies, or police forces, or internationalised aviation. The only body that can raise, pay and give effective orders to such forces is a government, with powers to tax and make laws for its citizens. No occasionally meeting council representing a number of sovereign States, with no revenues under its own control, could either recruit, maintain or use effectively forces capable of acting decisively and successfully against any of the larger nation States of to-day, even though it had limited its armaments to a reasonable level. Such ideas are a mirage. If international sanctions are to be effective they must be carried out by the governments of the nations concerned, who alone can wield the power or call upon their nationals to make the sacrifices necessary to make such sanctions effective. Whatever the far future may bring forth, the collective system can only be made effective to-day by the loyal and prompt co-operation of the nation States of which the League and Kellogg Pact system are composed.

The Problem before the Commonwealth

III. THE PROBLEM BEFORE THE COMMONWEALTH

THERE are thus two problems of the first magnitude looming up before the British Commonwealth. The first is whether its members are sufficiently earnest supporters of the League-Kellogg Pact system to undertake to enforce the sanctions against an aggressor, or a violator of a disarmament convention, without which the collective system cannot ensure either peace or security, provided the United States and the other major Powers are willing to undertake similar obligations. We think that the nations of the British Commonwealth, being already committed by Article 16 of the Covenant, are so resolved. If there is any doubt upon the subject the sooner an Imperial Conference is summoned the better; for it is now the vital issue on which depend the hopes of disarmament and of putting upon an effective basis that collective system which it has been the first principle of Empire policy since 1918 both to promote and to rely upon. It is essential that we should know exactly what obligations we are now under or are willing to undertake.

But there is a second question that may also be presented at an early date. Even if the British Commonwealth is willing to play its part, the other Powers whose co-operation is necessary to make international sanctions effective may not be willing to play their part. From our point of view the most important of these nations is the United States. As experience since 1918 has shown, without her co-operation, or at least toleration, the use of the British navy to give effect to the economic sanctions provided for under Article 16 of the Covenant is impracticable. Yet there is no sign, as yet, that the United States is willing to assume any kind of obligation which, under any circumstances, might involve her in hostilities in Europe or Asia. The furthest her official

The Empire, the League, and Security

spokesmen have ever gone was the declaration of Mr Stimson, President Hoover's Secretary of State, in August 1932, and the declaration made by Mr. Norman Davis on behalf of President Roosevelt at the Disarmament Conference in May, 1933. Mr. Stimson*, in effect, said that it would be impossible for the United States to claim neutral rights in the case of a violation of the Kellogg Pact. Mr. Norman Davis, turning this general thesis into a formal offer, stated that, under a finally agreed disarmament convention, the United States would be willing to confer with other nations with a view to the maintenance of peace if the Kellogg Pact were violated. Further, under such circumstances she would, he said, refrain from any action that would tend to defeat any collective action that other States might take against an aggressor, if she were in agreement with their designation of that aggressor. The utmost, therefore, that both Republican and Democratic Administrations have seen their way to propose is that if a disarmament convention is signed the United States will not claim her old neutral rights against a combination of other States seeking to take sanctions against a violator of the Kellogg Pact, if she and they are agreed as to the aggressor. Yet that is an advance, and if a disarmament treaty were signed and all the great Powers except the United States really committed themselves to use sanctions against a violator of the treaty or of the Kellogg Pact, and if the United States bound herself as proposed by President Roosevelt, we should be in favour of the British Commonwealth's undertaking the full obligation of taking sanctions against an aggressor. We cannot say, however, that we think this is very likely at the present time, especially in the light of the recent Franco-German exchange of Notes. We have certainly to face the possibility that the project may fail. What then?

Mr. Walter Lippmann, perhaps the most authoritative interpreter of American policy, in an Armistice Day address

* See THE ROUND TABLE, No. 86, September 1932, p. 701.

The Problem before the Commonwealth

made some extremely interesting comments on America's present-day attitude to international problems.

There are no differences of opinion on the fundamental decision not to employ our armed forces in Europe or in Asia. No service can be rendered to the cause of peace by disguising or qualifying the singleness of American purpose in this matter. Were we in any way to fail to make this clear we should be practising a cruel deception which could only aggravate the situation abroad.

Mr. Lippmann then went on to discuss the difficulties that now confront the United States in maintaining her neutrality if a new war breaks out. "In fact, we learned during the war that in a world war neutrality for a great trading nation is eventually impossible." If, then, the United States is determined not to participate in a war in Europe or Asia, yet cannot maintain her neutrality in a world war, and "since we are not prepared to throw our whole might into the scales to prevent war," what is the practical policy for her to adopt? It is, in Mr. Lippmann's opinion, to try to localise these European and Asiatic wars and to prevent them from becoming world wars. When, then, does a local war become a world war? When, says Mr. Lippmann, the British Commonwealth of Nations is engaged. "With Britain fighting, we can be neutral only by yielding our rights or by challenging British sea power; with Britain neutral, the overwhelming weight of the world's naval armaments and of the world's seaborne commerce are on the side of neutral as opposed to belligerent rights." Mr. Lippmann then concludes:

Anyone who looks these things clearly in the face will conclude that by the circumstances of geography, by the destiny of history, and by the deep intermingling of our interests, it has become an absolute necessity both for Britain and America that they have the same policy in the event of another war. It is not necessary to have a treaty. It is necessary only to understand the facts. Thus it is only by understanding Anglo-American relations, and how in the supreme test our interests and the interests of the other English-speaking peoples are identical, that it is possible to have an effective policy of non-entanglement in another war,

or for that matter to avoid an Anglo-American war.

The Empire, the League, and Security

There is deep significance in these words. We, in the British Commonwealth, might put the thesis somewhat differently. But what it amounts to in practice is this: Assuming the breakdown of an effective collective security against war, because either the United States or other Powers are unwilling to play the full part necessary to its success, what is the alternative? The alternative is an Anglo-American understanding to the effect that a threat of war anywhere is, under the Kellogg Pact, a common concern to both; that they retain a free hand to deal with such a situation unrestrained by any military commitments and entanglements with other Powers; that if there is to be intervention to bring a local war to an end, or for any other reason, they will use their sea power together; and that pending such joint action they will jointly sustain neutral rights against the belligerents. Such a thesis clearly raises difficulties for Great Britain and the Dominions under the Covenant, and for Great Britain under the Locarno treaties. But there are probably even greater difficulties and dangers for both Great Britain and the Dominions if they have not a clear understanding with the United States as to the use of sea power in a world in which there is once more likelihood of large-scale war in Europe or Asia. For instance, a policy involving entanglements in Europe without an understanding with the United States is a policy that may embroil us in war not only with Europe but with the United States also. The Anglo-American issue is one that will require earnest consideration during the next few months no less than our relations to Europe. There were many who said in 1920 that the League could succeed only if it had the wholehearted support of the United States. Since 1920 we have attempted to regularise our relations with Europe and Asia while leaving our relations with the United States undefined. Should the present attempt to restore the universal collective system break down, our primary duty—if the most disastrous of all wars, an Anglo-American war, is to be avoided, if we are to avoid becoming

The Problem before the Commonwealth

part of a European balance of power, if there is to be any centre of gravity in the world at all—will be to regularise the relations between the British Commonwealth and the United States. For the world *par* that was maintained by Great Britain from 1815 to 1914 can no longer be sustained by Great Britain alone, but only by the British Commonwealth and the United States in co-operation.

This ultimate question of Anglo-American relations may, then, come rapidly to the front if an effective system of universal sanctions fails to be created behind a disarmament convention in the next few months. It will in any case have to be faced in connection with the Naval Conference next year.

But an even more immediate issue will be forced upon us in the same eventuality. The Disarmament Conference itself may end not, perhaps, in a renewed competition in armaments but in a considerably heightened level of armaments all round. Indeed re-armament is going on apace almost everywhere to-day. Certain great Powers, too, have rejected not only the machinery of the League but even the general philosophy of international co-operation that lies behind it, and have apparently embraced militarist and imperialist ideals. Under these conditions, are the mutual obligations and the defence preparations of the members of the Commonwealth itself adequate, either to enable it to play its part in what may be left for the time being of the League system or in the last resort to defend the various members and their free institutions within the Empire itself? For it is quite certain that weakness never maintained either peace or free institutions.

These questions have never been seriously raised since 1918, for the assumption has been that the League system, backed by the British navy, was sufficient to protect the Commonwealth from any visible menace. That is no longer true. Nobody can any longer say with assurance that no major war is in sight for ten years. Yet the problem raises very far-reaching issues. In the probable

The Empire, the League, and Security

state of world armaments in 1935 or 1936, what should our naval strength be? What type and distribution of vessels are required under modern conditions? What part should be played by the new air arm? There are those who say that despite our present expenditure on armaments we are not getting anything like proper value in security for the outlay because we are only the fifth air Power and because our naval equipment is not suited to post-war conditions. What should be the relative rôles of Great Britain and the Dominions, on the sea and in the air? Is it possible to combine a purely Commonwealth defensive system with a system of oceanic security such as was outlined in the last issue of *THE ROUND TABLE*?* These are vital issues and they may become urgent issues also.

IV. THE NEED FOR AN IMPERIAL CONFERENCE

WE have said enough to show what momentous questions lie behind the negotiations for a disarmament convention now in progress. They may lead to a reconstruction and strengthening of the collective system. They may force a reconsideration of our relations with the United States and of our own armament standards. Our sole conclusion to-day is that in any event the decisions to be taken must be Empire decisions, whether the problem to be considered is the establishment of a strengthened system of security based on sanctions or whether it is the situation that will arise from a breakdown in the present negotiations. As soon as the outcome becomes clear, an Imperial Conference should be held to consider the situation, including the policy to be pursued at the Naval Conference of 1935. It is the main purpose of this article to provoke discussion about the issues that will inevitably face such a conference, so that when it assembles public opinion will be alive to them.

* See *THE ROUND TABLE*, No. 93, December 1933, pp. 6-13.

SHIPPING : AN EMPIRE PROBLEM

I. THE SHIPPING CRISIS

THE British public seems suddenly to have woken up to the existence of an urgent shipping problem. It is one of the things that the majority of people prefer to forget—like the slums. A rare community of opinion in the shipping industry itself has been, perhaps, the principal means of rousing public opinion lately, but as any problem grows ever more serious it is bound eventually to force itself upon the unwilling attention. This problem is not new, nor has it essentially altered, save by intensification, in the last year or two, but every day makes its solution the more imperative.

In large part, it is a world problem, in which Great Britain shares along with other seafaring nations. That fact we must bear in mind at all costs. Our shipping industry is terribly depressed, but so—to judge from the figures of idle tonnage*—is that of every other country in the world, with the possible exception of Japan. World trade has shrunk to a fraction of its former self, as a result of the economic crisis directly, and also of the accompanying rise of tariffs and quotas. Our own protective policy, imperative as it may have been for other reasons, has contributed a great deal to the difficulties of our shipping industry. To take a limited but illustrative example, it is calculated that eight ships formerly engaged in the Birkenhead-Ireland trade will be permanently laid up as a result of the recent cut of 50 per cent. in cattle imports from the Irish Free State. The more successful protection is in

* See THE ROUND TABLE, No. 92, September 1933, p. 838.

Shipping : An Empire Problem

fostering domestic production for domestic consumption, the more desperate must grow the condition of our mercantile marine. Obviously the first principle of a policy for shipping must be the strenuous advocacy of greater liberty of international trade everywhere.

Yet even if world trade had not been subjected to the disastrous attrition of the past five years, there would still have been a considerable surplus of shipping available.* For that fact several reasons are responsible—the great expansion of the shipbuilding industry during the war, resulting in a seriously excessive output afterwards, when the submarine no longer stood the shipbuilder's friend; government promotion of shipbuilding activity in one way or another; the inability of the shipping owners to earn sufficient depreciation on their fleets, and hence their reluctance to scrap redundant tonnage; and the greater efficiency of modern ships per unit of tonnage, through higher speed, more economical use of cargo space, and equipment for more rapid "turning round." These are world-wide problems, and must be tackled, eventually, on a world-wide scale. Some of them are capable of partial solution by national action, and all of them must be borne in mind when we consider national policies designed to meet other difficulties. Any suggestion for action that did not take account of the redundancy of world tonnage—a misfortune to which the British mercantile marine has contributed, if anything, rather less than its proportionate share—must be discarded at once.

Nevertheless, there is also a specifically British problem, one which this country, an exposed island at the heart of a scattered empire, neglects at its peril. Our relative position is growing steadily worse. The share of the United Kingdom in world shipping business has fallen, not merely as compared with pre-war days, but even during the last few years. In 1914 we owned 41·6 per cent. of the world's tonnage; in 1932 our share had fallen to 28·2 per

* See THE ROUND TABLE, No. 92, September 1933, p. 837.

~~THE~~ The Shipping Crisis

cent., and last year to 27.5 per cent. It is true that, having regard to carrying capacity, speed, refrigerated cargo space, and other technical factors, the existing shipping of the United Kingdom, taken as a whole, is substantially superior to that of 1913, but it is the trend that is significant. If we are gradually losing ground to our competitors, it will become increasingly difficult for us to maintain even our present level of efficiency. Whereas between 1914 and 1933 world tonnage increased by 21,224,000 tons, British tonnage fell by 300,000 tons.

It needs but a moment's contemplation for us to realise how grave a calamity the failing strength of our mercantile marine would be for the British Commonwealth. We are dependent for our barest subsistence needs upon overseas sources of supply. If they are to be assured to us in the event of war, we require not only a navy strong enough to defend our trade routes but also a merchant fleet of our own to carry men, foodstuffs, fuel, munitions, and naval and military supplies. Even ruling out the possibility of war on a grand scale, shipping is the greatest of our invisible exports, a vital provider of the means to buy foodstuffs, raw materials and manufactured goods from abroad. It may well be described as the key to the key industries.

We should be crying for the moon were we to demand a return to our pre-war supremacy in world shipping—an aim as impossible as the Victorian ideal of remaining "the workshop of the world." Just as other nations have learnt our industrial technique, so other nations have set up in the ocean carrying business. In particular, the war gave the United States and Japan their opportunity to build great mercantile marines, and we cannot conjure away the war now. But there is no reason why that process should be indefinitely prolonged, and certainly no reason why we should submit to its being artificially stimulated. The British mercantile marine can and must meet all legitimate competition; if it cannot do so, in perhaps the least sheltered industry in the world, it will

Shipping : An Empire Problem

have to go under, or we must pay a heavy price indeed for keeping it afloat. On the other hand, competition based on subsidies, government aid to shipbuilding, replacement bonuses, and other artificial support demands special defences which individual shipowners are wholly unable to construct. Over £30,000,000 a year is now paid by foreign governments in subsidies to their ships, and the menace spreads even to those imperial trade routes which have been peculiarly our own province.

One notorious example, which was described in a recent issue of *THE ROUND TABLE*,* deserves to be quoted again. The Matson line, trading from the United States to Australia *via* Honolulu and New Zealand, has been subsidised heavily by the United States Government, to the serious injury of the British lines long established on the same and associated routes. Not content with this, the United States forbids any but American ships to carry passengers or cargo from San Francisco or Los Angeles to Honolulu, save as part of a through voyage; whereas the Matson line is quite unrestricted in its competition with British ships on the comparable passage between New Zealand and Australia.

II. THE BATTLE AGAINST SUBSIDIES

BYOND doubt, the best solution would be international agreement for the mutual abolition of shipping subsidies and all similar devices. Indeed, in the long run this is the only possible cure for a disease from which all—subsidising countries and others alike—are suffering. It must be the basis of our long-range policy and the test of our short-range policy. Whatever else we decide, our programme must include an open offer to the world of a "pact of non-aggression" in shipping matters. Unfortunately, the deliberations of the World Economic Conference

* See *THE ROUND TABLE*, No. 92, September 1933, p. 843.

The Battle against Subsidies

committee that considered the question of shipping subsidies gave little ground for hope that such a pact would secure general adherence within a reasonably short period. The problem was shelved, on the French plea that it could not be considered in the absence of exchange stability, but not before the United States Government had made it quite clear that no argument in general terms could shake their determination to continue a policy of subsidies.

In default of a world-wide agreement, there are but two alternatives before us: to do nothing, or to take defensive measures either on our own or—far better—in co-operation with other maritime countries having the same main objective as ourselves. To stand idle may possibly be the least evil of two unfortunate choices, but let us be clear what it means. It probably means the gradual displacement of British by foreign shipping, starting with the trade between different foreign countries but extending even to the coastal trade of the United Kingdom. That displacement may be a slow process, but it becomes more and more inevitable as bad times in the British shipping industry handicap the replacement of out-of-date tonnage by new and faster ships. Doing nothing certainly implies dealing unfairly by the great industries of shipping and shipbuilding, which are injured by every measure of protection granted to other trades, and which have, in addition, to meet continuous foreign "dumping." Manufacturing industry has its tariffs, agriculture its quotas and subsidies; is shipping alone to go unaided?

Yet if we turn to the shipping industry itself in order to learn what compensation or protection is required, we hear a confusion of voices. For this lack of unanimity two broad reasons may be discerned. The first is the fear of retaliation, allied with the general prejudice of the shipping industry in favour of free trade. Every barrier to trade is regarded with suspicion by those who know too well from hard experience the perils involved in wars of commercial policy. We are still the world's greatest ship-owners, and

Shipping : An Empire Problem

therefore the most vulnerable "in the event of counter-attack. Already we possess 90 per cent. of the carrying trade between different parts of the British Commonwealth and 60 per cent. of the carrying trade between British countries and foreign countries ; for the sake of the margin that we might gain in these fields, are we to jeopardise all our foreign connections and risk provoking flag discrimination in foreign ports ?

There is a second reason why ship-owners do not speak with one voice. Their interests are divided. Hitherto, the liners have not suffered nearly so disastrously as the tramps, because foreign competition in that class of tonnage has been restricted by the conference system of fixing fares and cargo rates, and also because liners have picked up a good deal of trade that would otherwise have come the way of the tramps. Tramps and liners very largely compete with one another—even the formal distinction between the two is blurred, so that for statistical convenience a tramp is often taken as any vessel below 5,000 tons gross. The liner interests, in brief, fear the grant of subsidies to tramps both because that would enhance the competition of the tramps with themselves and because any foreign retaliation would largely recoil on their heads.

Nevertheless, there has recently been evidence that a large proportion of the various shipping interests have sunk their differences to the extent of agreeing that some concerted action must be taken forthwith. The Council of the Chamber of Shipping, for instance, accepted with only three dissentients at the largest meeting of the Council ever held a resolution which was based on the report of their Tramp Committee, and which acknowledged the principle of a temporary subsidy for any section of the British mercantile marine that could prove its necessity. "Sections of our mercantile marine," said the chairman of the Orient line at the annual general meeting of his company in December, "are threatened with ruin by the concentrated attack of foreign nations, and it appears to us not only proper but the

The Battle against Subsidies

day of His Majesty's Government, here and in the Dominions, to maintain the British position by temporary subsidies or other means until they shall have restored normal conditions." The chairman of the P. and O. company likewise spoke at length about this problem, demanding specific defensive action as part of an Empire-wide policy.

When we turn, however, from the urgent call for action to the question of what form that action shall take, we are in the field of controversy and speculation. Three broad lines of action are open to us. One is the imitation of many of our principal competitors on the seas by the grant of subsidies ourselves. The second is an attempt to maintain our ocean-carrying business by reserving for British bottoms certain classes of trade—for instance, the coastal trade of the United Kingdom, the trade between different parts of the British Empire, or a minimum proportion of our trade with countries with whom we have commercial treaties. The third possibility is a plan of flag discrimination, by differential port dues or other means, specifically directed against countries pursuing a policy of subsidies.

There is no gainsaying that each of these alternatives carries danger and difficulties. It is true that the grant of subsidies, which is on the surface far the simplest of the solutions, would be unlikely to involve immediately any cut-throat economic war with particular countries, since it is already so largely practised by our competitors themselves. But who would deny that if we, the greatest ship-owning nation in the world, were to pursue such a course, every other seafaring country would eventually be bound to follow—Norway, Sweden and the rest? There is a further indisputable consequence which is even more disconcerting. The tramp class, for which alone subsidies are now demanded, cannot in practice be isolated from the liners. British liners could not live, competitively, between the shears of subsidised foreign liners and subsidised British tramps. Sooner or later, the conference system, which

Shipping: An Empire Problem

leaves ample scope for competition in facilities of all kinds, is bound to prove an inadequate safeguard for the liner interests. They, too, would have to be given subsidies, and the mere £3,000,000, which the tramp owners estimate their scheme would cost, would be multiplied manifold. It is asserted that the United States, with a mercantile marine little more than one-half the size of ours, spends £17,000,000 a year on shipping subsidies. Who dares say, once we had started on a course of subsidies, that the beneficiaries, often mutually in competition, would cease pressing for more till they were subsidised on much the same scale as the United States? The stakes are too high for us to enter such a hazardous game.

Above all, subsidies merely aggravate the fundamental problem, the excess of world shipping tonnage. In their enthusiasm, the tramp-owners claim that their proposals for operating and laying-up subsidies would bring into commission one half the British tramp vessels at present laid up. At whose expense? Is it to be expected that foreign ship-owners would diffidently consent to be supplanted by subsidised British tonnage? Even if no retaliatory subsidies were forthcoming, private competition would certainly be intensified, and freight rates driven lower than ever. The net result might very well be but a very slight improvement in the British share of world shipping business, coupled with a depression of freight rates equivalent to little less than the amount of the subsidy. From the point of view of shipping as a whole, a replacement subsidy would seem much more desirable than a subsidy on voyages with cargo. It is worth considering whether part of our shipping policy ought not to be modelled on the Japanese plan of subsidising each ton built in exchange for two tons scrapped.

In general, subsidies on operating and laying-up must be regarded as pernicious even from the point of view of the immediate beneficiaries. The same considerations are not, perhaps, quite so forcible if the subsidies are granted as

The Battle against Subsidies

temporary expedients, though they still retain some weight. The Tramp Committee of the Chamber of Shipping ask for subsidies only until conditions in the industry improve. It may, indeed, prove necessary to grant subsidies as a temporary palliative, but the form of limitation proposed is extremely dangerous, since the industry might long remain depressed for many reasons other than those to meet which the subsidy was originally awarded. It might be depressed by the increased competition of previously laid-up tonnage brought into commission by the subsidy itself; or by a decline in the comparative efficiency of British shipping; or by world economic forces of indefinite duration. If subsidies are to be given temporarily, they should continue only until a permanent policy has been adopted.

Subsidies, it has already been indicated, involve a risk of retaliation, a risk which is still greater in respect of other defensive measures—reservation of certain classes of trade for British bottoms, or discriminatory port and customs dues. It is a risk that we must face and consider carefully before embarking on any scheme. But if it is weighed against the risk of the steady deterioration of British shipping, which we run if we elect to do nothing, it fails in the balance. The President of the Board of Trade used as an argument in favour of caution the figures already quoted showing the high proportion that we already possess of the carrying trade to and from British countries. These same figures, however, can be used to lend point to an opposite argument. If we could recover one half of the trade that we do not now possess between different British countries, and between British and foreign countries, we could afford to lose over two-thirds of the rest of our shipping business.

The reaction of the rest of the world to such policies as are suggested by the Tramp Committee and others would be presumably the less serious by reason of the fact that they would be mostly belated copies of what other countries

Shipping : An Empire Problem

are already doing. The United States, France and other great nations reserve their coastal trade for their own ships. Among our own Dominions, Australia has done so for many years. The United States notoriously applies this restriction to trade between home ports and outlying American territories, for instance between the Pacific coast and Honolulu. There would thus be no innovation of principle even if, by agreement with the Dominions, we were able to reserve trade between them and the United Kingdom for ships under British flags. There is likewise ample American precedent for discrimination against tonnage concerned in a policy to which objection is taken. The White-Jones Shipping Act provides that where any American line is not included in a shipping conference anywhere in the world it can bring a complaint before the Federal Shipping Board, on whose report the Government of the United States must take action to exclude from all American ports the ships of the lines running the conference, and all their subsidiaries. The French import quota system, again, has provided examples of reservation of certain trades, or proportions thereof, for ships flying the national flag ; but this is not a suitable precedent for us, with our widespread system of commercial treaties based on the most-favoured-nation principle. In order to adopt the suggested plan of contractually reserving certain percentages of the carrying trade between ourselves and the other parties to our trade pacts, we should have to scrap our whole commercial treaty system, an undertaking which would obviously be fraught with grave perils.

All these suggestions have to be considered on their merits, and in relation to the broader issues involved. Perhaps the most important test by which they must be judged is the fact that the need for government action is created by the impact of unfair methods of competition, of which subsidies are typical. The aim of our policy must be to abolish, not to participate in, those methods. It follows that action must be concentrated, as far as pos-

THE ROUND TABLE

THE ROUND TABLE is a Quarterly Review of the politics of the British Commonwealth conducted in a strictly non-party political spirit. It seeks to promote the unity of the British Commonwealth by presenting every quarter an accurate and non-partisan account of the politics of all parts, together with articles dealing with foreign and inter-Imperial problems from the point of view of the whole Commonwealth.

THE ROUND TABLE, which appears every March, June, September and December, can be obtained through any Bookseller or through any of the following:

GREAT BRITAIN AND IRELAND: Messrs. Macmillan & Co. Ltd., St. Martin's Street, London, W.C.2.

CANADA: The Macmillan Co. of Canada, Ltd., 70 Bond Street, Toronto

AUSTRALIA: Messrs. Macmillan & Co., Ltd., 32 Flinders St., Melbourne

SOUTH AFRICA: J. Tyndall, Esq., 126 Corporation Buildings Johannesburg.

NEW ZEALAND: The Secretary, **THE ROUND TABLE**, c/o Messrs McKay and Co., Ltd., A.M.P. Building, Wellington.

INDIA: Messrs. Macmillan & Co. Ltd., Bombay, Calcutta, Madras.

EGYPT: The Egyptian Press and Stationery Co., Ltd., El Sheraton Hotel, Cairo.

CHINA AND STRAITS SETTLEMENTS: Messrs. Kelly & Walsh Shanghai, Hong Kong, Singapore.

JAPAN: The Maruzen Company, Ltd., 14-16 Nishinbashi Tori Sanchoime Tokyo.

UNITED STATES: The Macmillan Co., 60 Fifth Avenue, New York

ORDER FORM

Date

To

Please add my name as a subscriber to **THE ROUND TABLE** for a period of one year commencing with the ^{*current} _{*next} issue.

I enclose a remittance of *£1, *\$4.

Name

Address

* Delete one of these words and prices as necessary.

LONDON: MACMILLAN & CO., LTD.

The policy that has been suggested is the imposition of charges on ports—possibly on cargo also—of all tonnage entering British ports under the flag of subsidising countries. There is obvious difficulty in deciding which countries do come under that head; those of proof, however, need not fall on us but on the alleged offending governments, who would be invited to furnish proof that they did not subsidise ocean-going ships, direct or indirectly, before their tonnage could be made subject to the normal tariff of port charges and import duties. It would have to be an all-or-nothing policy; we could not adjust the penalty to degrees of the offence.

III. A PROBLEM FOR THE COMMONWEALTH

IT is not our purpose to indicate precisely what policy should be adopted. On the contrary, it is our profound belief that the question of policy cannot be properly considered within the limits of a purely British view. The opinion of the whole Commonwealth should be consulted, and its co-operation enlisted, before any decision is taken. This is beyond question a problem for the Commonwealth—perhaps the most unmistakable occasion for the development of an agreed imperial policy that has arisen since the Dominions achieved legislative autonomy.

Here on this very issue, perhaps, we have come to a parting of the ways. In the course of constitutional devolution in the Commonwealth, governmental unity has been replaced by voluntary co-operation on matters of common concern, as the bond between the several members. If voluntary co-operation is neglected, the Commonwealth politically is nothing. Its future lies between regeneration and oblivion. Where is a matter more obviously of common concern than the preservation of British shipping? Failure to adopt in this instance the course of mutual consultation

Shipping : An Empire Problem

and joint action could not be blamed upon the Dominions, whose nationalistic tendencies form too easy an excuse for our own failure to pursue an Empire policy, but upon the United Kingdom herself. If war comes, we and they must stand together, constitutional formulae and international commitments notwithstanding. If, when that happens, our mercantile marine has been supplanted by the ships of foreign Powers, the Dominions must share our weakness, even as now they share the advantages of our ocean strength. To imagine that this problem can be settled by consultation between the Board of Trade and the shipping industry—which does not even know its own mind—is to betray a foolhardy carelessness about the future of the Commonwealth. Hitherto, its development has been dominated by centrifugal forces, which may eventually destroy it altogether, unless at opportunities such as these they are vigorously counter-acted.

The complicated issues involved affect each member of the Commonwealth differently, so that a policy adopted by the United Kingdom based on her own immediate needs might easily conflict with the interests of the Dominions, and, by arousing their antagonism, ultimately defeat its own ends. The recent subsidy* granted by the South African Government to Italian lines trading to East and West African ports and the Mediterranean proves how foolish would be the assumption that, on all points, the Dominions are of like mind with ourselves. The Union Government, in explaining its attitude, repeated its declaration (made at the World Economic Conference) that it could not support a general condemnation of the principle of subsidies, including those for shipping. In India, where the service rendered by subsidised Italian lines is also an important factor, the question of reservation of coastal traffic for Indian-owned ships is an acute political issue. Australia has a special problem of high

* This topic is discussed at length in an article from South Africa, below, p. 435.

A Problem for the Commonwealth

wages and favourable working conditions, which has caused her to reserve all her coastal trade (including trade between the mainland and Tasmania) for Australian ships. She is intimately concerned with the question of subsidised American lines on Pacific routes,* and her Minister of Commerce recently hinted that "it might be necessary for the Government to take steps to ensure that parallel conditions were enforced on both sides of the Pacific." He was, he added, personally opposed to any extension of the subsidy system. Subsidised American shipping on the Pacific is even more peculiarly a New Zealand problem, since the two chief British competitors on the Australian-North American routes are New Zealand concerns, though they are in the P. and O. group. Canada, again, has a special problem, created by her neighbourhood to the United States, and the close economic interdependence of the two countries. American retaliation against British shipping might injure her interests more swiftly than those of other Dominions.

If for no other reason, the defence of shipping is a Commonwealth problem, because—provided we can light upon a united policy—the extent of the commerce of the British Commonwealth in relation to total world trade, and the critical importance of its ports for world traffic, give us a tremendous power far exceeding that which any member of the Commonwealth could wield alone.

There are those who argue that we should summon for consultation and joint decision not only the Dominions but also all those foreign Powers who are likely to be on our side in the battle against subsidies. Certainly there is no room for exclusiveness in a matter such as this, and once we have found a Commonwealth policy it must be open to any country to participate on equal terms. But our policy must first be founded on an Empire investigation. Does the existence of the British Commonwealth mean anything at all, or are the relations between its several members

* See p. 244.

Shipping : An Empire Problem

merely those of friendly foreign Powers? Sentiment and history apart, defence shouts the answer when it is shipping that is concerned. At the end of the war, well over one-third of British ocean-going tonnage was directly employed on military and naval service, including $1\frac{1}{2}$ million tons serving the military forces of the Dominions and colonies. An ocean Empire without a common policy on the seas is a contradiction in terms. There is another important, if narrower, reason why these deliberations should be confined in the first place to the Commonwealth. Whom, among the foreign Powers, should we invite to the council table? Plainly not all, for the World Economic Conference showed that, for the moment, universal agreement is out of the question. If we made a selection, those omitted would either grumble at not being consulted or denounce the whole procedure as particularist economic aggression directed against themselves.

In the British Commonwealth, machinery is ready to hand. Admittedly, the Imperial Shipping Committee, created in 1918 to inquire into, and report upon, matters connected with the development of sea communications between the different parts of the Empire, is not ideally suited for the present purpose, being a very specialist and official body. In 1923, however, the Imperial Economic Conference passed the following precisely relevant resolution:—

In view of the vital importance to the British Empire of safeguarding its overseas carrying trade against all forms of discrimination by foreign countries, whether open or disguised, the representatives of the Governments of the Empire declare:—

(1) That it is their established practice to make no discrimination between the flags of shipping using their ports, and that they have no intention of departing from this practice as regards countries which treat ocean-going shipping under the British flag on a footing of equality with their own national shipping.

(2) That in the event of danger arising in future to the overseas shipping of the Empire through an attempt by a foreign country to discriminate against the British flag, the governments of the Empire will consult together as to the best means of meeting the situation.

A Problem for the Commonwealth

The governments of the Empire must indeed consult together, but unless there is to be a special Imperial Conference, drawing Prime Ministers and Ministers of Commerce from all the Dominions to London, it is plain that the governments alone cannot give the problem the detailed and arduous consideration that it deserves.

What is wanted is a small *ad hoc* committee, representative of all parts of the Commonwealth, composed not of shipping experts with their diverse special interests, but of men of affairs capable of reviewing the problem in its broader aspects. The Committee's agenda should include all sides of the problem—liners, tramps, shipbuilding, the conference system, subsidies, and a score of other matters. It should take time to investigate circumstances and opinions in every part of the Commonwealth. If necessary, an interim report might be presented on the emergency issues.

It is, indeed, an emergency problem with which we are faced. Yet even more dangerous than delay would be the adoption of a limited national policy, before we had consulted the Dominions or enlisted their help. Whatever we do, we are bound to arouse enmity in certain quarters abroad; it would be a disaster if, for want of following the principles of Empire co-operation which we freely acknowledge, we were to arouse dissatisfaction or distrust among our fellow members of the British Commonwealth. The Balfour resolutions and the Statute of Westminster founded a new Commonwealth upon the principle of free co-operation, a principle which is translated into practice according to the needs and traditions of each branch of public activity. If, when so clear an occasion arises for its exercise, it is deliberately neglected in favour of unilateral decision by one member, we may be forgiven for fearing that the principle itself will gradually wither into an obsolete formula, leaving of the Commonwealth nothing but a memory and a name.

NEWFOUNDLAND

I. THE CAUSES OF COLLAPSE

AFTER enjoying responsible government for over three-quarters of a century, in February of 1934 Newfoundland ceased to be a self-governing country. This strange occurrence in the affairs of the British Empire clearly demands an explanation.

Though legislation by Parliament at Westminster was required in order to accomplish this change in the Island's status, it is not by any arbitrary act of the British Government that self-government has been withdrawn from a Dominion. That would have been impossible. It has been a long recognised practice, emphasised for all the Dominions and made statutory for some Dominions in the Statute of Westminster, that the Mother of Parliaments cannot pass any law applying to the people of a Dominion, let alone one to take away their self-government, except with the consent and at the request of that Dominion. The Newfoundland Parliament, in fact, by a unanimous vote, petitioned the King, asking him to issue new Letters Patent which would suspend parliamentary and responsible government in the Island and establish government by a Commission in its place. Self-government did not die by a murderer's hand; the verdict must be suicide while temporarily insolvent.

Newfoundland's proudest boast was not that she was a Dominion, but that she was the oldest British colony, a historic claim of which no constitutional changes can deprive her gallant people. The Island is not much smaller in area than England, but is sparsely peopled, its population being estimated at 282,000 souls. Of these, 40,000 live

The Causes of Collapse

in St. John, the only large town in the place, while the remainder are distributed amongst some 1,300 small settlements, scattered for the most part along the 6,000 miles of coast. About 100,000 of the inhabitants are engaged exclusively in fishing or else as fishermen-farmers. The prosperity of the Island depends to-day, as it has always done in the past, almost entirely on the fishing, and a foolish neglect of the interests of this prime activity is one of the main causes of the fate that has recently befallen the community.

There is no mystery about the origin of the series of events that culminated in the present pass. It began in 1931 with an appeal from the Newfoundland Government to the United Kingdom Government to send out a financial adviser to help them to grapple with grave difficulties which had already been allowed to develop too far. The Island suddenly found itself unable to pay from its own resources the interest on its overseas debt. The steps by which this position was reached can be described in a few sentences. At the close of the world war, in which the humble fishermen of Newfoundland had shown a loyalty and courage as great as were displayed in any part of the Empire, the public debt of the Island totalled \$43,000,000. In every year from 1920 to 1932 its budget was unbalanced. The average annual revenue for this period was \$9,250,000, the average annual expenditure \$11,250,000, and the average annual deficit \$2,000,000. In each of these years an external loan was raised in order to enable the Government of the day to liquidate this perpetual deficit. But that was not all. The Government, with almost sublime contempt for the dictates of financial prudence, also used large parts of these loan funds each year to embark upon costly new schemes of capital expenditure, not one of which has proved directly remunerative. As a result of this dual process of fiscal profligacy, the public debt within a dozen years more than doubled itself, rising to \$97,638,772 by the end of July, 1932. At the moment when Lord

Newfoundland

Amulree's Commission presented its report, the debt stood at a little under \$101,000,000, and the payments for interest on it, including provision for exchange fluctuation, amounted approximately to \$5,200,000 per annum, or about 65 per cent. of the annual revenue. It was the Government's failure to obtain any money when for the thirteenth year in succession it endeavoured to raise a loan that brought the community face to face with the fact that it could not pay its debts and was heading swiftly for bankruptcy. Superstitious people may attribute this disaster to the malign influence of the unfortunate figure thirteen, but for others the explanation will be more simple.

It is not possible in the space of this article to enter into the details of this astonishing financial policy. There is only one possible excuse for it that approaches the reasonable. As has been said, Newfoundland's well-being had always depended almost entirely on the success of one industry, fishing. That was, and still is, a serious weakness. The fortune of the fishermen was sometimes good and sometimes bad. There was never much certainty about it, and a series of bad seasons would spell disaster. It would have been better for the Island had there been other industrial activities of sufficient importance to help to smooth out the fluctuations in its prosperity that followed the whims of the fisheries. Much of the wild capital expenditure between 1920 and 1932 was, indeed, incurred upon attempts to attract other kinds of industry. The Government spent large sums of money on taking over and improving the railway, on an ambitious scheme of high-road construction, on the expansion of the telegraph and telephone services, on the construction of a dry dock, and so on. But these efforts proved of no avail, and, important though they are in some respects, the paper mills and the great iron mine that do exist in the Island yield comparatively little either in employment for the people or in revenue for the Government.

Worse still, while money was being poured out on these

The Causes of Collapse

fancy schemes, the one industry whose prosperity and development were a matter of life and death to the country was neglected. Loans amounting to over \$50,000,000 were raised after the war, yet less than \$1,000,000 of the money was devoted to stimulating the industry that was of chief importance. Whilst Newfoundland's principal fishing rivals, Iceland and Norway, were steadily improving their methods both of catching and of marketing their fish, and were reaping rich rewards for their perspicuity, often at the expense of Newfoundland, those in control in the Dominion allowed their own industry to go from bad to worse. They did nothing to check the rule of individualism, which was a bar to all progress.

Fishermen and merchants had done well during the war and in the brief period of prosperity that followed it. But within a decade the position had been completely reversed, and the effect of the world trade depression on this weakened industry was disastrous. At the best of times the fishing season had not lasted through many months of the summer and autumn, but under a régime in which the industry failed not only to create new opportunities for itself but even to preserve old ones the season contracted until "the average fisherman is faced with the problem of earning enough in three or four months to last him a year." His chance of doing this was already handicapped by the vicious credit or truck system by which he did his business with the merchant, and three successive seasons from 1929 to 1932 in which fish prices, like most others, fell to extremely low levels reduced the vast majority of the Island's population to abject poverty.

There have been recurrent periods in the Island's history when the failure of the all-important fisheries have necessitated the supply of public relief on a large scale to the fishermen's families all round the coast. For though one passage in Lord Amulree's report describes in almost lyrical terms the life that is possible in the Island, and

Newfoundland

holds out a great hope for the future, circumstances in the past have conspired to destroy the pleasant prospect.

Each man (says the report) is quite capable of building his house; the sea supplies him with food, both to eat and to sell; his little plot of land provides him with vegetables; the countryside each summer is alive with wild fruit; and an occasional rabbit or duck adds variety to his fare. He pays no local rates or taxes for there is no local authority or direct government tax; as a rule he pays no rent for he generally owns his own house and a plot of land. . . . Provided that the fishing season is good, and he can obtain a reasonable price for his catch, he is content, in essentials, to continue in the ways of his fathers.

Apart from other factors, such as the truck system and indirect taxes, which weigh heavily on him, the price that the poor fisherman has received for his catch in recent seasons has ruined him, with the result not only that since 1932 all the fishermen have been in debt, but also that the national budget has been swollen by huge sums paid out in relief. During the winter of 1932, for instance, no less than 70,000 persons, or one-quarter of the entire population, were in receipt of public relief, other than poor relief or relief for the aged poor. Despite the fact that this relief was of the most meagre kind, consisting of rations of pork, flour, tea and molasses to the maximum value of \$1.08 per head per month, its cost in that one year alone amounted to \$1,100,000 or one-seventh of the revenue of the country. When this burden is added to that of the public debt, the hopeless financial straits of the Island can be imagined.

Even if the authorities had been blessed with wisdom in spending the money they rashly borrowed, their folly in raising it would have found them out when the world depression descended upon their little Island. While times were normal the weakness of their financial policy did not show itself, and people deluded themselves with hopes that the money spent in endeavours to attract other industries to the country would bear fruit and soon begin to bring in a return. But the awful trade depression, which brought some far more powerful communities

The Causes of Collapse

so their knees, inevitably struck at this people a blow that was mortal.

That is the main thread of the story. But there are other relevant factors in the general situation, and two amongst them must be particularly though briefly noted. First, the administrative machine, which should play an important part in maintaining good government in the country, has been largely destroyed, owing chiefly to the intrusion of the spoils system into the civil service. It had been customary for administrative posts, high and low, to change hands for purely political reasons as Governments rose and fell, with the results that civil servants enjoyed no security of employment, that disinterestedness, experience and ability among them often counted for nothing, and that the service inevitably became inefficient and demoralised. Secondly, the electorate generally have little experience of practical political affairs; outside St. John there is no municipal government which might help to train them in their responsibilities as voters; and under a paternal system of government they have, in fact, been accustomed to support whichever candidate made the largest promises of material help to his own constituency, regardless of any wider considerations. The deterioration of the political system in recent times is one of the major problems of Newfoundland.

The islanders made a desperate effort to ward off disaster when its imminence was plain for all to see. They secured the assistance of experienced British financial advisers with wide powers of control. They agreed to humiliating terms with the Canadian banks who first came to their rescue when suddenly their borrowing power in the public market ceased and default stared them in the face. They sold the exclusive rights to import gasoline (a commodity essential to every fisherman) to an external private company in return for further aid. They drove out their old Government and returned by a vast majority a new set of Ministers in the hope that they might perform miracles,

Newfoundland

and these new leaders courageously wielded the economy axe with unprecedented sternness (salaries and pensions of all sorts, for example, being cut by various amounts ranging from 20 to 45 per cent.). Finally, in return for advances from the Canadian and United Kingdom Governments to tide them over two further dates when payments of interest on the public debt were due, they agreed to the appointment of a Royal Commission to enquire into the whole position, financial and otherwise, of the Dominion.

II. THE AMULREE COMMISSION

THE report of the Commission is a document of high importance. Its authors, after an exhaustive examination of their problem, reported that Newfoundland had indeed received a blow from which it would be extremely difficult for her to recover. They concluded that :—

1) The estimated expenditure of the Government for the year 1933-34 was \$11,565,889, the estimated revenue \$8,284,338, and the estimated deficit therefore \$3,281,551.

(2) Economics had been so drastic that expenditure could not for long remain at its present low level, while revenue for some time was more likely to decrease than to increase.

(3) While world conditions remained abnormal, there was likely to be a recurrent annual deficit in the neighbourhood of \$3,000,000 (or nearly 40 per cent. of the revenue) so long as the country was saddled with its present burden of debt and was unable to recapture its lost foreign trade.

(4) Without a "long-range programme of reconstruction" the country would have little power of recuperation even when times improved.

(5) The existing burden of public debt was wholly beyond the country's capacity, and must be lightened if it was to be saved from imminent danger of financial collapse.

Having made up their minds that these were the deplorable but unescapable facts, the members of the Commission considered carefully the various means by which the situation might be saved. They themselves had

The Amulree Commission

defined the problem ; affairs were so bad that it would not be enough simply to devise financial means of overcoming budget deficits during the immediate crisis ; without a "long-range programme of reconstruction" the country would stand little or no chance of recovery at all, even when world conditions became normal again. What was required was not simply a piece of sound and ingenious finance, but a comprehensive policy of constructive statesmanship.

In the light of this they examined the possible alternative methods of dealing with the situation, first considering whether Newfoundland could find unaided, out of her own resources, the answer to the conundrum. Here there were two main possibilities : the country might default on the full interest payments on its excessive public debt, or it might sell or lease Labrador, that undeveloped but potentially rich territory which, as a result of the famous litigation of 1927, had been confirmed in its possession.

Proposals for default the Commissioners rejected because of the damage that such a policy would do to the Island and its inhabitants. They urged that its first effect would be to shatter the country's credit, causing a decline in trade and a check to all development. Not only would this destroy the prospects of increased employment, higher wages and improved social conditions generally ; a decline in the trade of an island dependent on imports for a large proportion of the necessities of life would result in a lowering of the existing standard of life. In fact the worst sufferers from default would be the fishermen and their families themselves. But in addition to this the Commissioners had to take into account a wider consideration.

We have been content to dwell (they wrote) on the consequences of default to the Island itself and to pass over the effects which default by a part of the British Empire would be likely to produce on other parts of the Empire and even elsewhere. . . . Default by a British community would be without precedent, and such a step would at once retard the general recovery and tarnish the good name of the British Commonwealth.

Newfoundland

The sale of Labrador offered no better prospect of solving the problem. In fact, the suggestion was not a practical one, for apart from any other consideration either Canada, the proposed purchaser, nor Newfoundland, the proposed vendor, was willing to play its part. Therefore it was impossible for the Island to overcome its difficulties and resort solely to its own resources. The Commissioners turned to examine various means by which external aid might be brought to the rescue.

They first considered the old suggestion that Newfoundland should join a political and economic union with Canada. But whatever intrinsic merit it might possess, his proposal, too, was outside the field of practical politics. For various reasons the people of Newfoundland would not assent to the suggestion, and it must be remembered that the country was a Dominion, that its people enjoyed responsible government which could not be taken away from them by any external authority, and that therefore any proposals that the Commissioners made would need to win the support of these people if they were to have a chance of being tried in practice and proving successful in a trial.

By a process of elimination Lord Amulree and his colleagues were left to consider various means by which the United Kingdom could bring the necessary aid to Newfoundland. In their minds all the time was their great objective: the country needed not only financial arrangements which would mean a considerable reduction in its burden of debt but, what was of less immediate but of far greater ultimate importance, a Government with the wisdom and power to pursue sane policies of economic reconstruction and development which would gradually lift the community on its own feet once more. Any reliance on the old system of government would be more than likely to defeat that purpose. It was clear that the new Government must attack the old evil of the credit system, reorganise time-honoured methods of conducting

The Amulree Commission

the fishing industry, establish a proper system of civil service, and in many directions act drastically and boldly.

In the end the Commissioners themselves led the way by making bold proposals. They rejected as inadequate all suggestions for half measures (such as that Great Britain should provide the necessary financial aid in return for Treasury control of finance within a patched-up system of self-government). They recommended a scheme of wholesale reform consisting of two interdependent groups of proposals, financial and political, the latter of which meant for an indefinite period the end of self-government in the Dominion. They proposed, in accordance with correct constitutional practice in such an extraordinary situation, that the Newfoundland Government should make an immediate appeal for the sympathetic co-operation of your Majesty's Government in the United Kingdom in the execution of a joint plan of reconstruction of which the following would be the main features:—

(1) The suspension of the existing form of government until such time as the Island may become self-supporting again.

(2) The creation of a special Commission of Government, which would be presided over by the Governor, would be vested with full legislative and executive authority, and would take the place of the existing Legislature and Executive Council.

(3) The Commission of Government would be composed of six members, exclusive of the Governor, three of whom would be drawn from Newfoundland and three from the United Kingdom.

(4) The Government Departments in the Island would be divided into six groups. Each group would be placed in the charge of a member of the Commission of Government, who would be responsible for the efficient working of the Departments in the group, and the Commission would be collectively responsible for the several Departments.

(5) The proceedings of the Commission of Government would be subject to supervisory control by your Majesty's Government in the United Kingdom, and the Governor-in-Commission would be responsible to the Secretary of State for Dominion Affairs in the United Kingdom for the good government of the Island.

(6) Your Majesty's Government in the United Kingdom would, for their part, assume general responsibility for the finances of the Island until such time as it may become self-supporting again, and would, in particular, make such arrangements as may be deemed just and practicable with a view to securing to Newfoundland a reduction in the present burden of the public debt.

Newfoundland

III. RECONSTRUCTION

CARE had been taken to see that every interest in the Island was consulted while these proposals were being evolved, and that whatever the recommendations of the Commission might be they would command the approval of the Government and people of Newfoundland as well as of any other Government or people concerned. The Commission itself had consisted of one member selected by the Newfoundland, one by the Canadian and one by the United Kingdom Governments. So well had they done their work that when they presented their report no one sought to escape the conclusions that they reached. The Parliament and Government of Newfoundland accepted their findings and recommendations, and though time prevented the taking of a plebiscite of the whole population, all who are in touch with public opinion in the Island agree that such a vote would have resulted in an overwhelming majority for the Commission's scheme.

The politicians who led the country in accepting the new proposals showed an unselfish patriotism, and the people who followed them displayed good sense. For Great Britain acceptance of the scheme meant new financial burdens and a considerable addition of political responsibility, but here, too, imperial patriotism and common sense prompted acceptance of the scheme with all its consequences. The necessary legislation providing for the suspension of the old constitution and the establishment of the new, and for the proposed financial arrangements concerning the public debt, was passed through both Houses of Parliament as soon as the Newfoundland Legislature had itself accepted the proposals and petitioned the King.

Under the new constitution the British Government is generally responsible for the finances of the Island. The Royal Commission had made it plain that even a reformed

Reconstruction

system of government there could only hope to succeed in its difficult work if the burden of the country's public debt was reduced. The first task of the Home-Government was to achieve this reduction. The plan adopted took the form of an offer to holders of the bulk of the existing debt of Newfoundland to exchange their securities for a new 3 per cent. Newfoundland stock, redeemable at latest in 1963 at par, and fully guaranteed as to principal, interest and sinking fund by the United Kingdom Treasury. Thus although the new rate of interest was substantially below that borne by the old securities—most of which were at 5 per cent. or more—the capital value of the new stock was designed to represent approximately the equivalent of the principal surrendered. Legislation passed by Newfoundland provided that no interest should be paid or accrue on securities not exchanged into new stock (other than those securities which had trustee status in the United Kingdom) so long as Newfoundland was under any liability in respect of advances made by the United Kingdom. The trustee securities, in so far as holders preferred to retain them instead of converting them into the new guaranteed stock, were given specific priority over all other Newfoundland obligations, including the guaranteed stock. Arrangements were also made to pay off a few loans affected by special considerations.

As a result of the whole series of transactions Newfoundland should be left with a debt consisting of some £17,000,000 to £17,500,000 of 3 per cent. guaranteed stock and about £2,000,000 of trustee securities (less such amount as may be exchanged for guaranteed stock). It is calculated that this will afford a relief of about £350,000 (or \$1,750,000) per annum to her annual interest burden, subject to the commencement of a sinking fund of 1 per cent. on the guaranteed stock not later than July 1, 1938. In so far as the revenues of the Island are insufficient, during the period of government by Commission, to meet the expenses of administration, including the service of the

Newfoundland

debt, a vote of Parliament will be needed to make good the deficiency.

Thus an astonishing change in the status and government of Newfoundland has been accomplished. Such drastic measures were bound to have their critics. Some urged that the Governments were only interested in protecting the bond-holders, and that the Dominion should have been left to default. But the Governments shared the view of the Commissioners not only that default would be a serious blow to British credit generally, but also that the severest sufferers from this policy and its inevitable consequences would be the Newfoundland fishermen and their dependants. It was mainly in their interest that default was avoided. Other critics were nervous lest this should be taken as a precedent for other Dominions' coming to the United Kingdom for help if and when they got into serious financial difficulties. But Government spokesmen in the House of Commons made it clear that this was not to be regarded as a precedent, pointing out that a condition of their coming to the aid of Newfoundland had been that self-government in the Island should cease. Other sceptics asked what positive benefit the people of Newfoundland were to get from the new system of government. Anyone who studies carefully the Royal Commission's analysis of the present situation and their suggestions for promoting economic rehabilitation and development in many directions—in the fisheries and agriculture and elsewhere—and for political reforms, such as the development of a proper civil service, will recognise that if the new government can carry through this "long-range programme of reconstruction" the people will gain much. It is with that object that the Englishmen and Newfoundlanders who are partners in this Commission of Government are entering on their work. Time alone will show whether they will succeed.

Perhaps the shrewdest criticism came from those who argued that though the people of the Island now felt favour-

Reconstruction

ably disposed towards the new undemocratic government, with the passage of time their ardour might cool, and for various reasons they might regret and resent their loss of self-government. When that happened the new system would be in danger. Would it not be a good idea, it was asked, to include in the new constitution from its early days some form of popularly elected assembly, with limited powers, which should enable public opinion to express itself? One of the conditions, however, that Lord Amulree and his colleagues felt most strongly to be essential, if the country was to have a chance of getting on its feet again, was a cessation of party politics for a period. It is true, on the other hand, that the new Government must keep closely in touch with public opinion. Therefore the authorities who selected the small and able team of men who are to conduct the government chose them for their political as well as their administrative gifts. In this connection it is of great importance that three of them are political leaders in Newfoundland. The whole experiment is to be a work of co-operation between Newfoundland and Great Britain; and the ultimate objective is to re-establish in the Island conditions that will enable it one day again to enjoy the status and rights of a Dominion.



Accession No.

13770

AN AUSTRALIAN ECONOMIST LOOKS AT THE UNITED STATES

IT is related that a motorist once enquired of a traveller the way to Cincinnati. The traveller, in obvious doubt, suggested first the road to the left, then the road to the right. Finally he snapped out at the bewildered motorist, "Your question is absurd. If I were going to Cincinnati, I wouldn't start from here at all." The writer has every sympathy with the traveller at the White House, who is now showing 125,000,000 motorists the way to the Cincinnati of 1926 prosperity. Whether they find it reasonably soon will depend upon his ability to direct cars of widely varying size and capacity along the right road and in the right proportions. It is a task of far greater complexity than any traveller has ever essayed before, and its successful completion is a matter of great moment not only to the 125,000,000 motorists in the United States, but to motorists all over the world.

In the welter of economic experiment that gives its substance to this directing process in the United States, we may recognise five main roads. There is the monetary road, the surface of which is being made sufficiently soft to absorb the shocks that motorists with creaking automobiles and impaired strength can no longer endure on the hard roads of old times. There is the public works road, running parallel to the monetary road, but capable of taking only rather light traffic, because its bridges are weak and tolls fixed on the old standard still survive. Also closely connected with the monetary road is a new road which bears on its signpost the strange device, "This way to

The President's Task

liquidity without tears." This is the road along which distressed debtors travel—a mixed company of farmers, home-owners, mortgagors of all kinds and even bankers. For the moment they skim over the smooth surface, a delightful contrast to the pot-holes of their recent experience. These three roads apparently go direct to the goal, but no one yet knows whether they are really parallel and therefore destined to meet only at infinity, or whether they converge at a reasonable distance. Two other roads take a more circuitous route, but the motorists career along them with enthusiasm. Their respective signposts bear the letters N.R.A. and A.A.A.—signs which, at first sight, look familiar to the motorist, though they are really quite new. The first road leads to the National Recovery Administration, and the second to the Agricultural Adjustment Administration. The first starts off at right angles to the three roads already mentioned, and the second at an angle of 45 degrees. No one in the United States has traversed the full length of either road, and it is as yet by no means certain that either of them will ultimately reach Cincinnati. If they do not, the directing traveller may tell you that he has experienced two difficulties with these two roads. First, he had no choice as to the starting point, and, second, he is by no means certain whether Cincinnati or some more distant and quite new city is the goal.

I. THE PRESIDENT'S TASK

AT this stage we may drop a somewhat clumsy analogy. President Roosevelt has in nine months improvised a policy and an administration that would do credit to any war Government. In his inaugural address he spoke with unexpected frankness: "This nation asks for action, and action now." Again, "I assume unhesitatingly the leadership of this great army of our people, dedicated to a disciplined attack upon our common problems." His most

An Australian Economist Looks at the U.S.

bitter opponents concede that he has at least lived up to his words. He has directed a most vigorous attack on the five fronts indicated above—monetary ease, public works, relief of debtors, ordered industrial relations, and agricultural adjustment. He has closed the ranks of the nation in support of this attack. Though the news from all the fronts is not uniformly good, there is little loss of morale behind the lines, and no sign of ennui in the trenches. There has never before in history been an economic campaign comparable in magnitude or in complexity. In Australia we had a task of bewildering difficulty, but we started earlier, we had institutions that had already proved their strength, and our economy was much less complex. Moreover, we had a plan, whose component parts fitted nicely into the whole, and we were not unduly embarrassed by attachment to standards of prices and incomes belonging to the era of prosperity.

The President and his advisers have been improvising a plan; they took up the task at a moment of actual, and not prospective, financial and economic collapse; they have been forced to establish new and untried institutions; and they are still embarrassed by the doctrine that the standards of the era of prosperity are inviolate. There are yet other differences—social and political—that make their task formidable. The population is heterogeneous; the constitution prevents complete freedom of action with regard to contracts; there is a conflict between long and short period policy; and there are wide differences of opinion in the so-called "brains trust" itself. Finally, a tradition of individualism and a gross exaggeration of the possible defects of government control and management lead to distrust of measures that would be taken as a matter of course in Australia. Some of these differences are of more interest to the political scientist than to the political economist, but both critics and friends of the President must take them into account in comparing the Australian experiment with that now in progress in the United States.

The President's Task

The President's attack is made, of course, upon an economic depression of unparalleled magnitude. Its causes are not perhaps yet agreed upon among economists, but its symptoms are too obvious to admit of any dispute. Fundamentally, there are gross distortions in the price and income structure, a collapse of investment and a tremendous overburden of debt. This is quite familiar in these days, but the spectacle of 125,000,000 people, occupying perhaps the most favoured area in the world, and employing a technique unexcelled by other nations, yet almost overcome by their financial and economic plight, is surely one of the most remarkable sights of all time. The splendid resiliency of the country had lifted it out of many a hole in the past. Why not also to-day? The hole is larger, it appeared more suddenly, and it is by no means clear that the economy has its old-time buoyancy. A fall of prices of the order of 50 per cent. in four years is something new. We had it in Australia, but we cut short its debilitating effects by swift if unorthodox action. The United States, with heavier responsibilities as an international creditor, was anchored to gold, and was denied the freedom of action required in the circumstances. She was also effectively tied to traditional ideas in banking and finance until March 4, 1933. Always hoping that prosperity was just round the corner, President Hoover and his advisers failed to realise that an enormous dead-weight of debt and a distorted price structure destroyed completely all possibility of new investment, which is the invariable source of recovery. It is by no means certain that President Roosevelt and his advisers recognise the importance of investment, but they at least understand the need for the liquidity of existing debt as a preliminary to the restoration of investment. They are not content to allow so-called natural forces to solve the problem in time, because they instinctively feel that this solution involves needless delay, much distress, and protracted financial disorder.

Consider the facts. National income fell from 85

An Australian Economist Looks at the U.S.

billion dollars in 1929 to 40 billions at the end of 1932. Fixed interest-bearing debt was estimated at 155 billions in 1929, and it was still 134 billions at the end of 1932. No doubt some adjustments of interest had been made and many debtors were not paying interest, but the outstanding fact was that fixed debt had fallen by 15 per cent., while national income had fallen by over 50 per cent. This was symptomatic of the national difficulties. Variable prices and costs had been cut in half, fixed charges had fallen but little. Every cost, in its reverse aspect, represents income to somebody, and there was consequently a gross inequality in the effects of the depression upon the several groups of incomes. These inequalities aggravated the depression because they left the debtor classes as a whole with a hopeless task of falling prices and increasing real costs. The creditors were impotent because they suspended their constructive function of making new investments. This was perhaps the real substance of the President's inaugural declaration—"Yes, the money changers have fled from their high seats in the temple of our civilisation." A deplorable and devastating credit deflation was in progress. It was the old-time scramble for liquidity, and it could end in only one way—financial malaise.

II. ORDERED INFLATION

THE President could choose one of two courses—ordered deflation or ordered inflation (reflation as some people prefer to call it). He chose the latter. He has been severely criticised, as was Australia in 1930, for not preferring deflation, but his critics rarely stop to think of the overwhelming difficulties of that course. A wholesale reduction of debts, including bank deposits, insurance policies, and public debt, of the order of 40 per cent. would be logically the first step in deflation. Can we assert with any degree of confidence that the President could have

overcome the constitutional and psychological obstacles? And if he had, can we ignore the bitterness that would have endured for years? If deflation was to be carried out with consistency and vigour, the debt reductions should have been accompanied by an all-round cut in incomes—a measure which the country had no means whatever of enforcing. Perhaps the President could have tempered deflation with some justice by providing machinery for debt adjustment, but he had no faith in deflation as a way out. Australian experience suggests that on the whole he was right. We deflated on a comprehensive and limited scale. The President inherited a situation in which partial and unlimited deflation had wrought havoc. He decided to reverse the swing of the pendulum.

His emergency banking measures do not call for comment here. We are concerned with his attack on the five fronts already mentioned. Let us consider the salient points in this attack.

1. *Monetary Policy*

It is probably correct to say that the President drove the United States off gold as part of his plan. Be that as it may, the refusal in April to issue licences for the export of gold was followed by a depreciation of the dollar, and by the granting of specific power to the President to devalue the dollar down to a minimum of 50 per cent. In October, when the dollar was growing stronger and recovery was flagging, the gold buying programme was started. This was followed by legislation in January setting devaluation limits of 60 per cent. to 50 per cent. of the old gold content of the dollar, establishing a \$2,000 million fund to control the exchanges, and appropriating the gold reserves and the profit thereon for the Treasury. By his declaration of January 31, fixing the price of gold at \$35 an ounce, and purchasing all gold offered in New York, the President completed his plan for effectively depreciating the dollar by approximately 40 per cent. The effects of this declaration upon international currency conditions will be

An Australian Economist Looks at the U.S.
discussed later. The President set out to depreciate the dollar, and he has succeeded. It is significant that he is given the right to use the equalisation fund to strengthen the bond market, if necessary. Much has been made of the consequences of a weak bond market, and the President has apparently been disturbed by the criticism. He may feel more secure with this new weapon at his disposal, but it is by no means certain that it is effective or that it is his only weapon.

2. Public Works

Under the National Industrial Recovery Act of June 26, 1933, a sum of \$3,300 million was appropriated for public works. Later the Public Works Administration (P.W.A.) was created. Since all provisions for self-liquidating projects under the supervision of the Reconstruction Finance Corporation (R.F.C.) had been eliminated in the new legislation, it was expected that expenditure would proceed rapidly. The expectation was unreasonable. To plan a large programme of public works requires time, and only a small sum had been expended by the end of 1933. But the P.W.A. had been very busy preparing plans and letting contracts. Meanwhile the President had established the Civil Works Administration (C.W.A.) with an appropriation of \$400 million for special winter relief for four million people. Rates of pay in excess of the ruling competitive rates were granted on these relief works. This is one of many outcroppings in the recovery plan of the doubtful doctrine that old standards of the era of prosperity can be revived. The C.W.A. is continued under a fresh appropriation in the 1934-35 budget. How much it will spend this year is not clear, but a reasonable estimate places it at from \$1,000 million to \$1,200 million. This also is the probable expenditure of the P.W.A. in the current year.* The C.W.A. is undoubtedly a form of

* According to present official policy, it is intended to terminate C.W.A. expenditure on May 1. If this is done, the total expenditure on relief and public works will fall short of these estimates.

2. ~~U. S. Government~~ **Ordered Inflation**

special relief expenditure. How much the expenditure will add to national income it is impossible to estimate. Little attention has been given in the United States to the "multiplier"; that is, to the ratio of the final increase in national income to any direct addition by way of capital expenditure. At its maximum rate of expenditure the P.W.A. will be employing directly some 750,000 men, so that for the present the total works programme accounts for 4,750,000 men. The indirect increase in employment from the P.W.A. will be considerable because there is a much greater demand for materials than in the C.W.A. It would be not unreasonable to assume another 750,000 new employees in accessory industries. The total of the C.W.A. and the P.W.A. direct and indirect employment cannot be less than 6,000,000 when the two are running at their maximum rate of expenditure.

We must note in addition the Civilian Conservation Corps (C.C.C.) with over 1,400 camps and about 325,000 men engaged at \$30 per month, plus sustenance, to work on the national forests. The C.C.C. has an appropriation of \$300 million for 1934-35, and offers a special form of relief to war veterans at economical rates.

The funds for the P.W.A., the C.W.A. and the C.C.C. come from the R.F.C., that giver of all good things, whose multifarious activities, started under Hoover, have been greatly increased under Roosevelt. In the days of the Hoover Administration the R.F.C. passed all projects for "self-liquidating" public works, but this saving clause was eliminated in the National Industrial Recovery Act, from which the P.W.A. derives its authority.

3. *Liquidation of Debt*

Very important measures have been taken to deal with the debt problem. We may discuss them under the two headings of bank liabilities and mortgages. The banking problem perforce engaged the early attention of the President. The R.F.C. had been established by President

An Australian Economist Looks at the U.S.

Hoover on February 2, 1932, partly in order to provide relief to banks. Direct loans were made by it to weak banks. By December 31, 1932, it had lent \$850 million to 5,582 banks. When this fact became known to the country in the R.F.C.'s quarterly report in January 1933 the information was, as Messrs. Beard and Smith remarked in their admirable study* of the New Deal, "almost unbelievable." Under President Roosevelt the R.F.C. purchases preferred stocks or capital notes of the banks. In the case of non-member banks these purchases are conditional upon adequate inspection by the R.F.C. Up to the end of 1933 no less than \$800 million of preferred stock or capital notes had been so purchased, and in the 1934-35 budget provision is made for the purchase of another \$400 million. This is a much more satisfactory form of assistance than direct loans. It increases the control of the R.F.C. over the whole banking system, and strengthens bank capital, which is the ultimate safeguard for the depositor. On the other hand it adds to the responsibilities of the government, but with a banking system like that of the United States this steady encroachment of government is inevitable.

Under the Federal Deposit Insurance Corporation (F.D.I.C.), plans have now been made for liquidating the deposits of closed banks and insuring deposits in all member banks of the Federal Reserve system, and in such non-member banks as desire to enter the insurance scheme and can meet the conditions laid down by the F.D.I.C. For the moment, these two measures—purchase of preferred stock and deposit insurance—have, as one authority remarked, placed the banks in "good shape" for meeting all demands upon them.

Next in order of importance in the liquidation of debt is the organisation of the Farm Credit Administration (F.C.A.). This new administration co-ordinates all the federal agencies dealing with farm credit. Among the

* Charles E. Beard and G. H. E. Smith: *The Future Comes* (The Macmillan Company, New York), 1933.

Ordered Inflation

new measures of farm credit policy now being put into operation, by far the most important is the re-financing of mortgages and farm debt. The F.C.A. is empowered to borrow \$2,000 million for this purpose in bonds at 4 per cent. These bonds are now guaranteed as regards both principal and interest by the Federal Government. Similar measures are being taken for urban mortgages through the Home-Owners Loan Corporation (H.O.L.C.), which is also empowered to borrow \$2,000 million in 4 per cent. bonds guaranteed as to interest by the Government.*

Mr. Roosevelt is apparently a firm believer in Walter Bagehot's maxim that a crisis demands an expansion and not a contraction of credit. Above all, it demands liquidity in the debt structure. By strengthening the banks and by assisting distressed debtors, the Government is making an important contribution towards this task of liquidating debt.

4. Industry under N.R.A.

Three reasons may be given for the early emphasis upon codes of fair competition organised under the N.R.A. First, competitive conditions during the depression raised once more the problem of child labour and the sweat shop in an acute form. Prices were ruinously low for businesses with substantial over-head costs, and the small man defended himself by imposing severe exactions upon his workmen. Second, while the anti-trust laws prevented open agreements between businesses, there was need for some "cartelisation" to protect the industrial structure from competitive deflation. Third, belief persisted in the doctrines of higher spending power as an aid to recovery and in reduced hours of work as a cure for unemployment.

In the propaganda for the codes the last reason was by far the most powerful, but it may be doubted whether employers as a whole did not attach much more importance

* It is suggested that the bonds of the H.O.L.C. might also be guaranteed as to principal.

An Australian Economist Looks at the U.S.
to the first and second reasons. Nevertheless, the doctrine of spending power has greater vogue in the United States than in any other country, and it has received very little critical attention from the economists. In Australia this doctrine was rejected by the Commonwealth Arbitration Court, to some extent on the evidence of economists. It was held that costs in industry should be reduced in order to lighten the costs of the export producer and to increase his real spending power. In this way the demand for industrial products, and for labour in industry would expand. In the United States, on the other hand, the President's "blanket code" of June 19, 1933, raised the supply price of labour and increased the prices of secondary products, especially of retail goods. It has done nothing to ease the position of the farmer and export producer or to restore investment. Yet from these two sources will spring the expansion in real spending power that will ultimately bring recovery. The doctrine of spending power is another outcrop of the faith in the old standards of living as the rightful inheritance of every citizen. These standards may once again be realised if export production can be restored, if agriculture can attain its old position in relation to the rest of the country's economy, and if public and private investment can reach their former volume. A lowering of individual standards in industry may well be necessary to attain these objectives swiftly.

5. Agricultural Adjustments

The A.A.A. is perhaps the most revolutionary of all the recovery organisations. It involves for the time being a rigid control over the production rather than over the marketing of the leading agricultural products of the United States—cotton, wheat, hogs and corn. Like N.R.A., it is concerned more with long period adjustment than with problems of immediate recovery, but unlike N.R.A., its driving force is derived from the need for special action to give the farmer relief from the burdens of depression.

Desired Inflation

Agriculture has long suffered from the reduction in the export demand for American farm products, and the shift of internal demand caused by changes in diet. According to the annual report of the Secretary of Agriculture, the reduction of output to meet marketing requirements "is admittedly a temporary method of dealing with an emergency." The contraction in demand through internal depression and interruptions in international trade is to be met by a swift contraction of output, but the methods adopted are not satisfactory as a long-term solution of the problem. The A.A.A. aims at restoring the real purchasing power of the farmers to its level in the base-period, August 1909—July, 1914. Its weapons are (a) voluntary cuts in output, (b) the purchase of surpluses for emergency relief expenditure, and (c) marketing agreements.

The first method is by far the most important and is now being applied to wheat, cotton, corn and hogs. For the crop year 1932-33, the cotton acreage was reduced from nearly 41 million to 31 million acres. This year it is proposed to reduce the acreage still further to 25 million acres, a reduction of 40 per cent. With wheat the reduction is to be 15 per cent., in accordance with the terms of the international wheat agreement. Corn acreage is to be reduced by 20 per cent., and the production of hogs by 25 per cent. These plans involve the withdrawal from production of from 40 to 45 million acres. Over a long period the reduction required to bring farm production within the limits of present demand is semi-officially estimated at 50 million acres, but the distribution of acreage restriction will differ substantially from this emergency programme. Cotton is not considered to have a large permanent surplus whereas wheat restriction may have to go further than it does in the present plan. Other goods, notably dairy products, may have to be brought into the restriction scheme, but these are largely long-term planning projects and do not concern us here.

Farmers are paid to restrict their production. Under

An Australian Economist Looks at the U.S.

the farm allotment plan, payments are made according to the acreage abandoned, after the farmer has signed a contract agreeing to specific restrictions. Funds are raised by processing taxes,* and for the current year it is estimated that the total disbursements will amount to not less than \$650 million, of which cotton will account for \$150 million, wheat \$130 million, corn and hogs \$350 million, and less important crops like tobacco at least \$20 million. The taxes are, as the Secretary of Agriculture remarks in his annual report, passed on to consumers and enter into the costs of living and ultimately into the costs of industry, but they increase the farmer's income directly more than they increase costs, and their indirect effects in raising farm prices through restriction of output also give additional benefits to the farmer. With farm products for which demand and supply are fairly inelastic, restriction of acreage is considered to be an effective instrument for raising prices and farm incomes. This is a sound point, but it does not establish the case for agricultural restriction as a valuable aid to general economic recovery. Farm income for 1933 is estimated by the Secretary of Agriculture at \$6,400 million, as compared with \$5,143 million for 1932 and \$6,911 million for 1931. The increase is substantial and encouraging, but no one can say how far it was due respectively to dollar depreciation, to recovery in the volume of employment, to agricultural restriction or to expansion of credit.

The powers granted to the A.A.A., together with those of the F.C.A., involve by far the greatest measure of government control over agriculture in the history of the United States, if not in the history of all countries that have retained democratic institutions. The authors of *The Future Comes* rightly conclude that "the Government has so penetrated the institutions and procedures of the industry, from the highest national groupings to the smallest

* I.e., taxes on processes of manufacture (flour-milling, for instance) to which the products in question are subjected.

Controlled Inflation

local units throughout the land, as to gather into its hands absolute control over every act of production, processing, manufacturing and marketing of practically all agricultural and associated commodities." This is more than a recovery plan. It is an experiment in a planned economy the fate of which may have important consequences for old and new countries alike.

The emergency programme for public works and debt liquidation involves an expenditure on capital account estimated at \$6,000 million for the current year. This suggests an extravagant fiscal policy, and is in striking contrast to the earlier budget policy of the President. He cut wages of federal employees by 15 per cent. in 1933 and substantially reduced the veterans' bonus. "Too often in recent history," he remarked in his budget message to Congress, "liberal governments have been wrecked on rocks of loose fiscal policy." In his latest budget message, that of January 4, 1934, he planned for a deficit of \$7,000 million in 1934, and of \$2,000 million in 1935. "We should plan," remarked the message, "to have a definitely balanced budget for the third year of recovery, and from that time on seek a continuing reduction of the national debt." The public debt of the United States fell from \$26,600 million in 1919 to \$16,800 million in 1931. On Mr. Roosevelt's programme it will grow from \$24,000 million on June 30, 1933, to \$32,000 million on June 30, 1935.

Is such a rapid increase in the debt prudent in the circumstances? Certain facts have to be borne in mind in answering this question. First, the increase in the debt is an integral part of the President's recovery programme. It is thus open to him to argue that, if his recovery measures succeed, national income will rise and provide the funds from which the increased annual debt charge of approximately \$230 million will be met. National income was \$85,000 million in 1928. It fell to \$40,000 million in the low point of the depression early in 1933, and has recovered substantially since. If the President restores a level of

An Australian Economist Looks at the U.S.

prices and a measure of economic activity that furnish a national income of \$65,000 million, he may well consider that he has not expanded the debt beyond the capacity of the country to pay.

In the second place, he may point to the fact that his emergency public works and relief expenditure, are, for the time being, supplanting the expenditures that normally were undertaken by States and municipalities. If they resume their borrowing activities, the Federal Government can automatically withdraw from the field of public works. Finally, a substantial part of the emergency programme is for purchasing bank preferred stock, and re-financing mortgages. With moderate recovery, the assets should provide a large percentage of the debt charge on this part of the public debt created by the recovery programme.

It is perhaps relevant to draw on Australian experience. With a moderate recovery of national income in 1932 and 1933, the Commonwealth budget showed a substantial surplus, and taxation to the amount of £5.5 million was remitted, while a restoration of expenditure to the extent of nearly £1.5 million was possible. It is true that the State budgets were out of balance by an amount slightly below the annual contribution to the sinking funds. But the crisis policy of Australia produced a floating debt of £80 million, the interest on which has to be met out of the normal budget expenditure. On the wealth and population standard of the United States, this £80 million would be equivalent to between \$7,000 million and \$8,000 million. Viewed in this light the President's emergency expenditures are not so alarming as they seem at first sight.

III. CRITICISMS AND REFLECTIONS

THE immediate problem of financing the emergency expenditure has raised considerable doubts as to the ultimate success of the programme itself. With a fluctuating currency and a large budget deficit, the bond market

Criticism and Reflections

ends to weaken. In January, United States bonds had a relative rate of interest of about $3\frac{1}{2}$ per cent., and all long term interest rates were high. In these circumstances the President could not contemplate long-term borrowing. He has therefore been forced to resort to an increase in the floating debt as the principal method for financing his programme. The situation has, however, been altered by his more recent exchange policy, which brought about reduction of the New York "bank rate," and by the increasing confidence of investors in the United States that long term rates of interest will fall. He now has power to increase the supply of funds on the market, and thus to force down interest rates.

Here again the experience of Australia in a much more limited field is reassuring, and seems likely to repeat itself in the United States. Unfortunately there does not seem to be sufficient attention given in the United States to the joint problems of lower interest rates and increased private investment. It now seems certain that a substantial fall in long-term interest rates is under way, but the question of new investment is by no means resolved. Apart from the normal lag in the recovery of investment, there is the special influence of the new Securities Act. Like other parts of the President's programme, this Act is to a large extent a much needed long-term reconstruction measure. New issues of securities amounted to \$10,000 million in 1929. They fell to \$644 million in 1932, and to \$35 million for the first eight months of 1933. This demonstrates the importance of securing a recovery in investment. While under-writers are uncertain as to their liabilities under the Securities Act, the latter may well be a deterrent to a revival of the new capital market.

There is another part of the President's programme that is rightly considered to have impeded recovery. Critics have perhaps devoted too much attention to the effects of N.R.A. in raising costs. They are, however, drawing attention to a fundamental issue involved in any plan for

An Australian Economist Looks at the U
promoting recovery from a serious depression. It is t
that the object of recovery measures must be to raise pri
but care should be taken to specify the particular pri
that it is desired to raise. These are the prices of
materials, mostly primary products. In a depression th
prices fall much more seriously than other prices, and
disparity between primary and secondary prices is one
the most important problems to be solved by the sponsori
a recovery plan. Unfortunately, in the "ballyhoo" ti
was started by General Johnson in support of N.R.A., a
to some extent encouraged by the President himse
indiscriminate arguments about price-raising were employ
The result was a rise in the wrong price level. For exam
an index of department store sales showed that selli
prices rose from 69.6 in March, 1933, to 88 on Decembe
in the same year. Though dollar sales were up in Dece
ber, 1933, compared with December, 1932, the sa
adjusted for price changes (that is to say, the estimat
volume) were down from 83 to 77. Again, we may qu
the experience of farmers, who found their prices raised
36 per cent. between March and December, 1933, wh
the prices of the products they purchase had gone up
18 per cent. The recovery plan had thus not contribut
very greatly to removing the disparity between their co
and prices. This emphasis on the wrong price level w
indeed a good example of too much devotion to the fall
that recovery can be secured by raising the incomes of t
people in work rather than by adding new people to indust
It is from the new employment offered that the expansi
of spending power will come. As spending power increas
from this cause, the price of raw materials will rise witho
any great increase in the price of secondary commoditi
It was an integral part of the Australian recovery plan
close the gap between primary and secondary prices in tl
way.

The policy of raising internal prices could not fail
interact with the external value of the dollar. The Pre

Criticism and Reflections

that seems to have started on the assumption that a strong currency is a handicap to recovery. In a depression, when investment is languishing and floating funds seek refuge in strong currencies, the countries that become the repository of these funds may well complain that they suffer from an embarrassment of riches. The race for liquidity sets in motion strong deflationary forces. The effort to maintain convertibility into gold destroys all chance of a constructive credit policy. In driving the United States off gold, the President opened the door for an enlightened credit policy. He also raised his raw material prices considerably and swiftly. An index of the prices of twelve "international commodities" (wheat, cotton, tobacco, cocoa, coffee, tea, lard, silk, copper, tin, rubber and raw sugar) showed a rise from 100 on February 28, 1933, to 152 on January 2, 1934. Its high point was reached at 188 on July 18. This rise largely reflects the depreciation of the dollar. It is often argued that depreciation cannot be effective in the United States because the proportion of domestic commerce to foreign commerce is so great. There is certainly a vast difference between the situation in the United States and that in Australia, where export production is to a large extent the controlling factor in the internal economy. But the argument is not conclusive for the following reasons :—

1. The rise in the prices of exportable foodstuffs and raw materials gives relief where it is most needed.
2. The rise in the prices of imported goods does not raise real costs to the farmer or producers generally, because all costs do not rise proportionately.
3. Detaching the anchor from gold leaves the banks free to chart a course that avoids further deflation and stimulates enterprise.
4. Ultimate stabilisation takes place at a higher level than is otherwise possible.

For these reasons the President's gold policy may be commended. His task is mainly an internal one. He has to restore enterprise without the tedious business of a

An Australian Economist Looks at the U.S.

wholesale writing down of debts. The commodity dollar is his main solution. For the moment this means a dollar worth much less in gold than the old dollar. If the strength of the dollar is too great because the United States is a creditor country, the logical course is to weaken the dollar. This can be done by deliberate control of the exchange rate *on gold* and by inflation behind the undervalued dollar. Provided that the inflation is active and determined, the depreciation of the dollar can be successfully maintained. This inflation is to be accomplished by (a) public works, (b) the re-financing of debt on better lines and (c) the expansion of bank reserves through the operations of the exchange equalisation fund. But the inflation must be active. Half measures will not suffice. Apart from psychological or political fears, as we like to call them, the President's inflationary policy cannot injure the outside world. By cheapening the currency of the world's greatest creditor and promoting internal prosperity he is, indeed, exercising a constructive influence.

In a comparatively short period of twelve months the President has succeeded in depreciating the dollar to its new low level. If he wishes to make this depreciation effective in promoting internal recovery and in assuring recovery abroad, he must proceed with internal inflation to the point at which the dollar is no longer undervalued. At this point there is no competitive currency depreciation. The President indeed may well claim that he did not desire to have competitive currency depreciation. He was interested in lowering the gold content of his currency. If this gave him an exchange rate that favoured United States exports compared with the exports of other countries, it would be open to the other countries to move their own exchanges to a point at which the advantage was destroyed. This, in fact, is what has happened to the pound. With the price of gold in London rising, and the pound standing near its former parity with the dollar, the trade relations of Great Britain and the United States return to their old

Criticism and Reflections

point. The President could, of course, have waited to depreciate his dollar until his spending programme had been effective in raising prices, but it takes time to create the organisation necessary, and there was an impatient demand in the United States for a higher price of gold. He therefore pursued the policy of depreciating the dollar in terms of gold during the interim period while he was building up his spending organisation. The two parts of the programme may thus be considered to have gone hand in hand. They should lead to cheap money and to a recovery in investment, if other obstacles can be removed. Great Britain has consistently pursued a policy of cheap money, and sterling has depreciated against gold to practically the same extent as the dollar. But Great Britain has not embarked upon a heavy spending programme. If she did, there can be little doubt that British and American policy together would exercise a powerful influence in promoting trade recovery.

NORTHERN IRELAND AND PARTITION

I. THIRTEEN YEARS AGO

THE Imperial Parliament's attempt to solve the Irish problem in 1920* was a political experiment. In the south it failed, and now, at the end of thirteen to fourteen years, it is perhaps worth while to consider how far it has succeeded in the north. It had a good chance of success there, for the scheme had already been accepted by the Ulster Unionist party, who had an imposing majority in Northern Ireland. It was, for them, Home Rule with a difference. Complete autonomy was granted in all internal affairs, but there was reserved to the Imperial Government the imposition and the collection of customs, excise and income tax, and the control of the post office. Hence in these important respects Northern Ireland remained a part of the United Kingdom, and for this reason retained its representation in the Imperial House of Commons—a principal recommendation of the scheme to the Ulster Unionist stalwart.

It was evident that the scheme was regarded as a temporary measure, and that it was hoped and expected by its authors that with time and opportunity North and South would sink their differences and come together. The bridge was provided in the shape of a Council of Ireland, to be elected by the members of the northern and southern Parliaments. Northern Ireland built her end, but the

* For a description of the Government of Ireland Act 1920 and of the way in which it was adopted in Northern Ireland and rejected in the rest of the country, see *THE ROUND TABLE*, No. 43, June 1921, p. 507.

Thirteen Years Ago

southern Parliament was stillborn, and the bridge was never completed. A further attempt to get rid of partition was made in the Act that implemented the Irish Treaty. The Irish Free State, as then constituted, comprised the whole of Ireland, but Northern Ireland was given the right to opt itself out, and it lost no time in doing so. Since then the removal of the boundary in Ireland has been, at one time at least, the expressed policy of the British Labour party, and it is an open secret that the Free State embarked on its economic war with Great Britain with the same end in view. It is therefore interesting to enquire whether there are any signs of change in the attitude of the Six Counties towards partition.

If it was the opinion of experienced politicians in Great Britain that Northern Ireland would not long be able to maintain its status as an independent entity, that was also the hope of the Ulster Nationalists and the foreboding of many Ulster Unionists. Many circumstances combined to favour such a view. It was doubtful whether the area and population of the Six Counties were sufficient to justify the establishment of all the machinery of parliament, of government and of a civil service, and whether the resources of a small and comparatively poor State would not be overtaxed in order to support them. There was in the area but one large city, Belfast, inhabited by a full third of the entire population,* and there was therefore a natural fear that the new Government, when it became established there, would be so much under the influence of the metropolis that its policy would be in the main dictated by the city, to the neglect of the interests of the rest of the province.

There were other considerations. It was evident not only that the British Cabinet would sooner or later grant Home Rule to Southern Ireland, but also that if the grant was to be acceptable it must include the fiscal auto-

* The population of Northern Ireland is given in the 1926 Census as 1,256,561, that of Belfast as 415,607.

Northern Ireland and Partition

some denied to the North. The imaginary line of the boundary would then become a real barrier, and trade between North and South would be seriously hampered. This expectation was soon to be realised. One of the first acts of the Free State after its establishment was to impose a heavy tariff on most of the common articles of consumption, with the result that the consignments of clothes, boots, groceries and tinned goods that were formerly sent from Belfast and Londonderry to all parts of Ireland now no longer cross the border. A few firms had the foresight to establish branches in the Free State and have so been able to evade the restrictions, but speaking generally the distributing trade from the North to the South has gone. Further, the Free State, freed from the whole burden of war debt, was able to start its career with an income tax much lower than the British income tax paid by the Ulsterman. The anticipation, still more the realisation of these financial drawbacks of partition, caused many to prophesy that the hard-headed Northerner would soon reconsider his position in regard to the South.

Before these forecasts had materialised, however, there was further criticism. The new Parliament was in the main composed of inexperienced members, and the abstention of the Nationalists left the Government without the salutary check of a real Opposition. The members of the Cabinet were, with two exceptions, new to office and to the business of administration, and the untried team did not lack detractors, among both friends and foes.

But whatever the Mr. Croakers might say or think, the new Government of Northern Ireland was based on two very solid foundations. One of them was the Unionist man in the street, who was prepared to take any risks and to support any Northern Government so long as it maintained the link with Great Britain, and so long as it stood between him and his lifelong bogey, a Home Rule Parliament in Dublin. The other was the Prime Minister, Lord Craigavon, as he now is, James Craig, as he then was

and always will be in Ulster. He possessed and still possesses the confidence of every member of his party. Some might think him narrow, hidebound, reactionary, but no one could deny that the passion of his life was Ulster, and that his passionate Unionism was the expression of his conviction that union with Great Britain best served the interests of his native province. He had the gift of clear and unmistakable speech, the outcome of equally clear and unmistakable principles and conclusions. His singleness of purpose and his steady common sense gave him an authority over his followers that enabled him at once to restrain the hotheads and to encourage the faint-hearted. Many years at Westminster both on the Ministerial benches and in Opposition had made him a master of parliamentary procedure and tactics, and his capacity as an administrator had been proved at the Admiralty and in the Ministry of Pensions. A Government and a Parliament of novices could have had no better mentor.

One might sum up the situation when the Northern Government began its task by saying that while the Nationalist minority practically refused it recognition, the Unionist majority accepted it, though with some misgivings as to the outcome. Have the events of the succeeding years altered that situation ?

II. CHANGES SINCE 1921

THE most important change that has taken place politically has been the establishment of the Irish Free State. That event had been preceded by years of violence and disorder, the period known in the South as the Irish Civil War. The accounts of that campaign that the Northern Unionist read had not impressed him with any admiration for its heroes, and when the war was carried through the North and into Belfast in 1920-21 his first-hand experience confirmed his opinion that Sinn Fein military tactics were merely another name for organised

Northern Ireland and Partition

murder. He was not prepared to condone the acts either of the leaders or of their subordinates, and when those leaders were set the task of governing the newly formed Free State he awaited with somewhat grim expectancy their essay at the restoration of order in the South. He had to admit and even to admire the courage and resolution with which rebellious and turbulent factions were suppressed, and peace and settled government were established. In no long time he had to allow both initiative and ideas to the rulers of the Free State, though he regarded some of their economic measures as unsound, and others as directly levelled against himself. He saw with pleasure that Protestants who held high office in the law and in the civil service had been confirmed in their appointments. But as year after year the Free State became more settled, he noted with some uneasiness that one high Protestant official after another was retiring, and that the Protestant population of the South was dwindling rapidly. He did not like to see the Sinn Fein tricolour replace the traditional green of Ireland. He failed to understand why the "Soldiers' Song" should be the national anthem of a country with so many glorious melodies of its own. It offended his sense of the fitness of things that the King's health was no longer the first toast at public functions. These were small things, but each of them meant a good deal to him, and while he watched events in the South with interest he was not attracted. When Mr. de Valera came into power he was frankly puzzled. He had seen the Irish Free State obtain a measure of autonomy that would have more than satisfied every Home Rule leader for the past century. He had seen an Irish Government set up without interference from Great Britain, and neighbourly, even friendly, relations established between the two countries. It seemed to him that the tenuous suzerainty still held by the Crown need not have offended the susceptibilities of the most ardent Nationalist. Mr. de Valera's victory could only mean that

Changes Since 1922

the antipathy of the majority in Southern Ireland to Great Britain was such that not even a shred of the British connection could be endured. And he asked himself—he is still asking—"In a State so avowedly hostile to everything British, what would be the place and what would be the lot of a community whose political watchword is loyalty to the King and the Union Jack?" Yet Mr. de Valera kept declaring that he would never be satisfied until the North was brought in.

If Mr. de Valera's politics are little to the taste of the Northern Unionist, his economic policy is even more displeasing. Nor does the Northerner see much to hope for should the new party, with General O'Duffy at its head, ever attain power. So far as he can make out, the General differs from Mr. de Valera on one point only. The present Free State Government would gladly cut the painter at once. General O'Duffy prefers to wait until the sea is calmer and land is in sight. Both are agreed on one point—Northern Ireland must be in the boat; and the Northern Unionist wants to know what business he has in that galley.

Perhaps the results of the general election held last November for the fourth Parliament of Northern Ireland best show how little the sentiment of the province has altered, and how strong is the support of the Unionist Government. An absolute majority for the Government was returned unopposed (27 out of 52 members), and in this number were included the Prime Minister and every member of the Cabinet. The final result was that the Government has a majority of 36 in a house of 52. Even this does not represent the full strength of Unionism, for three of the Opposition are returned as Independent Unionists.

Let us now consider the Nationalist minority. It would be equally correct to speak of the Catholic minority, for Catholic and Nationalist, Protestant and Unionist, are so nearly interchangeable terms in Northern Ireland that

Northern Ireland and Partition

party organisers seldom enquire after a voter's political beliefs. A religious census gives a sufficiently accurate forecast of the poll.

To the mind of the Irish Nationalist the 1920 Act was a grim travesty of the Judgment of Solomon. The child had first been cut in two, and then offered to the claimants. Northern Ireland had proved her claim spurious by accepting her portion. Southern Ireland had shown that she was indeed Ireland by refusing to be a party to the partition.

The Northern Nationalist fully shared this view, and to mark his disapproval refused to have part or lot in the Northern Parliament, giving to the Northern Government no more than a sullen and forced obedience. To his mind the situation had altered only for the worse. Under the Union, with the country administered from Dublin Castle, there was at least the hope that a sympathetic Ministry might be in power at Westminster, and that benefits, both material and moral, might be gained. The composition of the population of the new province left him no room for illusion. Both government and administration must for years, probably for generations, be in the hands of his secular and hereditary opponents, and he knew that the largest and most powerful section of that party was avowedly antagonistic to his religion, and that if its voice was listened to in high places, Roman Catholic claims, as such, would at best get even-handed justice. He could foresee a further grievance. Every Irishman has a natural liking for a government job. Under the old régime it had been an unwritten law that patronage should be shared, as far as possible, equally between Catholic and Protestant. But he well knew that, while the British Government had observed this rule, it was far otherwise with the bodies to whom Irish local government was entrusted. There every appointment was canvassed on party lines, and not even a rate collector could hope to get a job unless in religion and in politics he was in agreement with the

Changes Since 1921

majority of the Board. It was only too much to be feared that the new Government would be guided by the same principle, and, even if it were not, that by the time the claims of its own supporters had been satisfied there would be little left for a Catholic opponent.

The lapse of years has done little to improve matters from his standpoint. When the new State was formed, the North had been free from first-class sectarian riots for many years. Within a few months I.R.A. gunmen were quartered on the Catholics, who were often most unwilling hosts, and the Northern offensive began. The first shots blew all the smouldering hatreds and enmities into flame, and unscrupulous partisans on both sides indulged in an orgy of violence. When the outbreak was finally quelled, sectarian and party passion had been raised to white heat, and the Catholic smarted under the belief, whether true or not, that in its measures of repression the Government had discriminated against its opponents, and had condoned reprisals carried out by its own supporters.

In 1920 the wish was father to the belief of the Northern Catholics that the new province would not subsist for long, and their hopes were raised again and again. The establishment of the Free State, the Boundary Commission, the achievement of the Shannon scheme, the return of Mr. de Valera were all events that might well shake the position of the Unionist majority and lead to the All-Ireland State so much desired. These hopes often renewed have kept the Ulster Catholic from accepting the situation in the North. He is still struggling to get free from an alien domination, he is still not simply an opponent of the Government but a would-be subverter of the constitution. There is a certain amount of evidence that a change is taking place in the attitude of a section of the Catholic population, but the majority are bitterly opposed to the North of Ireland State and to its existence as a separate entity.

The position thus taken up by the minority should be

Northern Ireland and Partition

borne in mind in passing judgment on the charge of religious intolerance so often brought against the Northern Government. There is of course no intolerance in the sense of interference with the exercise of religion, and Catholic chapel schools are given the same State and rate aid as that given to Protestant church schools. That religion is not a bar to employment is shown by the fact that the first Lord Chief Justice of Northern Ireland was a Catholic, that the present permanent head of the Education Department is a Catholic, and that his immediate predecessor was also a Catholic. But the rank and file of the government services are certainly in the main Protestant, and when comment is made on this fact the answer given more or less plainly is "Why bring an enemy into the household, when so many friends are unemployed?"

In the first general election, which was held under proportional representation and therefore gave a fair picture of the state of parties in the province at that time, Sinn Feiners and Nationalists polled one-third of the votes cast. A minority of this size should be able to exercise a considerable influence, to command respect, and if need be to extort consideration. It suffers, however, from two of the most fatal misfortunes that can befall a party. It is hopelessly divided, into old Constitutional Nationalists, Sinn Feiners, de Valera-ites, Republicans and Catholic Labour; and it has not yet found a leader strong enough to dominate and weld into one the warring factions. In the first general election the minority polled a third of the votes, but gained less than a fourth of the seats. In the election last November most of the contests in Catholic constituencies were between Catholic candidates of different factions.

The Nationalist members only decided to take their seats in the Northern Parliament in 1925. Among them was Mr. Joseph Devlin, a politician and parliamentarian of long experience and of consummate skill, a public speaker who had been heard with applause in the Old and the New

Changes Since 1921

Woolfe, a public man who had earned the gratitude of all sections of the community in Ulster by his many services as a member of Parliament and by his benefactions as a private citizen. His death, which took place while this article was being written, evoked expressions of deep and sincere regret from all sides in Ireland, and at his funeral Northern Ministers walked side by side with Ministers and ex-Ministers from the Free State, in common mourning for the loss. And yet neither in the 1925 nor in the 1929 Parliament did the Nationalists ever acknowledge an official leader or appoint a whip.

Is the minority becoming reconciled to the Northern Government? That question no one can answer. Officially the answer is, of course, a furious denial, but many Catholics seem to realise that they enjoy at least peace and quiet, and that the social services are as complete as they are in England, and better than those in the Free State. At any rate the Catholic population has not diminished, and many good judges say that it is steadily increasing by immigration from across the border.

A word must be said about Labour. It is a proof of the strength of Unionist sentiment that in an industrial city like Belfast, with strong trade unions, socialist Labour holds only two seats out of 16, and those in constituencies with a large Catholic vote. There is a flourishing Unionist Labour organisation, but that is a branch of the main Unionist party, and is looked upon as a mere counterfeit by the socialist Labour party in Ulster, whose affinities are with Clydeside. Even in trade unionism Belfast holds aloof from Dublin, and has its affiliations with Great Britain, although such well-known Dublin Labour leaders as Connolly and Larkin hailed originally from Belfast.

What is to be said of the important subject of finance? Under the 1920 Act the Government at Westminster retained the power of imposing and collecting all the important branches of revenue—customs, excise and income tax. From the sum so collected there is returned to the

Northern Ireland and Partition

Northern Government a sum—agreed between the two Treasuries—sufficient to meet the cost of the services for which it is responsible, the balance being the contribution of Northern Ireland to Imperial services. In the ten years beginning with 1922-3 Northern Ireland's contribution to Imperial funds was over £24 million; but it fell from six and a half million in 1922-23 to £298,000 in 1931-32, and that represents fairly closely the fall in the total revenues of the province.*

During the war, Ulster had her full share of sham prosperity. When the war ended everyone thought that the boom must last. Her shipyards would still be working overtime to replace the shipping destroyed in the submarine campaign, and her looms, which had been fully occupied in weaving aeroplane linen, would be running day and night to supply America with the goods she had not been able to get for years. Unfortunately, by the time the province of Northern Ireland had started on its career, it was becoming evident that there were more ships afloat than the shipping companies could afford to run, and that America, having learned to use substitutes, no longer wanted linen. Thus two principal industries were almost out of action, and when the slump came, no part of the United Kingdom suffered more than Ulster. Not only was there an immediate and serious fall in revenue, but unemployment became a very heavy charge on the State, which was responsible for its own unemployment insurance. Since then, the liability has been shared with Great Britain, and an equalisation payment falls to be made to the country whose ratio of unemployment is highest; but the burden has not been thereby greatly lightened, although for some years Northern Ireland has had the unenviable distinction of receiving payment.

There are some welcome signs of a turn in the tide. One of the two great Belfast shipyards launched two ships

* The figures of income and expenditure since Northern Ireland received Home Rule are appended.

Has Northern Home Rule Succeeded ?

last year, and so regained the position of second in the list of British ship-builders ! Within the last few weeks, useful orders have been placed with the other, and its skeleton office staff is being brought up to strength, the first step towards a return of activity. The demand for linen has been increasing, and many of the mills and factories are working to full capacity, though not perhaps on a very large margin of profit.* The figures of unemployment have improved during the last year, but are still painfully high.†

Agriculture, however, has long been the staple industry of Northern Ireland. The Ulster farm is small, a hundred acres being regarded as a large holding. The Ulster farmer, if he is to make a living, must have more than one string to his bow, and he finds a market in England for much of his varied farm produce. The Northern Ministry of Agriculture has helped him, sometimes against his will, for he is ultra-conservative in his methods. It has enforced marketing regulations, and has made him attend to the standardisation of his products with good results financially. Like farmers everywhere, he has been having a hard struggle to make ends meet, but there are signs of a new hope in agriculture, and, what is still better, of a more progressive spirit.

III. HAS NORTHERN HOME RULE SUCCEEDED ?

THIS article set out to consider whether the experiment of 1920 had succeeded. The answer depends on what the experimenters hoped it would achieve. If it was intended to bring North and South together, it has completely failed. If it was intended to fuse Unionist with Nationalist in the North, it has done practically nothing. If the object was to create a Unionist reservation, it has had a full measure of success.

* The Northern Ireland trade statistics since 1924 are appended.

† The total of registered unemployed fell from 76,360 in January 1933, to 68,139 a year later, but the latter figure still represented 26.5 per cent. of insured workpeople.

Northern Ireland and Partition

But there is another side to the experiment. How has the devolution of power worked? On the whole, very well. Since the Government was first set up, practically the same Ministers have remained in charge of their departments. That has been a great advantage in a country that dislikes change, and asks above all things for settled conditions so that a man can get on with his job. The Northerner knows exactly what he may expect from the Minister of Labour, or of Commerce, or of Home Affairs. So the mere fact that the Ministers have been in office for thirteen years is a strong argument in favour of continuing them; in fact it is doubtful whether the man in the street could imagine an alternative Ministry. Legislation has been sympathetic to the needs and the prejudices of the province, and has made very definite advances on pre-existing law. One might cite the Education Act, the Licensing Act, the Motor Traffic Acts and others as examples. Law and order have been well preserved, and an efficient police force has been established to take the place of the old R.I.C. There have been, unfortunately, a few outbursts of party violence, but they were local, and were soon quelled.

The Prime Minister, when he first took office, announced his intention of keeping step with Great Britain in social services, and although the Northerner grumbles at the cost he realises that the promise has been kept. The Ulster worker is as well off in that respect as his neighbour in Great Britain. The employer, the business man and the farmer have at least ready access to the government departments in order to lay their wants and to air their grievances before them, while a trade dispute always finds the Minister of Labour willing to act as mediator.

If it were suggested to the Northern Unionist that he was paying dearly for all these privileges, he would probably agree. Like every private citizen in every country in the world, he would condemn the cost of administration as grossly extravagant, and denounce the growing army of officials and the bloated salaries of government servants.

Has Northern Home Rule Succeeded?

He might even quote the very narrow surplus of the Northern budget, and express doubt as to how long the province would be able to support its burdens. But he would point out with grim satisfaction that a settled government of his own of thirteen years standing could not be lightly set aside, and that every year of its unquestioned power has rendered it more impossible for the existing status of Northern Ireland to be disturbed except by and with the consent of her own Parliament. With these reflections he would conclude that the game was worth the candle.

Ulster.

February 1934.

APPENDIX

I. TRADE STATISTICS OF NORTHERN IRELAND

(in £ million)

Year.	Imports.	Exports.	Total Trade.
1924	69	65	134
1925	62	60	122
1926	57	54	111
1927	60	56	116
1928	58	56	114
1929	61	60	121
1930	57	54	111
1931	50	46	96
1932	46	43	89

N.B.—In 1932, the imports of the Irish Free State amounted to £43 million and her exports to £27 million, a total of £70 million.

II. INCOME AND EXPENDITURE OF NORTHERN IRELAND FROM 1923-1933

Year.	Income (Transferred and Gross Residuary Share).	Expenditure (Transferred and Reserved Services).	Imperial Contribution to Army, Navy, War Debt, etc.
1922-23	£17,600,378	£11,050,025	£6,685,645
1923-24	14,550,949	9,899,232	4,517,879
1924-25	13,110,854	9,726,076	3,175,000
1925-26	12,780,601	10,184,318	2,275,000
1926-27	11,118,272	10,021,320	1,350,000
1927-28	10,911,111	9,478,870	1,450,000
1928-29	11,230,686	10,030,292	1,175,000
1929-30	11,189,963	10,229,263	855,000
1930-31	12,335,851	11,719,203	545,000
1931-32	12,000,517	11,499,331	298,000
1932-33	12,116,407*	12,182,976*	273,000*

* Provisional.

THE UNITED STATES : RECOVERY AND REFORM

(From an American correspondent who, unlike the Australian economist whose article appears on another page, is not in sympathy with the tendencies of the President's experiment.)

I

IN the first two years of the depression, it was possible to write of it largely in terms of statistics. Prices had declined to such and such a point. The consequences were thus and so. Ordinary dinner-table conversation in those American families which were still above want concerned itself with the individual aspects of these minor social and economic changes. The Smiths had resigned from all their clubs. The Joneses were doing their own housework. Robinson had lost his job and was trying to sell Christmas cards on a commission.

After the collapse of the gold standard in England in 1931, the public became more conscious of the magnitude of the world's ills and the alarming inadequacy of institutions and economic mechanisms that had been accepted without question. In the last months of Hoover and the first weeks of Roosevelt, public attention was more and more directed to the rival schools of economic thinking. There were the bitter-end deflationists; there were inflationists of various degrees and cults. There was gold; there was managed currency. Dinner tables took cognizance of currency and monetary questions. What would have been considered a few years ago fairly abstruse problems in theoretical economics were brought down to the level of the family meal. The progress of the recovery program of the

The United States : Recovery and Reform

Reverend Administration has now brought us to an examination of all the assumptions that underlie our social, economic and political life. This is not to most of us a congenial task. It is generally disagreeable to have to do any particular thinking about abstract questions. But here we are to-day, obviously on the verge of an abyss, casting a glance, now at the profundity of the abyss, which we had never realized was a part of our landscape, and now at the forces that have pushed us to its verge.

Most men take little interest in the origin of the physical universe, about which it seems now too late to take any active steps. And the baffling problem as to whether the universe is now contracting, expanding, or merely static they are willing to leave to the professional astronomer or physicist. All they ask is that something like the present range of temperatures and the present precarious balance of chemical elements shall endure for the next generation or two, in order to enable themselves and the members of their immediate families to fulfil the ordinary human destiny. In the same way most men are prone to regard the social order. So long as they can gain the necessities of existence, be free from outrageous tyranny, and have enough economic security to look ahead from one year to another, they will carry on without being vastly concerned over the name, the origin, or the motivating forces of the society in which they live. History shows abundantly that even the most obvious and glaring social injustices are frequently slow to stir public opinion and are often unconscionably long in getting remedied.

But the New Deal has stirred us to unwonted self-consciousness and unwonted self-examination. It is now obvious that our whole social, political and economic order was in 1929 incomparably more vulnerable than ordinary men supposed. It is also obvious that the infection which beset us in that year was a fairly familiar type of falling price bacillus in a particularly virulent form. Therefore, say our publicists, let us consider how in the future we can

The United States : Recovery and Reform

do two things : first, build up the resisting power of our society ; second, check infections caused by the falling price bacillus.

It is now a commonplace to observe that President Roosevelt's recovery program is a compound of two elements, a simple recovery element designed to end the depression, and hence necessarily temporary in character, and a reform element designed to give our populace a new and better "deal" and hence permanent in character. This observation is commonplace, but it is extremely important. If this point is not grasped, the American scene, which is at best obscure, will seem hopelessly unintelligible, and the American people will appear more senseless and quixotic than in fact they are ; because the things that promote recovery may not promote reform, and vice versa, and because what Mr. Maynard Keynes in his New Year's open letter to President Roosevelt calls the "order of urgencies" of different measures is not the same seen from a recovery standpoint as seen from a reform standpoint.

What is the goal of reform under the New Deal ? It is the "redistribution of wealth in the interests of social justice." Everybody is theoretically in favour of this. But how is it to be done ? What is social justice ? Social justice in the definition of new dealers would appear to be a new species of egalitarianism, spreading social and economic privilege more evenly over the entire populace—bringing "forgotten men" into line with remembered men. It is a phase of what Señor Ortega y Gasset in his notable book calls the Revolt of the Masses.

One may infer that many of the ideas for the New Deal emanated from the book of Mr. Stuart Chase, entitled *A New Deal*, and first published in August, 1932. Mr. Chase would doubtless acknowledge a heavy indebtedness to writers like Mr. Maynard Keynes, and they in turn to others. But this is not the place to study the origins of the new ideology.

The United States: Recovery and Reform

The program of the New Deal involves the creation of new buying power by an economy of high wages. It involves an effort by various devices to restore the balance between agriculture and industry. It involves a greater emphasis on consumption goods, which are brought into existence by men's spendings, and a lessened emphasis on producers' goods, which are brought into existence by men's savings. It is aimed at individualism and it loves to make fun of *laissez faire*. It recognizes that we have gotten no adequate emancipation, no real economic freedom from all our improved technology. Technology, Mr. Chase vividly suggests, "is still riding with Hell under one front wheel and Utopia under the other." "If we could eliminate the gyrations of those who are trying to become wealthy, we could abolish poverty and double the standard of living overnight."

Order, discipline, the consciousness of definite social aim are needed to insure a dependable flow of goods from the earth to the ultimate consumer, but when that discipline—and it is largely one of engineering—is established, economic activity, with its four to six hours of work a day, becomes, if not a minor, at least a subordinate consideration. More important will be the problem of how to live; how to use fruitfully one's leisure time; how to improve the biological stock; how to educate; how to love and marry without the emotional miseries which now beset us; how to get the most out of life. These are the real problems of a civilized people who have yoked a billion of mechanical horsepower.

As means to this end the New Deal appears to contemplate a "managed" currency, higher wages, shorter working hours, elaborate programs of public works, long-term government budgeting, with no attempt at balance before the fiscal year beginning June 30, 1935, and economic planning.

Books have been written about these ideas—not all of them since 1929. More books will be written about them. They afford an inexhaustible basis of discussion. For the purposes of this article it will be enough to stress two vital points: first, that the value of these new or revived concep-

The United States : Recovery and Reform

tions—attractive as they may be—can be demonstrated only by experiment; and second, that by turning the emphasis from *labor* and the creation of capital by *savings*, to *leisure* and the necessity for *spending*, they shift drastically and most significantly the center of gravity of what is left of our nineteenth-century code of morals. This is not the first time that the world has had occasion to reconsider well-established ideas of morality, but it is a little interesting to observe that, while the revision of nineteenth-century morals has been in many sexual and social aspects in the direction of *laissez faire*, in economics it is in the other direction.

II

FROM the standpoint of traditional capitalistic economics the New Deal is unorthodox in several particulars :

First, and most conspicuously, in its monetary policy. The successive stages of the monetary policy have been :

1. The voluntary departure from the gold standard in April, 1933, which, being wholly voluntary, bears only a superficial resemblance to the British departure from the gold standard in September, 1931.

2. The President's declaration at the London Conference (July, 1933) in favor of the "kind of a dollar which a generation hence will have the same purchasing power and debt-paying power as the dollar value we hope to attain in the near future," generally believed to be at the 1926 price level.

3. The systematic depreciation of the dollar in terms of gold by purchases of gold at steadily increasing prices. This course was proclaimed in the President's radio broadcast of October 22 as "a policy and not an expedient." "If we cannot raise prices one way, we will do it another."

4. The purchase until December 31, 1937, of newly-mined silver at a price well above the present market. This policy was announced on December 22. It is generally agreed that the plan has more significance politically than from a monetary standpoint. It is "doing something" for silver to please the mining States and will not materially broaden the currency base.

5. The stabilization or revaluation of the dollar at somewhere between fifty and sixty cents in terms of gold. This policy was announced on January 15, 1934, in a special message to Congress, in which the President sought legislation to take the monetary gold

The United States : Recovery and Reform

from the Federal Reserve banks and appropriate it to the Federal Treasury. This unusual course is justified by the Attorney-General of the United States as an exercise by the sovereign of its characteristic power of eminent domain ; but the pending Bill, which will have become a law before this article is in type, not only purports to fix the compensation for the expropriated gold, but fixes it in gold certificates, a form of warehouse receipt to be honored only when, as and if the Treasury feels like it. In other words, the Treasury takes the gold and gives the banks a sort of qualified IOU. The Reserve banks have been supposed to be immune from political influences. The pending Bill is a step away from economic planning by the Reserve Board in the direction of planning by the Secretary of the Treasury, a political officer. The Bill also provides for utilizing the gold "profit" from the hocus pocus of revaluation for the establishment of a two billion dollar stabilization fund, to be used in keeping the dollar in terms of foreign exchange down to a point below, possibly far below, what would appear to be its natural economic worth.

It is perhaps easy to over-emphasize the importance of the mere revaluation of the dollar in terms of gold. The child—one forbears a harsher word—was born in April. This is only the christening—even now only a partial and provisional christening.

The monetary policy has been so widely commented upon and by such eminent authorities that no attempt will here be made to analyse or criticise it on any economic ground. On the other hand, the political implications of the policy would seem to keep the President still aligned with the so-called soft money school of thought against the hard money school, with the debtors against the creditors (in those cases where debtors and creditors are distinguishable), and thus to revive the classical money controversies of the last four decades of the nineteenth century. It was this monetary policy which evoked the first sharp challenge to the New Deal from no less a spokesman than Al Smith, the former leader of the Democratic party, who spoke with all his old-time fervor. The newest monetary move is away from the so-called commodity dollar changed in gold content from day to day by the gyrations of the price index. In this respect, the monetary policy has perhaps become more conventional ; but this adventure in coin clipping, unprecedented in our history, is certain

The United States : Recovery and Reform

to be much discussed in the Congressional campaign this coming November, and in the Presidential campaign of 1936.

Second. The New Deal is unorthodox in respect to the National Industrial Recovery Act, which puts the expansion of wages and the consequent inflation of purchasing power before the enhancement of the capitalists' profits from which the wage is to be paid. The old practice was the reverse. Increasing profits to the capitalists ultimately permitted increased employment and higher wages. This is new recovery technique. It is also a bold, practical and constitutional departure. It says to the industrialists, "Before you divide any profits for yourselves, increase your pay roll by taking on new personnel and increasing hourly wages (not necessarily the weekly wage of any particular employee)." This is obviously an expropriation *pro tanto* of capital. It destroys freedom of contract. It enormously increases the cost of operation in many industries. Where those industries were operating at a profit, they may be able to operate at a lesser profit. But where the industry is operating at a loss or barely avoiding it, the provisions of the Act may be destructive of the enterprise in question. In general, small employers have found that the Act bears heavily upon them. But the economic consequences of the measure and the political reactions to it are perhaps less important to note than its actual derogation from the basic economic concept of *private industry based on profit*.

Third. Supplanting in large measure privately owned and privately operated industry by publicly owned and operated industry. This is brought about in a variety of ways. In the first place, the Securities Act, passed in the Spring of 1933, by imposing drastic personal liability on directors of enterprises that float new securities makes it impracticable to float new issues. Every director or partner of the issuer, every accountant, engineer or appraiser consenting to the use of his name, and every underwriter of the

The United States: Recovery and Reform

security incurs a risk of personal liabilities in amounts that may well be enormous. It is generally believed that this Act alone will prove inhibitive of new bids for capital. In the second place, industrial conditions are such that, quite apart from the provisions of the Securities Act, companies that might ordinarily attract capital from the hands of the investor can no longer do so. These concerns must, therefore, either languish for want of adequate capital or get loans from the Reconstruction Finance Corporation or other government agency. In the third place, the requirements of the government for capital are so prodigious that they virtually pre-empt the capital markets. With the government seeking to borrow no less than ten billion dollars in the next year, there is not much hope for re-financing by private corporate borrowers.

Fourth. The public works program, which in some cases enters fields heretofore occupied by private corporations, e.g., generation of electrical power by the Tennessee Valley Authority, instead of by a public utility corporation under private management and subject only to public regulation. Other public works, while not theoretically inhibitive of private undertakings or directly competitive therewith, attract the laborer by wages higher in many cases than those obtainable in private industry. Mr. O. M. W. Sprague, who on November 21 resigned his post as adviser to the Treasury for the purpose of criticizing the recovery program, has particularly criticized this aspect of it.

It would doubtless be possible to multiply almost indefinitely instances of the substitution of government initiative and government operation for our traditional individualist economy and replacement of corporate credit by federal credit. Hand in hand with these drastic departures from orthodox capitalistic economy accomplished by legislation or executive order, there has sprung up a voluminous literature attacking the profit economy and the profit motive. A professor of philosophy has written a book

The United States : Recovery and Refresh

in which he says that the profit economy is fated to pass away because the "basic motivation involved is too low for what we have come to expect of civilized life."

Professor Tugwell, the Assistant Secretary of Agriculture, is particularly good at the war cry against the profit motive.

It seems to me a mistake (he says) to provide islands of safety in a changing world to which some of us may retreat, clutching certain sterile goods, and especially that this retreat should be particularly designed for the protection of the gains which are got from the sabotage of recovery.

And those people who would have us crawl back to the old ideas, like a wounded animal to an abandoned den, misread the temper of the people as well as the intelligence of the present government. We are trying to show that heaped-up corporate surplus and the over-concentration of wealth are not the life of trade but the death of trade.

The comfort that such an inspiring message may carry to a sorely stricken people will readily be perceived. An effort is also being made to ascertain the meaning of some of Mr. Tugwell's major pronouncements. But his meaning at least is clear when he says : "We achieved revolution last November with the ballot. It was, in my opinion, the greatest revolution since the founding of our nation ; for we departed then, I think for good, from the dogmas of free competition and the theory that the least government is the best."

Mr. Raymond Moley, another ardent champion of the New Deal, who no longer has a government post but is now editing a magazine called *Today*, points out that the President has difficulty in finding competent or experienced subordinates among business and legal leaders, "because they were part of the political and economic system that brought us to this débâcle and are not in sympathy with the New Deal . . . In filling positions he (the President) must often choose between competence on the one side and efficiency on the other. Often he has to select people in whom there is more sympathy than competence." It is

The United States: Recovery and Reform

doubtful whether the President will feel grateful to Mr. Moley for that last remark.

These thinkers of the New Deal are prone to refer to the 1932 election as a "mandate of repudiation," evidently on the theory that on that occasion we repudiated, not merely Mr. Hoover and the depression, but the profit system and the profit motive, the whole idea of individual initiative, and indeed all the animating and motivating social and economic impulses that characterized our history down to March 4 last.

While President Roosevelt has not fully associated himself with these pronouncements, it is not always easy for the business man to divine whether, in the eye of Washington, his ambition to run his business at a profit is a base or a noble one. Men of undoubted virtue and acumen are puzzled. They do not know whether they are living in the earthy atmosphere of the profit motive, in the rare empyrean wherein Karl Marx reigns supreme, or in some strange and ambiguous stratosphere between the two, where human life has never heretofore existed.

To many of the President's numberless admirers he is not merely the greatest of the American Presidents. He is the first of our Presidents to grasp the social problems of his day and to have the energy and courage to recast society in the pattern inspired by noble and humane ideas. He has abolished child labor. He has abolished the sweat-shop. He is bringing us to a planned and ordered economy which can never collapse as did our economy in 1929, partly because it will be inherently less competitive and vulnerable, and partly because it will have a price structure that by "management" can guard against such disasters.

The critics of the New Deal and its leader have thus far been much more temperate and restrained than the admirers. The Republican party in particular has offered no concerted opposition to the President's program, and its leaders have for the most part abstained from criticism. By far the most outspoken dissent has come from Al Smith,

The United States : Recovery and Reform

whose challenge was in no uncertain terms. Writing in the *New Outlook* in November, he said :

If I must choose between the leaders of the past, with all the errors they have made and with all the selfishness they have been guilty of, and the inexperienced young college professors who hold no responsible public office but are perfectly ready to turn 130,000,000 Americans into guinea pigs for experimentation, I am going to be for the people who have made the country what it is. And I say this with full knowledge of the fact that there are many things in the old order of society which I should like to have changed and which I do not applaud or even condone.

Acquiescence in the New Deal has not so generally extended to its monetary policies. To these, economists, bankers and industrialists have been outspoken in their opposition. Also such important national organizations as the American Legion and the American Federation of Labor have officially taken a stand against inflation. But the country as a whole has been amazingly supine at the overthrow of its characteristic institutions.

III

IS the recovery program a success ? Is the reform program a success ? Who shall answer these inquiries ? To the latter question it is obviously too early to make any answer. In the nature of things the answer is never likely to be unanimous. The new society, if we achieve one, may please some people better than the old. But it is purely experimental and the guinea pigs may die of ennui or fear or malnutrition before the experiment is over. Predictions are always rash, and have been peculiarly so in the last five years, but there would seem to be no great risk involved in foretelling more opposition to the New Deal in the future than there has been in the past.

The defect in the recovery achievement thus far has been the failure to attract men into the production of durable goods, such as building materials, furniture, locomotives, ships, machinery and the like. The following table will tell the story.

The United States: Recovery and Reform

INDEX SECTOR OF EMPLOYMENT.

			September, 1932.	September, 1933.
Food products	..	..	102.1	100.1
Cotton goods	..	..	94	101.4
Boots and shoes	..	..	99.2	84.3
Woollen goods	..	..	97.4	102.8
Agricultural implements	..	..	109.2	34.9
Structural iron works	..	..	107.7	50.6
Railway cars	..	..	86.5	21.9
Cement	..	..	84.2	44
Bricks..	..	..	87.3	34.4

The reason for these disparities is fairly obvious. The philosophy of the reform program stimulates consumers' goods, but not producers'. For the producers' goods we are dependent on savings and capital investment made by capital which feels confident and secure and reasonable in its expectation of return or profit. And producers' goods—heavy industry—ordinarily account for a very substantial proportion of our total employment.

A most interesting document, the report of the American Federation of Labor for the year 1933, shows that 1,800,000 out of work at the end of 1932 have been absorbed into industry and 4,600,000 into temporary work under some government agency, Civil Works Administration, Public Works Administration or Civilian Conservation Corps. The significance of these figures is that these emergency government agencies are taking two or three men for every one who goes into private industry. This is called priming the pump, but it is a question whether with such costly priming the well will not have run dry by the time we finish priming. At the end of the emergency government jobs, will the men drift into jobs with private employers or will they be left, jobless and embittered, the prey of politicians?

Workers' income in our sixteen chief producing and distributing industries (continues the Labor Federation report) averaged \$20.53 a week in November, 1932, and \$20.56 in November, 1933. Mean-

The United States : Recovery and Reform

while, food prices are up 7 per cent. and prices of clothing and furnishings are higher by 21 per cent., so that workers' real buying power is considerably lower. Millions who got jobs during the year are better off, but those who had jobs at more than a minimum wage have lost ground.

. . . All these gains show progress, but we must not forget that in November (1933) 10,702,000 workers still had no industrial employment, that C.W.A. (Civil Works Administration) funds giving temporary work to 4,000,000 will be exhausted by February 15, that business is still 30 per cent. below normal, that the outlook is overshadowed by a danger which might destroy all progress made—inflation by fiat money.

And the report goes on to comment upon the fact that government initiative is superseding private initiative.

Already it has been decided to prolong the temporary employment given by the Civil Works Administration till May 1, and already there is a clamor for prolonging it still further. Hard cases make bad law, and hard times make bad economics. We are learning the truth of what our preceptors have taught us, that it is difficult to call a halt to inflation when it is once invoked. It takes a good skier to make a Christiania turn when descending an Alp.

If, as seems likely, the inconsistencies between the recovery program and the reform program become more conspicuous and more embarrassing as the months wear on, the President will have to decide whether to work with the industrialists, capitalists and bankers for recovery, and alienate the idealists and "liberals" who are pre-eminently interested in reform, or whether to risk all on the evangel of the new society, relying for success on old discontents and the fervor of the zealots for a new righteousness. The President is generally credited with being an adroit politician, but politicians fully as adroit as he have found it difficult to keep a footing on two galloping steeds which have no natural predilection for running in the same direction. The only thing certain is that we shall see what we shall see, and it will be interesting.

So much for the future. The plain facts are that with

The United States: Recovery and Reform

another month to run before the New Deal's first birthday, America is a nation altered almost beyond recognition. We have lost our monetary system, we have lost our individualist capitalism, we have abandoned the idea of freedom which lay about us at the birth of a nation "conceived in liberty," we have consented to the weakening of State and local government for the benefit of a central authoritarian State, we have done such violence to our eighteenth-century constitution that it seems doubtful how long we can maintain diplomatic relations with it, and we have taken a long step toward embracing a new and unfamiliar morality. Do we know what we have done? Do we like it, or are we just too bewildered to resist? Will there be a reaction? Do we mean anything now when we still sing to our "sweet land of liberty" and exhort God as the "author of liberty" to make our land be "bright with freedom's holy light," to "let freedom ring" "from every mountain side"? Have those conceptions lost their power? Does the right of property and contract, so carefully safeguarded by our constitution, really transgress more fundamental human rights? Is there any relationship between the end of *laissez faire* and the end we put just after the Armistice to *laissez boire*? One recalls that *laissez boire* didn't stay ended.

What is man and the son of man? Is he, as some writers aver, a highly socialized creature like the bee and the ant? Or is he, in the language of Spengler, a *Raubtier*, essentially a beast of prey? Or is he perhaps a bit of both, with disharmonious functions, forever to be kept in a precarious balance? Whatever he really is, we shall certainly not get anywhere in the long run by imagining that he is something else. It might be far better to muddle with society in the fine old Anglo-Saxon way than to plan it altogether wrong. Some of us at least question whether our national mentality is functioning a whit better today in the trough of the sea than it did five years ago on the crest of the wave, when admittedly it functioned deplorably.

The United States : 'Recovery and Reform

Business is definitely better, no doubt. Recovery has
ely set in. Our days are full of hope ; but the hour is
ical, even ominous. Can we escape that curse upon
ankind which compels it to live perpetually under the
minion of powerful illusions ?

United States of America.

February 1, 1934.

THE CHURCH IN THE THIRD REICH

I. THE HISTORICAL BACKGROUND

THE Reformation started in Germany. In it the dominating force was Martin Luther, the most powerful figure in modern church history, perhaps in the whole history of the Christian Church since the time of the Apostles. At that period Germany was a mere mosaic of independent States of various sizes, not even connected by a federal tie, and the rule was that the State took the religion of its lord.* The result was that most of the German churches conformed to the Confession of Augsburg, and are Lutheran to this day. Only a few, relatively speaking, accepted the Reformed or Calvinistic conception of the Reformation. The Reformed churches have always been strongest in the Rhineland near the Dutch frontier. In the course of the political evolution of Germany many of the small independent States were merged in larger ones. As a consequence, large States, such as Prussia and Baden, contain both Lutheran and Reformed churches, doctrinally strongly opposed to one another—at times indeed the conflict became alarming in its intensity. Such unity as there had been then ceased to exist among the Protestant churches, notwithstanding the fact that they had been State churches ever since the Reformation.

As the State had a great interest in the maintenance of unity among its Protestant churches, it tried to overcome their doctrinal and constitutional differences. The earliest attempt was in 1529, when Philip of Hessen summoned Luther and Zwingli to Marburg; but this effort to establish Protestant unity proved fruitless. The two great reformers separated stronger opponents than ever, especially

**Cujus regio ejus religio.*

The Church in the Third Reich

with regard to the doctrine of the Holy Sacrament. When, later on, after the early death of Zwingli in 1531, Calvin became the leader of the Reformed churches, the conflict was, if possible, more pronounced than ever, and it lasted for centuries. In the early nineteenth century, seeing that there was no hope of unity among the Protestant churches on spiritual issues, the King of Prussia and the Prince of Baden, who were autocrats in their own States as well as heads of their respective churches, brought about the union of the Lutheran and Reformed churches within their territories by force. All the churches accepted this union except a minority of the Lutherans in Prussia, who combined to form the Free Lutheran church of Prussia. The rising tide of liberalism helped to make this solution possible. As time went on, however, Prussia acquired new territories in which there were churches of the Reformed type, and these have maintained, at least to some extent, their separate identity until our own time.

This brief historical review will help to explain what follows. The situation to-day is that there are strong Lutheran churches, especially in Saxony, Württemberg, Bavaria and Mecklenburg; there are the so-called United churches in Prussia, Baden and central Germany; there are also Reformed churches scattered all over Germany, which still, however, look for leadership to the Rhineland church.

It is also necessary to remember a second historical aspect of the present position. The Protestant churches of Germany were State churches in the strict sense of the term; all their expenses were paid by the State, and the pastors were regarded as State officials. Moreover, contrary to what happened in Scandinavia, where whole nations, including the bishops, turned Protestant, no German Roman Catholic bishop seceded to the Protestant Church. It was in this way that the Princes became *summi episcopi* and, as such, exercised supreme authority over the Church, though in actual practice specially

The National Socialist Revolution

sanctioned authorities, consisting of both pastors and laymen, administered the Church in the name of their Prince-Bishop. The Presbyterian constitution was maintained in only a few parts of Germany.

The 1918 revolution immediately brought about a very important change. As the Princes no longer existed, some new authority had to be set up in their place. Some of the Protestant churches, particularly the Lutheran, restored the office of bishop. All the churches received full autonomy as constitutionally recognised public institutions. In view of the fact that in earlier times the State had secularised their properties, it still contributed very large amounts to their finances. At the same time, it was necessary for the churches to become largely self-supporting. The State therefore granted them the right of imposing their own taxes, both in individual parishes and in the churches as a whole.

In the German Empire there was no established church, notwithstanding the fact that the Imperial constitution laid down a number of binding general principles. There were only the different autonomous churches of the various States—Prussia, Saxony, Bavaria, Württemberg, etc. As is well known, these churches formed a German Evangelical Church Federation, presided over by an executive which discussed matters of common concern to all German Protestantism, especially relations with foreign churches and church œcumenical movements. This executive had, however, no right whatever to interfere with the autonomy of the individual churches of which the federation was composed.

II. THE NATIONAL SOCIALIST REVOLUTION

THEN came the revolution of 1933. By destroying the whole federal basis of the Reich, the National Socialists created an entirely new situation. The parliamentary democratic system was completely swept away; the

The Church in the Third Reich

formerly independent political life of the different States was merged into that of a closely unified Reich under a single all-powerful independent leader—for the leadership is of a personal character. The leader personified the central ideas of National Socialism with its totalitarian claim to deal with every aspect of the citizen's life, whether collective or personal, economic or intellectual; it does not indeed even stop short of the spiritual. The unity of the whole nation and of all its members, both in temporal and in spiritual matters, had to be realised in the National Socialist State of the Third Reich. No party, no association, no type of thought, no system of education was in future to be allowed an existence independent of National Socialism. All this meant that the Church had to meet a fundamentally new situation of extreme gravity and difficulty.

The Roman Catholic Church in Germany, as part of a powerful world-wide institution, dependent upon the Holy See, was in a far stronger position than the Protestant Church. Its system had never been nationalised, and the Government could not deal with it without going to Rome, where it had to treat with the Vatican as an independent foreign Power, well able to protect its vital interests in Germany. A Concordat was signed on July 20 last, though its application is giving rise to great difficulties, and the outcome is still uncertain.

The organisation of the Protestant Church, however, was national and closely connected with that of the German State. Moreover, Lutheran doctrine emphasises, even more than that of the Reformed churches, the intimate relations, as far as governmental forms are concerned, between Church and State. It calls upon churchmen to accept the full responsibilities of a citizen, and to submit to the leadership of the State. This extremely close—indeed too close—connection between the Protestant Church and the German State has proved a great danger. The Church has shown itself all too ready to bring its own life into harmony with the new National Socialist ideas,

The National Socialist Revolution

while the State on its side regards the Church as more or less part of itself.

It was, of course, essential that the Church should adapt its own organisation to the new structure of government in the Reich. From the very outset, there was a unanimous desire to strengthen the unity of the German Protestant Church by building up a strong central authority under the direction of a Reich bishop, and to bring the formerly independent churches in the various States under the control of this Reich Church. Lutherans as well as Reformed churches accepted the principle of the proposed change, though it was understood that each of the two great branches of Protestantism was to have full liberty to retain within the Reich Church its own traditional confessional faith.

The task of drawing up the new constitution for the Church was given to a triumvirate of Church leaders—Dr. Kapler, a Lutheran layman, President of the German Evangelical Church Federal Council; Bishop Marahrens, Lutheran Bishop of Hanover; and Pastor Hesse of Elberfeld, representing the Reformed churches. Ludwig Müller, an army chaplain and a personal friend of Hitler, acted as intermediary between the three Church leaders and the Chancellor. All four met in conference at Loccum in April.

There was, however, a group of pastors who wished to go a long way further, and to introduce the National Socialist ideal into the whole life of the Church. No mere adaptation of organisation would have satisfied them. Their aim was to apply the principle of Hitlerian leadership to the Church, and to identify Christian belief with National Socialist ideology. There was to be a complete union of church life and national life, and more than that, a merger of the National Socialist creed and the faith of the Church. This group was first and foremost National Socialist, and a complete *Gleichschaltung** of Protestantism both in form

* "Assimilation"—the term generally used to express the absorption of the different organisations and functions into the totalitarian State.

The Church in the Third Reich

and spirit was their objective. It was to be attained in three steps. In the first place, everyone suspected of being friendly to the former régime was to be eliminated and all authority in the united Church concentrated in the hands of men in full sympathy with the National Socialist system. In the second place, the same principle of leadership as had been realised by Hitler in the State was to be established in the Church, notwithstanding that such a principle in the Church was wholly incompatible with the spirit of the Gospel, and although this group could point to no one in whose person the necessary qualities for such a position were united. Lastly, they desired to eliminate from Christian teaching everything that was out of harmony with National Socialism, and on the other hand they wanted to introduce, even when they were antagonistic to Church teaching, such ideas as the racial conception of national unity, the old Teutonic hero worship, and the sacred character of the national ambitions.

They were fired with the belief that, at this historic moment in the evolution of their country, such a gospel would appeal to the whole nation, and that they could set up a truly national church in complete harmony with the national life, thus enabling the great national movement to accomplish its task of building up that life afresh. By combining National Socialism with Christianity the group no doubt hoped to complete the triumph of the Reformation of the sixteenth century even over Roman Catholicism.

Here were the beginnings of the future conflict. The centre of the new constitution was the office of Reich bishop. Who was to hold it? The committee of three proposed Dr. F. von Bodelschwingh, Superintendent of the Christian Social Institute at Bethel, near Bielefeld, a man with great spiritual gifts and high administrative ability. This nomination was accepted by an overwhelming majority at a special meeting of the representatives of the provincial churches on May 26.

There was, however, another candidate in the field—

The National Socialist Revolution

Ludwig Müller himself. He was the nominee of the German Christians, as the group of pastors just described called themselves. The German Christians were by no means all of one school of theological thought, and some were very much more radical in their Germanic fervour than others. But as their title makes plain they all laid very great stress on the German and racial character of their Christianity. As Pastor Peter* put it, in *People and Church*—"Born of German stock and baptised in the words of my mother tongue, I cannot just be simply a Christian. I can only be a German Christian." Others went further, in agreement with Herr Jäger, who said "When Jesus Christ entered world history, it was, in a last analysis, the fire of the Nordic breed that was revived."

Pastor Müller denounced the nomination of Dr. von Bodelschwingh. The heads of the 28 provincial churches, he said, had not listened to the call of the hour; "the storm detachments upon whom the State now rested must have the Gospel preached to them again in unadulterated words." The German Christians therefore refused to recognise the election. The conflict became very bitter. On June 24 a State Commissioner for the Prussian Evangelical Church was appointed, Herr Jäger, who in turn appointed sub-commissioners, and Dr. von Bodelschwingh retired from his office.

A few days later President von Hindenburg intervened. A new constitution was completed on July 11, and Hitler, in a letter to Hindenburg, announced that "the inner freedom of the Church, which I also have especially at heart, is placed beyond doubt by the withdrawal of the commissioner and the sub-commissioners." The unreality of the freedom, however, was made clear by what followed.

On July 23, there was a general Church election that was intended to settle the new Church problem. At that election the German Christians obtained the support of

* Invested as Bishop of the Saxon Province of Prussia, February 4, 1934.

The Church in the Third Reich

the entire National Socialist press, and of the party's political machinery. On the last night before the election Hitler himself gave a wireless address. The result was certainly not justified by the real position. The German Christians secured three-quarters of the votes, and they claim that their influence in all religious matters should be in proportion to their majority; but the foundations of the system they are building up are none the less rotten.

Such, in brief, was the series of events that led to the victory of the German Christians—a victory crowned by the nomination of Ludwig Müller as Reich bishop and Bishop of Prussia, for no other reason than that he had previously enjoyed Hitler's confidence.

III. THE OPPOSITION IN THE CHURCH

IT is time to turn to the other side of the picture. There were pastors and laymen in the Evangelical Church besides the German Christians, and the opposition of these was based on two main grounds. There was first the objection to the racial principles of the German Christians. There was also the objection to the use of force. Each objection is of vital importance.

The German Christians claimed that the Gospel must in future be preached as "the Gospel in the Third Reich" and that the Church must be the Church of the German people—i.e., of Christians of the Aryan race, all non-Aryan Christians being excluded from office and effective membership. The objection to this racial view of Christianity is best shown by the following (among other) reasons which Karl Barth gave in his famous pamphlet, "Theological Existence To-day," for rejecting their doctrines:—

(1) The Church believes in the Divine institution of the State as the guardian and administrator of public law and order. But she does not believe in any State, therefore, not even in the German one, and, therefore, not even in the form of the National Socialist State. The Church preaches the Gospel in all the kingdoms of this

The Opposition in the Church

would. She practices it also in the Third Reich, but not under it, not in its spirit.

(2) The fellowship of those belonging to the Church is not determined by blood, therefore not by race, but by the Holy Spirit and Baptism. If the German Evangelical Church excludes Jewish-Christians, or treats them as of a lower grade, she ceases to be a Christian Church.

With regard to the objection to coercion by the State, attention may be called to the message issued by the general superintendents and bishops of Old Prussia on June 26 protesting against the appointment of a State Commissioner for the Prussian Church two days earlier. This message, it is important to notice, made it clear that the bishops protesting were whole-hearted supporters of the Hitler regime in the political sphere:—

We are also seriously concerned that the nation and the Church should find each other. We, too, are determined to co-operate in the unification of our nation through the work of the Church. But in a Church these aims must never be pursued by means of political force. The Church must never be exposed to the pressure of political force. Otherwise the fearless preaching of the truth of the Gospel and the free discussion of the fundamental questions of our faith will be imperilled. In a Church which is too closely bound up with the State the deepest impulses of a faith are checked. History proves this to be a fact. Above all, the Gospel of the German Reformation must not, in a time of political turmoil, be subject to political falsification. This is the danger for our Church to-day.

A large body of pastors were at the very centre of the opposition, giving a resolute and courageous witness to the freedom and purity of the Gospel. They were first known as "The Gospel and Church" Group, and, later, for the most part, were organised as "The Pastors' Emergency League." A very brave and important step was taken by the League, then numbering 2,000 members, in September, in connection with the Prussian Church Synod, and with the National Church Synod at Wittenberg. The Prussian Synod, representing more than half the Protestants of Germany, adopted the Aryan paragraph. The Covenant signed by the 2,000 pastors was a strong and public

The Church in the Third Reich

protest against this action, and was followed at the end of the month by a remarkable declaration posted all over Wittenberg, signed by 22 pastors on behalf of the 2,000, in which the principal paragraphs were as follows:—

Lest the Church enter on its road in secret consciousness of guilt, we make the following declaration for the sake of Truth and Love:—

(1) The manner in which the new order was introduced and is being applied in the Church has caused grave concern to numberless earnest Christians. At decisively important synods the present majority has refused the right of thorough discussion and free speech to the representatives of the minority, even in questions which affect the innermost being of the Church and its mission. The life of the Church has for some months been subject to the violent pressure of a group within the Church. Brotherly love must not be denied by the rule of violence; the Church of Jesus Christ must not be transformed into an empire of this world.

(2) With the tacit approval of the new Church authorities, provincial synods have voted and put into force laws which are in conflict with Holy Writ and with the Church's faith. This is especially true of the "Aryan paragraph." We assert that the legislative authority of the German Church has been infringed by the introduction of such laws in the provincial synods; we summon the National Synod not to surrender its full powers to other institutions; we summon it to repeal these laws of the provincial synods, contrary as they are to the Church's faith. It must not be that the Gospel be limited or nullified by human laws.

(3) The Church's ministry is specially endangered in that pastors and church officials are being persecuted because they are not able to follow the group which at present rules in the Church. The ministry is subjected to such pressure from men that the servants of the Word are in danger of breaking the command "Man must obey God rather than men"; they are in danger of becoming servers of men. We summon the National Synod to assert the full freedom of the preaching of the Gospel and of its bearers in clear words. The preaching of the Church must not serve human ends.

In this grave hour, when we are forced to make this protest by the heavy trouble of our consciences, we promise solemnly before God to use all our strength that the good tidings may be preached pure and unmixed among us as the revelation of the living God in Christ.

The opposition of the pastors was led by Dr. Niemöller, a Berlin pastor of indubitable patriotism. The conflict, however, went generally in favour of the Reich bishop

The Opposition in the Church

until a constitutional meeting of German Christians in the Sport Palace in Berlin on November 13. Here demands so radical and so heretical were made, and apparently approved by influential German Christians, including some bishops, that moderate churchmen became seriously alarmed. Dr. Krause, as official leader of the Berlin branch of the German Christians, demanded the elimination of the Old Testament, of the Crucifix, and of "superstitious portions" of the New Testament, as well as the ruthless application of the Aryan paragraph within the Church. The Reich bishop was gravely disturbed and denounced Dr. Krause's speech, deploring the attack on the Bible. The conflict increased the membership of the Pastors' Emergency League, which rose rapidly to about 7,000. Dr. Krause was dismissed. The Reich bishop tried to form a moderate cabinet; and revoked the Aryan paragraph—a great concession. By the end of November, however, the Reich bishop was isolated. He was not a strong man, had little grasp of theological principles, and gave the impression of wavering. He lost the confidence of the German Christians by giving in to their opponents, and yet failed to secure that of the orthodox pastors and laymen. He was obliged to sacrifice his principal supporter, the German Christian Bishop Hossenfelder, who resigned all his offices. But in spite of this the South German bishops opposed him, and the attempts to form an ecclesiastical ministry (or cabinet) according to the constitution were a failure. The Reich bishop then moved further along the German Christian path; and there seems reason to believe that he gained the support of General Goering, head of the police of Prussia. On December 22 he signed an agreement with the leader of the Hitler Youth which led to the destruction of any independent youth movement in the Church, involving 700,000 members of the Evangelical Youth organisation. On January 4 he re-imposed the Aryan paragraph and prohibited all public opposition, on pain of immediate suspension.

The Church in the Third Reich

The strife continued unabated. In the middle of January it was confidently expected that Bishop Müller would be obliged to retire, that a new Reich bishop would be appointed and a church government of a mediating kind set up. On January 14 the South German bishops were stated to have expressed their entire lack of confidence in the Reich bishop. The deadlock remained till January 25. On that day Hitler received the Reich bishop together with representatives of both sides, but the hoped-for settlement was prevented by General Goering, who came in unannounced, bringing against Pastor Niemöller, who was present, charges of indiscreet conversation on the telephone, as reported by the secret police. The opposition failed to persuade Hitler, who made an eloquent appeal for unity.

The breakdown of the conference with Hitler was followed two days later by the sensational collapse of the South German bishops. The following is the official statement issued by authority of the Reich bishop :—

On Saturday, January 27, the Reich bishop invited all the leaders of the German Evangelical Church to a conference. As a sequel to this conference—which was long and was carried through with complete unanimity—the following declaration was given out by all the provincial leaders of the German Evangelical Church :—

Filled with the impressions of that great hour when they were assembled in the presence of the Reich Chancellor, the church leaders of the German Evangelical Church unanimously reaffirm their unconditional loyalty to the Third Reich and to its leader. They condemn most severely all acts of criticism against the State, the people or the movement which are capable of endangering the Third Reich. They particularly condemn the use of the foreign press to make the disagreement in the Church falsely appear to be a struggle against the State. All the Church leaders stand united behind the Reich bishop and intend to carry out his instructions and orders in the spirit that he desires ; to crush the Church political opposition to him ; and to establish the authority of the Reich bishop by all constitutional means.

It is said that the South German bishops received a very positive assurance as to the withdrawal of the Aryan paragraph, and possibly other concessions were made. But

The Office of Reich Bishop

It is beyond doubt that Hitler's appeal for unity in the Church, for the strengthening of authority, and for the combining of forces in the interests of the State, made a profound and probably decisive impression.

The bishops have surrendered*—but the opposition of the pastors continues. The extent and intensity of that opposition, time alone will show. Dr. Niemöller and 50 pastors were suspended on January 28, and since then other prominent leaders have been removed or deposed. Yet even though the Pastors' Emergency League in whole or in part may be dissolved, as a result of a systematic suppression, the opposition is not likely to cease. It is too firmly based on religious principles; and there are those among its members who are ready to show the spirit of the martyrs. The opposition, it must be repeated again with great emphasis, is spiritual in character, and makes no attack on the National Socialist regime as such. Indeed practically all the members of the League are staunch political supporters of Hitler. How far the members of the opposition will be able to remain a part of the Evangelical Church is still in doubt. How far they will be allowed to separate themselves to form a free Church, if so desiring, is also questionable. But the witness of the opposition pastors to spiritual freedom, at whatever cost, remains superb!

IV. THE OFFICE OF REICH BISHOP

GREAT indeed is the contrast between the attitude of the pastors and the system for which the Reich bishop stands.

In speaking of the Reich bishop we must not fail to realise his extraordinary position. The Pope has behind

* It should be explained that a majority of the bishops were German Christians who had been imposed upon their dioceses, often against the will of the pastors. But the bishops who now surrendered were those who had hitherto withstood the Reich bishop.

The Church in the Third Reich

him a whole long line of predecessors, their encyclicals, the Fathers of the Church, the general corpus of its traditions, and the Councils. Even when he speaks *ex cathedra* as the infallible teacher of the Church he is guided by her doctrine, by canonical law, and by his unity with the Roman hierarchy throughout the world. The heads of the other Churches, for instance the Anglican, have also received a sacred trust to hand on. The Reich bishop of the German Church, however, is in an entirely different position. He has come into existence as the result of a revolution that has completely swept away the constitutional function of the German Protestant Church, and that seems to have given him, in accordance with the National Socialist principle of leadership, the power to determine, according to his own insight, or lack of insight, its new constitutional foundations and to build up a fresh organisation upon them. He appoints and dismisses at his pleasure both the bishops and the ministry of the Reich Church. Together with his ministers, he has authority to make laws and to revoke them. He is now the dictator of the Church in spite of the fact that many of the bishops outside Prussia, and more than seven thousand pastors, had declared that they no longer had any confidence in him. The impetus of the National Socialist revolution and Hitler's confidence have carried him to this high position. As the National Synod has formally nominated him for life, no one possesses the legal power to remove him. His doctrine is, however, inevitably influenced by the enthusiasm of the National Socialists, which he regards as "faith." For him, even though he does not clearly say so, Hitler is the God-sent leader of the nation; the revolution and the new God-given foundations of national life have taken the place of the Old Testament.

A tremendous responsibility rests upon his shoulders. The political opportunities of State life are not, and can never be, the governing principle of the Christian Church. The acceptance of a purely secular principle of leadership

The Office of Reich Bishop

in Church life is proving a source of irremediable trouble. But that is nothing compared to the intrusion of National Socialism into the doctrinal and spiritual life of the Church. The idealism of the Third Reich is now linked with the Kingdom of Christ. The Aryan basis of national life is considered to be the sacred foundation of a spiritual community. In Germany the universal conception of Christianity is to-day overshadowed by a national conception. The essential difference between the life of the Church and a passing phase such as an existing form of national life is no longer recognised. The unity of the nation is regarded as the basic law of the Church, which implies that the Church must sacrifice her own ideals and throw her life in all its fullness into the great surging stream of National Socialism. The totalitarian claims of National Socialism are admitted, not only in the sphere of action, thinking and planning but even in the deepest convictions of the human heart.

INDIA : TOWARDS THE GOAL

THE chief event of the past three months in India has been the earthquake at the beginning of January, which has devastated north-western Bihar and Nepal. The latest accounts show the damage to have been even greater than was at first anticipated, and a high official in Bihar is reported by the *Statesman* as saying that crores of rupees will be needed if adequate reconstruction, as distinct from immediate relief, is to be achieved. India's response to this catastrophe has been prompt and generous, adversity, as usual, having proved the occasion for a slackening of other tensions. One of the most prominent relief workers in Bihar is a Congress leader only recently released from jail, and many political opponents of Government are co-operating heartily with district officers in the administration of relief. Pandit Nehru, it is true, has attacked the Government of Bihar and Orissa for alleged supineness in the first days, but his rather envenomed charges, effectively traversed by the *Statesman* and other papers, are quite unjustified. The local Government's enterprise in arranging an aeroplane survey on the day after the earthquake is only one of the details that go to show commendable earnestness and promptitude, particularly if it is remembered that its own headquarters had suffered severely and that communications of all kinds were broken.

The chief political events of the quarter have been the passing of the Reserve Bank Bill and the conclusion of the commercial negotiations with Japan. Both are of first-rate importance and the latter may be said to mark an epoch in India's progress to autonomy. A special session of the Assembly was held in November and December for

The Reserve Bank Bill

consideration of the Reserve Bank Bill. It is not unlikely that autumn sessions will become a regular feature of the Assembly year. So far they have been convened only for special purposes, but the burden of legislative and other work is increasing steadily and the old allotment of sessions is probably inadequate.

I. THE RESERVE BANK BILL

THE Reserve Bank Bill as passed by the Assembly in December professes to make only "temporary provision on the basis of the existing monetary system" and leaves "the monetary standard best suited to India" to be considered later. Sections 40 and 41 express this by setting out Rs. 6½d. and Rs. 5½d. as respectively the Bank's maximum purchase and minimum selling prices for sterling. Shares are allocated to five regional registers, to prevent undue concentration of influence, and a similar purpose lies behind the provision that no shareholder may exercise more than ten votes. Concern for the Bank's independence is further expressed in Section 4, which admits shareholding persons or companies not domiciled in India to full shareholders' rights only if their domicile is in a part of the Empire which does not discriminate against Indians, and then only for the period of their residence in India.

The political importance of the Reserve Bank legislation arises from the contents of paragraph 32 of the introduction to the White Paper. This declares the proposals relating to responsibility for the finances of the federation to have been based on the assumption that before the first federal Ministry came into being a reserve bank would have been set up and would be already successfully operating. It may be said that this declaration governed the course and the outcome of the Assembly's proceedings. Whatever the objections to the form suggested for the Bank, or to the

India : Towards the Goal

apparent restrictions placed on future legislatures regarding its amendment, it remained clear that His Majesty's Government held the prior existence of a functioning reserve bank to be an essential preliminary. Hence no party leader was prepared to take the responsibility of allowing the measure to be thrown out. Every effort might be, and was, made to secure as much change as possible, but the optimism regarding the final outcome that prevailed from the beginning in official quarters was justified in the event ; for though there were ups and downs and critical divisions, the final passage of the measure in a not unsatisfactory form was assured before the end of the session.

Conditions were thus very different from the hectic days of Sir Basil Blackett's Bills. Much the same arguments, however, reappeared, and the same passions, though at a lower temperature. The chief Opposition effort, as was to be expected, bore on the ratio question. An agitation directed definitely towards currency depreciation made itself prominent under the aegis of a body known as the Currency League. Its propaganda was plentiful and violent, but in the event may be said to have miscarried. A significant difference from the disputes of former years lay in the weakening of the almost magical merit that used to be attached to 1s. 4d. More than one prominent Indian emerged on this occasion to declare that while a case could be made out for devaluation, there existed no peculiar virtue in 1s. 4d., as against 1s. 6d. or any other figure. Indian commercial, as distinct from financial, interests seem more inclined to recognise the dangers of severing the sterling link, with its obvious and continuing advantages, merely for the sake of conjectural and at best temporary benefits to trade as a result of depreciation.

The ratio and connected questions in India have in the past suffered from the chronic suspicion that every step is designed in the interests of British commerce and the City of London. *Times Danaos*, in fact, has been the motto

The Reserve Bank Bill

throughout. The unfortunate but inevitable result of this approach was that it was almost impossible to secure any degree of detached consideration. But the recent discussions have produced some indications that Indian political opinion, however suspicious of City or British interests, has begun to suspect that there are forces in India also not altogether disinterested. On November 24 a pro-Congress Delhi paper attacked the policy of the Currency League in unmeasured terms, describing it as "one of those bodies which a small caucus of financial magnates brings into existence overnight to carry on propaganda in the name of the people for the furtherance of their own selfish ends." Such pronouncements, apart from their actual merits, are indications of an increasing sense of reality on the part of the more vocal elements in India.

The main success secured by the Opposition in the Assembly was the carrying by a small majority of an amendment directing the establishment of a branch of the Bank in London. The motive force behind this was the distrust of the City already mentioned. It was felt that if the Bank entrusted its London operations to the Bank of England its independence would be inevitably compromised.

Since the Bill provides for the maintenance of the existing sterling-rupee ratio, the main vote on the ratio question was taken on an ingeniously worded amendment to the effect that gold or sterling should be sold at the legal rate in force on the day before the ratio clause came into operation. Three prominent participators in the Bank Bill discussions in London in the summer, Sir Cowasji Jehangir, Dewan Bahadur Ramaswami Mudaliar and Mr. Mody, all spoke in support of the amendment, contending that it was in no way contrary to the letter and spirit of those discussions. This attitude brought forth outspoken condemnation from the European members of the House and was rejected by the Finance Member in a 90-minute speech. He emphasised the fact that the amendment was practically

India : Towards the Goal

an invitation to speculators. It was a dramatic moment when he revealed that an unscrupulous attempt had been made to cause fluctuations in the exchange by despatching to a news agency a forged letter, purporting to emanate from the Finance Department and bearing on the matters at issue. The release of this letter was prevented only in the nick of time. Had it appeared in the press any interested parties who had been forewarned would have scored heavily in speculation. This revelation almost certainly contributed towards the substantial majority against the amendment, but even without it the Government would probably have won ; the amendment was too ingenious and the invitation to speculators too apparent. The Council of State has yet to pass the Bill, but there seems little doubt that they will do so. It may be said, therefore, that one at least of the preliminary conditions for the reforms has been fulfilled. A review of the session leaves, on the whole, an encouraging impression, for this attitude has been met and overcome not by *force majeure* but by reason and patience, and even at the most acrid moments there was a feeling that the Assembly had retained touch with reality.

II. THE COTTON NEGOTIATIONS

THE agreement reached between the representatives of India and Japan concerning their trade and tariff relations links India's imports of Japanese piece-goods to Japan's imports of Indian raw cotton by means of a basic quota, the figures being respectively 325 million yards and one million bales, with provision for upward or downward variations. Re-exported goods will be deducted from the figures of imports. The quotas are classified into categories, to which percentages are allotted. The countries will accord each other most-favoured-nation treatment ; should any modification of either customs tariff affect

The Cotton Negotiations

adversely the trade interests of the other country, efforts will be made to find a remedy. The Government of India will retain the right to impose or vary customs rates so as to correct the effect of fluctuations in the exchange value of the yen, and Japan will exercise a corresponding right should the rupee fall below 732 yen. Subject to other provisions of the agreement, Indian duties on Japanese piece-goods are not to exceed 50 per cent. *ad valorem*, or 5½ annas per pound.

There might have been attached to these prolonged discussions the legend "hope deferred," for it took three and a half months before any agreement emerged, and at more than one stage a profound pessimism prevailed. It is agreed that the Japanese showed themselves skilful and persistent negotiators, but the Indian press and other commentators allowed themselves free condemnation of what was termed Japanese intransigence. Originally, in opposition to what from the first had been a main Indian contention, the Japanese refused to link their piece-goods exports to India with Japanese purchases of Indian cotton. When this was formally accepted in principle by the Japanese, arguments and discussions on quota details began. The announcement that the quota basis had been established was made on January 4.

The more extreme Indian newspapers condemned the agreement as too favourable to Japan. There entered into this attitude the invariable ingredient of opposition to anything done by the present Government in India. But allowing for this, it certainly seems to be the case that Japan has come out well and recognises it. The Indian attitude towards the Japanese at present may be said to be one of half resentful admiration for qualities summed up by a Punjab paper in the description, "prize bluffers." An element of bluff enters into all negotiations, and skill at poker and diplomacy have been said to go together. The Japanese have certainly made good use of this faculty. Part of the delay is attributed to the fluctuations of the

India : Towards the Goal

dollar, the chief Japanese bluff being put up really to gain time for a study of the dollar's vagaries and an estimate of its future. How far would the dollar go? Could its depreciation be used to screw better terms out of India?

Such problems no doubt exercised the minds of the Japanese delegation, but it is very doubtful if there was ever any prospect of their going away without completing an agreement, for the Japanese are realists and the Indian market is essential to Japan. A common Indian criticism of the negotiations is that the Government of India showed their hand too early and thus encouraged their more skilful opponents in their bidding. At one stage prominence was given to the denunciation by Osaka millowners of the negotiations and their threats to boycott Indian cotton. The Indian response was immediate and instructive and not lost on the Japanese. General Indian opinion was outspoken. A Lahore paper suggested that the Indian delegation should give the Japanese "a bit of their mind" and ask them either to concede reasonable Indian demands or "pack their way to Japan at an early date."

The quota system of national interchange has thus scored one more success, an interesting illustration of how far we have departed from the free trade conditions of half a century ago. It would seem as if tariffs led inevitably to quotas, and quotas to barter. More than one Indian newspaper has hinted at this sequence. Perhaps another general reflection is that the most-favoured-nation system does not accord well with quotas and has manifest drawbacks when claimed by a powerful competitor in one's own domain. This has been felt elsewhere than in India and found pointed expression in a Calcutta paper on December 21. The result of Japan's being given the most-favoured-nation treatment was declared to be that she was "allowed to kill our national industries." India can offer many fields of research to the economist, and possibly the best field of experiment to-day is the handling of commerce and tariffs and their effects on the life of a country.

The Cotton Negotiations

A complaint being voiced in the Assembly and press at the time of writing illustrates Indian sensitiveness on matters of status. Why, it is asked, should the formal completion of this agreement be reserved for London? Sir Joseph Bhore's explanation that India is not yet an international unit and his assurance that there will be no alteration of the terms have been visited by the joint condemnation that India could as well sign this agreement as the Versailles Treaty, which bears her name, and that if there are to be no changes made why insist on signature in the United Kingdom? "The fact is," declares the *Tribune*, "that India acquires an international status just when it suits Britain's purpose to assign that status to her." The same paper asks why the Government should not in any case "anticipate the future by a few months," an interesting sidelight on its expectations touching the advent of the reforms.

Along with the official Indo-Japanese negotiations unofficial discussions with representatives of Lancashire cotton interests were initiated. The latter made much better progress, and certain agreements were reached. These, of course, carry no valid force since they require confirmation by the Governments,* but the fact that Indian and Lancashire commercial interests have come together in discussions of this sort has been recognised as a considerable step forward. The chief points in the agreement between Sir William Clare Lees and Mr. Mody are that any advantages extended to British goods in Dominion or other markets shall be extended to Indian products, and that when the Government of India removes the general surcharge on imports imposed in 1931 Indian textile interests will not seek the imposition of further duties on United Kingdom imports. The agreement was vehemently denounced in Indian nationalist newspapers. The *Hindustan Times*, for

* On February 5 Sir Joseph Bhore introduced a Bill giving effect both to the Indo-Japanese agreement and to the understanding with Lancashire.
—EDITOR.

India : Towards the Goal

example, declares that Mr. Mody "has made a gift to the Lancashire delegation," receiving nothing in return, and exhorts the Bombay millowners to repudiate him. Much the same attitude found expression in other parts of the country, but it is not impossible that time will operate here in the same way as in the case of the Reserve Bank. When the general trend of economic intercourse is apparently from competition to arrangement, the desirability of investigating such possibilities between India and Lancashire can hardly be contested.

III. ARMY FINANCE AND OTHER PROBLEMS

ANOTHER topic arousing much interest, though not, like the Reserve Bank Bill or the Indo-Japanese agreement, the occasion for actual discussions or negotiations in India, was the report of the Defence Expenditure Tribunal. This suggested an allotment of the "overhead" costs of the army in India between Great Britain and India in proportion to their respective military establishments, together with a general contribution by Imperial to Indian revenues, which has since been assessed at £1½ million a year. It was further proposed that India should not contribute to the cost of the regular or supplementary reserve forces, and should continue to be paid a subsidy towards the cost of transporting troops by sea. The net result is a gain to India of about two crores of rupees.

Comment and condemnation have been high-pitched and at times almost divorced from reality. The subject has long vexed Indian political opinion, and there enters into Indian pronouncements on it the unprecise but powerful complex of status. There is a suspicion that Great Britain is using India as a convenience, not treating her as a partner and an equal, with the result that every detail of the award has been scrutinised for flaws, and any synoptic view is lacking. The *Tribune* dismisses the two crores adjudged to India as a

Army Finance and Other Problems

"pittance," while flowers of epithet from members of the Legislative Assembly include "insult" and "flesbite." The general argument starts from the declaration in the report itself that the British Army in India partakes of the nature of an imperial reserve, and that India affords the best training ground for British troops. Consequently, it is argued, all cost not purely relative to India should be borne on the British estimates; at the very most India should be debited with only the cost of Indian troops equal in number to the British troops maintained in India. The refusal to give the award retrospective effect is condemned as unjustifiable, and as indistinguishable from the repudiation of obligations at which British hands are so apt to be raised in pious horror. Finally suspicion finds a convenient point of attack in the failure to publish the exact text of the report or the full notes of the Indian members. It is peculiarly unfortunate that what is really an Empire problem likely to prove of the utmost importance in a possibly not very distant future should be regarded as on the level of a market-place bargain. To some extent this was inevitable. The grievance has existed too long not to have accumulated an overgrowth of opinions and prejudice difficult enough to penetrate at any time; and the composition of the long-delayed tribunal, interpreted as an indication that the authorities intended to keep in subordination the Indian interests vitally concerned, gave suspicion a good start.

For the moment the Government's acceptance of the award holds the field, but it would be inadvisable to consider the issue as closed, still less as happily settled. The indications are that the Indian governments of the future will return to the charge and press for the settlement of an Empire problem on an Empire basis.

The general political arena during the quarter has been remarkably quiet. In more than one quarter, feelers were put out for a summoning of the All-India Congress Committee, particularly from the right wing elements. The Government, however, made it plain that they would

India : Towards the Goal

consider any formal gathering of a body still committed to civil disobedience as an infraction of the law, an attitude that was condemned in more than one nationalist paper as at once tyrannical and foolish.

The latter criticism was based on the following reasoning. Only a formal resolution can alter a Congress policy formally adopted in the past. It is practically certain that were the Committee free to meet, a strong move would be made to renounce civil disobedience and embrace, if not actual co-operation, at least some less negative and uncompromising attitude. By destroying the possibility of any formal renunciation, the Government at the same moment denied the possibility of influence to the right wing element in the Congress, with the result that the Congress movement and Congressmen will remain chained to the eccentric evolutions of Mr. Gandhi and Pandit Nehru. Neither of these authorities, it may be noted, welcomed the suggestion to call the All-India Congress Committee. Reasons are freely attributed to both, not all of the most creditable kind. Since the prestige of both would be seriously affected by a formal renunciation of civil disobedience, it is to their interest to prevent such a declaration.

It is difficult to sum up in a phrase the present condition of the political world. On the surface there is practically nothing. Below there is considerable turmoil, but it is as yet sporadic and undirected. It was suggested in an earlier issue of *THE ROUND TABLE** that the advent of the White Paper was the ultimate governing force in Indian political movements and oscillations. The passage of six months has confirmed this impression, and a recent speech by Mr. Sastri has given it expression. In effect, what he said was : the White Paper is there, and the reforms, however much we may dislike the details, are on their way. What are we going to do ? What is our plan of campaign ?

These questions might be said to be agitating the whole Indian political world to-day, not only the Liberals whom

* See *THE ROUND TABLE*, No. 92, September 1933, p. 807.

Army, Finance and Other Problems

Mr. Sastri had primarily in mind. The *Tribune* and more than one other newspaper call for unity, at least in opposition, on the theory that if the whole of India unites in condemning the White Paper at least a breather will be gained during which some more positive common plan of campaign may be formed. Appeal has been made more than once to the success of the united Indian opposition to the Statutory Commission. This policy of uniting on a negative is, however, really a counsel of despair, and its exponents come near to acknowledging it as such. It is by no means in the British interest that this state of mind should continue. Still less is it in the interest of India, and the warning has appeared in more than one paper that such an attitude plays straight into the hands of Sir Samuel Hoare's die-hard opponents, who will say: if that is India's attitude, who will work the reforms?

The end of October saw the formation, in the two most advanced provinces of India, Bombay and Madras, of parties indicating resentment at Congress's purposeless drift. The Democratic Swaraj party in Bombay contains a strong Mahratta element, while the parallel formation in Madras is said to be backed by the editor* of the *Hindu* and other influential men. A few days later Mr. K. F. Nariman issued a statement protesting against the continuation of "Mahatmic hypnotism" and demanding a more practical outlook on affairs. It is unlikely that the coincidence of date and effort is fortuitous. Pandit Malaviya intimated that he had a plan up his sleeve, which he would release if the All-India Congress Committee were summoned. This is not the first time the Pandit has referred to some private panacea, and a good deal of scepticism greeted his latest deliverance. The *Pioneer*, for example, twitted him with "sentimental endeavours to achieve the impossible." Discussions in the Congress press on political matters have shown a tendency to acerbity and

* Mr. Rangaswami Iyengar, whose death was announced since these pages were written.—EDITOR.

India : Towards the Goal
personalities, which can probably be attributed to the nervousness or irritation always produced by uncertainty. They do not know where they are, they fear they may find themselves in great difficulties, and yet no practical policy is put before them. Both Mr. Gandhi and Pandit Nehru have come in for severe criticism in the pages of journals where once they inspired nothing but approbation. The Mahatma is referred to by a correspondent in a Bombay paper as a "quick change artist" from whom "self-knowledge has been cruelly withheld." Another publicist makes the charge that "with Mahatma Gandhi at the helm of our Congress affairs we are never sure of our collective will and decision being respected."

Political India might be said to be in a state of mingled bewilderment and anxiety in the face of the steady approach of reforms and new conditions, which it may dislike but to which it has so far no alternative to offer. It looks around for a leader and a lead, to trust and to follow ; so far its quest has been in vain, but it would probably have been better for Great Britain as well as for India had it succeeded.

There are many other points that might be dwelt on did space permit, for the political simmering leaves nothing unaffected. The depressed classes, the import of Mr. Gandhi's *harijan* activities to the wider interests of Congress and India, the Hindu Mahasabha's practical disowning of non-co-operation and its agitation against the communal decision and particularly the Poona Pact, the continuance of terrorism in Bengal and the consequent introduction of further legislation to strengthen the hands of Government there, the extensive remissions of land revenue granted in more than one province and the bearing of this on provincial revenues and land revenue policy—these are but a few of the issues that may call for extended treatment before long.

India.

January 1934.

GREAT BRITAIN : SOCIAL AND INDUSTRIAL REFORM

THE principle of "National" government seems to be finding some difficulty in holding its own against the impact of opposing forces. Since the Liberals who acknowledge the leadership of Sir Herbert Samuel finally moved into Opposition, the Government's parliamentary support, outside the ranks of the Ministry itself, has been almost entirely Conservative. Newspapers both of the Left and of the Right have attacked the present "merger"; indeed it was the Tory *Daily Mail* that published a slashing denunciation of Mr. MacDonald and other champions of "National" government by the Socialist Lord Snowden, who may yet prove to be as powerful an opponent of the Government at the next general election as he was a supporter at the last. The favourite objects of attack by the Opposition press have been not so much the Conservative leaders as the Prime Minister and Sir John Simon. On the Right, the "die-hards" clamour for release from compromise with radicalism, especially in connection with India. The Government's strength lies with the Conservatives of the Centre, who fear that the result of a split into parties would be either a return of Labour to office or the establishment of a purely Conservative Government, dominated, or at least held in check, by the extreme Right. Doubtless sensitive to these movements of opinion, Mr. MacDonald and his colleagues inaugurated, with the new year, a persistent campaign of public oratory in support of the National Government. The Prime Minister, however, has so far been accorded very mixed receptions by his audiences.

Great Britain : Social and Industrial Reform

In a by-election at Cambridge on February 8, the Conservative poll fell from 23,347 at the general election to 14,896, while the Labour poll rose from 8,552 to 12,170. Even more striking, however, is the fact that the Liberal candidate received only 2,023 votes, thus forfeiting his deposit, whereas in 1929, the last occasion on which a Liberal stood for the seat, he polled 8,124 votes.

The Government's strongest card is still undoubtedly the disunity of the Opposition, even within the Labour party itself. The Liberal party stands to profit from any reaction against protection; but in any case its return to independent power is out of the question. The Labour party has officially set its face sternly against co-operation with the Liberals, and is itself divided. The constant tendency towards a schism between the traditional unionist and the "intellectual" wings of the party was manifested in the suspicion and resentment aroused in the rank and file by Sir Stafford Cripps's plan* for the use of emergency methods in bringing the socialist State into being. His proposals have now been definitely turned down by the party executive. Events abroad have incited in the British working man a healthy distrust of dictatorships, which are wholly incompatible with the British ideals of democracy, freedom and the rule of law. In external affairs, the Opposition complaint is that the Government have failed to express clearly and decisively the British popular insistence upon real measures of disarmament. The new disarmament proposals are an answer to that challenge. At home, the Labour party offers socialism in the lump as the alternative to the general policy of letting capitalism heal itself—a feat which it certainly seems to be performing, however slowly—but the burden of its present appeal to the electors is an attack on the Government's social programme.

* See THE ROUND TABLE, No. 93, December 1933, p. 148.

L. HEWING

ONE of the favourite battlefields picked out by the Opposition is the problem of housing. "Cynical apathy" is among the phrases used by a well-known weekly journal about the Minister of Health, and even some supporters of the Government, like *The Times*, have expressed a certain uneasiness as to the adequacy of official policy. Briefly, the position is this. When the National Government took office, government assistance to housing took two main forms: the "Wheatley" Act of 1924, under which a subsidy* of £9 per annum for forty years was payable to local authorities and other responsible entrepreneurs upon each new workman's house conforming to certain specifications; and the "Greenwood" Act of 1930, under which an annual subsidy* of £2 5s. for each person rehoused was payable to local authorities for forty years in connection with slum clearance schemes. The Government, partly for reasons of economy, and partly in order to concentrate both financial resources and the energies of local authorities on what they considered the more urgent part of the problem, terminated the 1924 Act, while retaining the Greenwood rebuilding subsidy. They laid plans for an energetic slum clearance programme, to be carried through by local authorities, taking powers to compel activity should the authorities prove reluctant or procrastinatory; and they initiated a scheme for a government guarantee to advances by building societies for rehousing purposes.

The core of the case against the Government is the alleged inadequacy of the provision made for new houses to let at rents that working people can afford.† The

* These subsidies were varied to meet rural conditions or specially congested conditions which made tenement buildings necessary.

† The vital importance of keeping rents low is illustrated by the many medical reports that record an actual deterioration of health among people taken out of slums and accommodated in local authority houses—simply because they have to pay higher rents and so can afford less food.

Great Britain : Social and Industrial Reform

slum clearance campaign does nothing to meet this broad problem, for although under the 1930 Act local authorities must provide rehousing accommodation for people displaced on account of clearance schemes, any initial shortage of houses would remain unrelieved. The slums cannot be abolished, as a malignant growth may be cut out of the body, by replacing a determinate number of bad old houses with new and better ones ; they are a general disease, the product of poverty on the one hand, and on the other a chronic insufficiency of houses. Several attempts have been made to estimate the size of the actual housing shortage. Sir Raymond Unwin, past-president of the Royal Institute of British Architects, has estimated that, in addition to three-quarters of a million houses required to make up an existing deficiency in terms of overcrowding, there are half a million houses not fit to live in, and another half million which " fall below any decent standard of accommodation that any of us would set up." *The Times* puts the requirements at a million houses at least, to let at an inclusive rent of not more than 10s. a week.

Is this gap likely to be filled under existing conditions ? The five-year plans so far submitted by local authorities under slum clearance schemes contemplate the demolition and replacement of some 240,000 houses. This would represent a great advance on anything that has yet been done in this direction, but of course for every new house there would be an equivalent destruction of former housing accommodation. There will be a " carry-over " of 84,000 houses to be built under the expiring Wheatley Act. The remainder of the contribution of local authorities is likely to be very small—in the year ended September last they built only 1,236 houses without subsidy. That leaves a tremendous task for unassisted private enterprise—not only to make good practically all of the present shortage of a million or more houses, but also to take care of the normal expansion of the population, and to meet the inevitable process of deterioration in existing houses. Some-

thing may be expected from the efforts of building societies under the terms of the 1933 Act, but moderate opinion does not expect much from this possibility. Still less sanguine are the hopes that unsubsidised private building will be adequate for the huge task that has been outlined. In the six months to September last, it was responsible for no more than 14,500 houses to let, and in all for only 29,000 of a type (according to the Minister) appropriate for the lower-paid manual workers. The Bishop of Winchester, appealing in the House of Lords for a more vigorous housing policy, aptly applied to the present situation the Red Queen's explanation to Alice: "It takes all the running you can do to keep in the same place. If you want to get somewhere else, you must run at least twice as fast as that."

Beside what may be called the technical aspect of the housing problem, there are certain general considerations that are even more forcible. Overcrowding and evil housing conditions are vile blots on our social system, fostering vice, disease and the despair that breeds revolution. Over against the work of eradicating them, as yet unaccomplished, stand two and a half million unemployed men and women. The paradox of poverty in the midst of plenty was never so grim as this. Trade is improving, but it is still thin and sickly by reason of the diminished purchasing power that the army of unemployed betoken. Public works of the ordinary kind have been found too costly as a means of relieving unemployment, but in the case of housing some financial return is assured, while the social value is obvious. Surely, it is said, this is a splendid opportunity at once to solve a social problem and to inject the wanted purchasing power into a flaccid economic system.

The counter-proposals of the critics are varied. The Labour case includes, of course, the restoration of the Wheatley subsidy. While the subsidy undoubtedly stimulated housing during a period of grave scarcity and high prices, there are a number of objections to it now. It is

Great Britain : Social and Industrial Reform

expensive. The present capital value, at $3\frac{1}{2}$ per cent., of £9 a year for forty years is £192, which is roughly two-thirds of the total cost of building non-parlour houses of the required type to-day. The steady fall in building costs has clearly rendered the amount of the subsidy excessive. That consideration leads on to the second great objection to a general subsidy, namely, that it is paid not only to the "marginal" builder but also to the local authority or private builder who would have put up the house without the subsidy, or with a reduced subsidy. Thirdly, there is the lasting objection that a subsidy penalises and discourages private enterprise which, for one reason or another, is not in a position to qualify for it.

For these and other reasons, including the popularity of "planning" as a primary dogma of political economy, the idea of a national housing organisation has been gaining ground. Sir Raymond Unwin and others put before the Moyne Committee* a proposal for such a national board, operating through independent public utility societies. The financial basis would be a government guarantee of the principal and most of the interest on a housing loan. The Committee, not being convinced that the proposal would involve no public charge, regarded themselves as precluded by their terms of reference from recommending its adoption. However, they thought it desirable to indicate why, on the information before them, they would have come to a similar conclusion even without that limitation.† First, private enterprise would be exposed to a new form of subsidised competition and would be effec-

* For a summary of the Moyne Committee's report see *THE ROUND TABLE*, No. 92, September 1933, p. 860. The terms of reference of the Committee barred any recommendations for promoting the supply of working-class houses that would involve a public charge; and indeed the Committee explicitly sought to adjust their proposals to the Government's policy, which was "to rely in the main on competitive private enterprise to provide a new supply of accommodation for the working classes."

† Two Liberal members of the Committee—on which the Labour Opposition was not represented—appended minutes of dissent from the passages dealing with a national housing authority.

tively prevented from entering the field of working-class housing. They could therefore recommend the proposal only if the time had come when the provision of working-class houses must become finally and exclusively the function of public authorities, and they refused thus to assume that the Government's policy was a failure. Moreover, even if private enterprise should fail, the Committee were not satisfied that the appropriate remedy was not to be found in the provision of unsubsidised houses by local authorities. As between administration of housing service by local authorities, and its administration by a new central and local public utility organisation responsible to Parliament on major issues of policy, an important question of principle was clearly raised. The Committee's opinion was that no sufficiently strong case had been made to them for the creation at this juncture of such a new organisation. However, they incorporated the principle of the suggestions made by Sir Raymond Unwin in their proposals regarding reconditioning, which, they thought, would afford an opportunity of increasing the potentialities of the public utility society, operating within a limited field and properly co-ordinated with existing agencies.

This rebuff has not daunted the advocates of a national housing authority. Their case, in brief, is that a national scandal demands national responsibility and a national effort; that private enterprise demonstrably cannot provide the cheapest workmen's dwellings on the scale required; that local authorities are usually slow and often incompetent; that the economies of mass purchase could be effected and experience could be pooled; and that the lowest possible rate of interest—obviously a critical item in housing finance—could be obtained. In connection with the last point, some exponents of the scheme call for a national appeal on a semi-charitable basis, in order to raise money at a rate of interest well below the accepted economic level, say 2 per cent. The controversy goes on, nor will it end until—by some means or other—the terrible

Great Britain : Social and Industrial Reform
evil of bad housing conditions is eradicated from our social life. The sense of public responsibility is growing deeper, and the Government will obviously be courting danger if they pay no heed to the demand for a more heroic policy.

II. UNEMPLOYMENT INSURANCE

THE continuance of large-scale unemployment gives the Opposition another target for their attacks on the Government. On December 5, the Unemployment Insurance Bill* passed its second reading in the House of Commons by 435 votes to 81, but not before it had been subjected to criticism from a number of different quarters. The list of complaints against the measure that was given in the last issue of *THE ROUND TABLE* has since been considerably lengthened. Mr. Greenwood mentioned some when he moved the following amendment on behalf of the Labour Opposition :—

That this House declines to assent to the second reading of an Unemployment Bill which fails to recognise that all the victims of the unemployment which is involved in the modern system of industrial capitalism are entitled to equal and honourable treatment and maintenance from national funds so as to preserve intact their value to and status in the community.

Mr. Greenwood alleged that the allowance for out-of-work juveniles was miserably inadequate; that nothing satisfactory was being done for agricultural labourers and domestic servants, while "the black-coated worker was to be allowed to continue to rot in suburbia with only the poor law before him if he fell on bad times"; that the Bill attempted to fasten permanently on the insurance system rates of benefit imposed two years ago; that, so far from freeing the able-bodied unemployed from the stigma of the poor law, it centralised and intensified the

* For a summary of the Bill, see *THE ROUND TABLE*, No. 93, December 1933, p. 126.

Unemployment Insurance.
near law principle; and that the local authorities, who ought not to have to pay a penny of the cost of relief to the able-bodied, were being treated unfairly.

Other criticisms that have been made on both sides of the House include a protest against saddling the fund with debt incurred, so it is claimed, largely on account of relief payments which ought not to be charged to the finances of insurance. Mr. Chamberlain retorted that as much as £76,000,000, out of a total debt of £115,000,000, was incurred in the two years following April, 1930, when the Exchequer had already assumed responsibility for all payments to the unemployed who could not prove their right to insurance benefit proper. The Chancellor said that he could not conceive a worse way of starting a new fund on a self-supporting basis than to suggest that it did not matter what debts the fund ran up because in the end the State would bear them. With regard to the local authorities, who claimed to be relieved of all charge in connection with the relief of the able-bodied, and who protested against contributing to a service in whose administration they were to have no part, the Chancellor urged that they had been very favourably treated in the Bill. Of their present expenses in that connection, 40 per cent. were to be taken over by the Exchequer, without any readjustment of their block grants, with the result that, in sum, the Exchequer would now pay 95 per cent. and the local authorities only 5 per cent. of the cost of the relief of the able-bodied unemployed, outside insurance. However, in response to urgent pleas that the cost of unemployment relief would still fall with inequitable severity on the distressed areas, the Chancellor later announced a concession, whereby the present special grant to necessitous areas would be deducted from the cost of local unemployment relief before reckoning the 60 per cent. payable by local authorities to the Exchequer. This represents an allowance of about £300,000 a year to those areas.

With regard to the provisions for unemployed juveniles,

Great Britain : Social and Industrial Reform

the Minister of Labour declared that the Government were wholly opposed to what might be called "doles for children"; they thought it fair, however, that the parents of unemployed lads or girls, if themselves unemployed and insured, should receive a special benefit. The real object of those provisions was not financial at all; it was to make sure of getting hold of the children so as to give them industrial training while they could not find work. The Government gave an earnest of their determination in this field by agreeing in Committee to take powers to compel reluctant local authorities to provide sufficient training centres.

More than one Government spokesman strenuously denied the accusation that the Bill perpetuated the present scale of unemployment benefit. On the contrary, within the limits of their instructions to maintain the solvency of the fund, the Unemployment Insurance Statutory Committee would have complete liberty to recommend to Parliament what changes they pleased. If there were a surplus, they could, if they wished, dispose of it by increasing benefits, or otherwise, for the advantage of the insured population. In this connection, the Opposition seemed not to make quite as strong a point as they might of the way in which the Government seek to dispose of the present prospective surplus, amounting to some £8,500,000 (on the basis of two and a half million unemployed, which is the figure used in all official calculations for the purpose of the Bill). The proposal is to extend the period of insurance benefit beyond the present maximum of 26 weeks, for those with a good record of contributions. This enlargement of the scope of insurance relieves the Exchequer of £6,250,000, but adds £8,350,000 to the charges on the fund. The margin of £2,100,000 represents the difference between insurance benefit and unemployment assistance for the 167,000 persons who at any one date would, on the average, be thus brought within the field of insurance. To them, at least, that is a sub-

Unemployment Insurance

statutory monetary concession, and in addition they will no longer be subject to the means test, but the critics point out that the Treasury gains £6,250,000 at the price of abolishing all immediate prospects of restoring the cuts in unemployment benefit, which were part of the admittedly temporary economy measures of 1931. The question has a disconcerting reverse aspect. If the expenditure of the fund were to start exceeding its income, would it not be open to the Statutory Committee to recommend the opposite process of transferring classes of unemployed from insurance to relief? The Government could have no defence in principle.

This illustrates one of the inherent difficulties of the dual system of aiding the unemployed. The only way in which it can be completely avoided is to adopt the Labour policy of equal maintenance for all persons unemployed against their will, whatever their record of work or period of unemployment. The conception embodied in the present Bill is that the insurance scheme must deserve its name, by balancing income and outgo, while beyond its confines the unemployed worker must be granted State maintenance according to his family needs. That conception, however, is not really scientific, though it provides a valuable working rule; in the absence of a contract between the parties, general principles of insurance provide no answer to the question whether a man who has had such-and-such a record of contributions, and such-and-such a spell of unemployment, ought to be regarded as still insured or not. Nor is the distinction drawn by Mr. R. S. Hudson, the Parliamentary Secretary of the Ministry of Labour, between long-term and short-term unemployment any more decisive; indeed, in extending the maximum period of benefit from 26 to 52 weeks the Government themselves are undoubtedly bringing in the long-term unemployed. Their right to decide the issue is strongly founded on the fact that the Exchequer contributes some £20,000,000 a year to the insurance fund; but that does not alter the conclusion that the point at

Great Britain : Social and Industrial Reform

which the unemployed cease to be insured, and therefore can no longer claim benefit as of right is, in the last resort, an arbitrary one.

That argument is one of the handiest weapons available to the Labour Opposition in their attack on the means test, which has been applicable since 1931 to all those seeking unemployment assistance outside the insurance scheme. The Minister of Labour was at some pains to defend the principle of the test in moving the second reading of the new Bill. The proposal, he said, that every unemployed man should receive out of the pockets of his fellow citizens a fixed payment as of right, whether he needed it or not, would involve the closest control by the State over the terms and conditions of industrial employment. The workers themselves would never agree to the regimentation required. It was right that a man should turn to his family for help in need before he called upon the community. A service based on need, said Mr. Hudson, had the convincing advantage that it at least attempted to have some serious regard to the principle of equality. It did not add equal benefits to unequal resources, but sought to apportion the assistance available in such a way that the greater measure of help reached those whose need was most. A Liberal critic complained that the test of household means worked unjustly, promoting a break-up of homes, and that either the individual or the family would be a preferable unit. The Labour party took the plunge and made their case a complete negation. One of their spokesmen said that if they became the next Government they would remove the means test entirely and absolutely. The assumption on which the Government were proceeding, said Mr. Aneurin Bevan, was that unemployment was primarily the responsibility of the individual citizen, whereas the Labour party took the view that unemployment was a social act. The longer a man had been idle, the heavier the crime that society had committed against him.

Unemployment Insurance

The Labour campaign for higher benefits to the unemployed, whether insured or not, has probably been helped by the publication of the report of a special committee of the British Medical Association, estimating the minimum weekly expenditure on foodstuffs that must be incurred if health and working capacity are to be maintained. The figure for a man, wife and three children was 20s. 0½d. If this amount is adjusted in accordance with subsequent changes in the cost of living, and supplemented by an allowance for rent, clothing, fuel and light, based on the Merseyside Social Survey, then the total becomes 37s. 3d. per week. This compares with unemployment benefit of 29s. 3d. on the present scale and a maximum of 27s. payable by the public assistance authority of a typical provincial city. It is clear, wrote a commentator in *The Manchester Guardian*, that unemployment assistance cannot at one and the same time be adequate for the needs of its recipients and be less than insurance benefit. Either the assistance must remain insufficient or the benefit must be raised.

The paradox would find at least a partial solution in an increase of the rates of dependents' allowances, since the discrepancy between actual benefit payable and estimated minimum needs is comparatively small for a childless man, whether married or not, and it increases progressively with the number of children. Support was forthcoming from members of all parties for an amendment to the Bill designed to raise the benefit for a dependent child from 2s. to 3s. a week; but the Minister was adamant, pleading that Governments of different complexions had always regarded the lower figure as proper in the past, when the cost of living was actually higher. The Government, indeed, are faced with a difficulty of principle. The very existence of dependents' benefit is a tacit admission that even the insurance system partakes of the nature of State maintenance; for on no other basis could an insured person have an extra claim simply because he fathered more

Great Britain: Social and Industrial Reform

children. To increase dependents' benefits would be to emphasise this aspect of the system and to blur the distinction—which is the key to the Government's policy—between insurance and relief. Their general attitude in Committee, however, has been one of sympathy towards amendments genuinely designed to improve the Bill and to remove grievances. For instance, in order to allay suspicions that they were reviving the old "genuinely seeking work" clause, they agreed that an applicant for benefit should be required to show, not that he was "unable to obtain suitable employment," but only that he had not neglected to avail himself of an opportunity of obtaining suitable employment, the onus of proof being on the officer of the employment exchange.

The Government cannot fail to realise that the problem of unemployment insurance is one of vital and daily importance to a very large part of the population. To-day the registered unemployed number about two and a half millions; but it is not they and their families alone who are affected by the terms of unemployment insurance and relief. Every wage-earner in the country runs some risk of falling out of work. Unemployment is the bugbear of the working life of twelve and a half million men and women in the insurable trades alone. In the seven years ended 1930 a measure of unemployment was experienced by nearly two-thirds of the insured population, excluding new entrants to industry. In 1932 alone, a bad year, five and a half million insured persons were out of work at some time or other, and 40 per cent. of them reached the point at which their insurance rights expired. Not a remnant of down-and-outs, but the whole working population of the kingdom, with their dependents, are intimately concerned with the provisions of the Unemployment Insurance Bill.

III. INDUSTRIAL REORGANISATION

THE steady fall in registered unemployment met with a check in January. The rise in the total, though largely seasonal, was a little sharper than had been looked for, and the slight setback in the metal trades, in iron and steel and engineering, and in the textile trades suggests that some slackening in export activity is to be expected. The pace of our advance towards recovery is likely to slow down, for in the last few months the external conditions have not been too encouraging, and the American uncertainty still dominates world trade. The speeches of the bank chairmen in January were fairly optimistic, but most of them were concerned to emphasise the limits that are set to trade revival by present international conditions.

The political aspects of industry have again been well to the front. The case of iron and steel illustrates the extraordinary difficulty of securing any large concerted measure of internal reorganisation in British industry. Reorganisation schemes have been under discussion for half a dozen years. When, in 1932, the Import Duties Advisory Committee, after some hesitation, gave the industry tariff protection, it was on condition that comprehensive reorganisation should be undertaken. Twelve months ago the industry presented to the Government a scheme (or rather a scheme for creating the machinery of a scheme), which the Chancellor of the Exchequer welcomed as "only the first stage." But the scheme failed to secure the support of many manufacturers, and had to be revised. The Import Duties Advisory Committee has pointedly reminded the industry that the duties expire next October, and has urged the immediate acceptance of the amended scheme in order that a renewal of the duties may be recommended. The scheme has not, however, secured united backing. It was publicly attacked, on January 30, by Sir William Firth, the chairman of the London Iron and

Great Britain : Social and Industrial Reform

Steel Exchange, as "being framed on lines that will make co-operation palatable to all, by making it as comfortable and as profitable as possible," as securing profits in the home trade but doing nothing to reduce costs of production, and as being dependent on voluntary price agreements which, if fixed on the basis of the less efficient plants, would not hasten the excision of redundancy. Sir William Firth could see no remedy but for the Government to step in and compel concentration of production. The defenders of the scheme retorted by demanding protection until the industry works out its own salvation, and by urging that voluntary co-operation will in time secure sufficiently good results. This remains to be seen. In the interests of the industry itself the Government should be reluctant to give up their weapon of a conditional tariff so long as doubts exist whether a scheme that is primarily designed for price-fixing and output regulation by quota will lead to the rapid elimination of obsolete plant.

The experience of the coal industry in the same field is not encouraging. The Government has now brought in a short Bill to amend the schemes for the regulation of output and prices under the Act of 1930. Although they admit the necessity of amendment, the owners have been unable to reach voluntary agreement on its form. Nor is the industry any more disposed than it was towards reorganisation. In December the Coal Mines Reorganisation Commission issued an almost despairing account of its struggles to persuade the coalowners to co-operate in promoting amalgamations and in concentrating production by the closing of pits.

The picture now presented by the greater part of the coal mining industry (wrote the Commission) is one of haphazard development of each coalfield by a large number of unco-ordinated units, brought into existence on no rational plan, nearly all working below capacity, competing suicidally, whether in capital expenditure or in prices, or both, for a market that cannot absorb the product of all. If in a coalfield which is being worked like this an authority were created

Industrial Reorganisation

capable of exercising control over each in the interests of all, it is inconceivable that no room would be found for lowering the costs of production by getting rid of the waste, duplication and misplaced effort that are the inevitable consequence of the outlook of each being bounded by the horizon of his own concern.

The Mining Association, however, will be satisfied with nothing less than the abolition of the Commission. The West Yorkshire owners have failed to give full support to their district scheme for "partial amalgamation," under which a group of operating units, otherwise independent would form a central authority to co-ordinate their selling policy, to administer a fund (raised by levy) for closing superfluous pits, and to exercise general control over the development of the area in the common interest. The Commission has taken up the West Yorkshire principle as being the next line of advance, and is moving for its compulsory application there and in several other areas. But the process will be long, and the legal obstacles numerous. It may be noted that the Commission has made a strong point of the need for dealing with royalties, either by nationalisation or by some less sweeping method, as a condition of thorough reorganisation.

In the cotton industry discussions on reorganisation have become entangled with other issues. Cotton spinning employers have formed and, still more remarkable, have maintained for two months agreements to prevent price cutting. If these break down the movement for statutory intervention to enforce majority decisions will become very strong. The need for some common authority to deal with redundancy is now generally admitted. On the manufacturing side, employers are more preoccupied with problems of the enforcement of wage standards against an under-cutting minority. In January employers and weavers jointly approached the Government with a view to the statutory enforcement of agreements, and a Cabinet statement of policy is awaited.

These domestic questions in the cotton industry

Great Britain : Social and Industrial Reform

however, have paled beside the commercial politics of Japanese competition. Every week has seen an outbreak, either in the House of Commons or in public meetings in Lancashire, against the Government for its supposed indifference. The President of the Board of Trade, Mr. Runciman, went down to Manchester for two days to interview all the cotton interests and to try to relieve their fears. The Government has been consistent: it adheres to a policy of seeking to temper the fierceness of the competitive struggle by marketing agreements based on a voluntary control of exports; it will only employ severe hostile measures against Japan in Empire markets as a last resort. Commercial bargains, however, are not easily made. It was not until early in January, after more than three months of negotiation, that the terms of a new commercial treaty were arranged between India and Japan. The direct negotiations between Lancashire and Japan, which, it was hoped, would have opened last September, did not begin until February 14. The delays may well try the patience of merchants and producers driven almost to desperation by their unequal combat with Japan's depreciated currency and reckless sales methods. But what else can be done? Sound advice was given by Sir Harry McGowan, the chairman of Imperial Chemical Industries, in a speech on January 27, on his return from Japan. He urged strongly that policies of mere exclusion would not succeed. "Protection is no substitute for efficiency"; British and Japanese exporters must co-operate to share export markets, but British industry must not forget that without the backing of an ever improving productive and selling efficiency there could be no lasting solution.

In the field of industrial relations the calm of 1933—when the number of working days lost through strikes was the lowest on record—has continued. Movements for increased wages are, however, stirring in several industries, especially among the sufferers from the "cuts" of 1931. The railway companies and unions have still been unable to

Industrial Reorganisation

agree on new conciliation machinery. In the wool-textile industry, after three years of chaos, there is promise of a restoration of collective bargaining. In ship-building there is a deadlock over the introduction of a new type of labour for electric welding. In coal-mining the miners have failed once again to persuade the Government to compel the owners to adopt national conciliation machinery, but there is no immediate prospect of a breach of the industry's peace.

Although external trade has notoriously failed to keep step with internal industrial recovery, the figures for 1933 were by no means discouraging. Compared with the previous year, imports of merchandise fell by £25·8 million to £675·8 million, and re-exports by £1·9 million to £49·1 million; but exports of British products rose by £2·4 million to £367·4 million. This increase in exports, which was, indeed, greater in volume than in value owing to the fall of prices, was all the more remarkable in view of the continued high level of tariffs and other obstructions throughout the world, and of the prevailing exchange uncertainty. The abandonment of the gold standard by the United States in March was reflected in an increase of our imports from that country, but her industrial recovery and the expectation of a rise in American prices together produced a simultaneous increase in her purchases from us.

Considerable anxiety, however, has been caused by the more recent American policy of forcing down the gold value of the dollar and later of establishing the gold bullion standard at an exchange rate well below that indicated by comparative price levels. Traders fear enhanced American competition as well as an additional barrier to American markets. It is true that at the start of the new system the pound has followed the dollar rather than the franc and other "gold-currencies"; but the forces that have produced this effect—notably the rush to buy francs in order to withdraw gold from the Bank of France for sale to America—are largely evanescent, and in the long run there can be no evading the commercial con-

Great Britain : Social and Industrial Reform

sequences of the under-valued dollar. Yet there are several hopeful signs in the financial sky. The N.R.A. codes and the Administration's spending policy are expected to cause before long a substantial rise of American prices. Industrial recovery in the United States, such as seems to be again under way, means a rising market especially for raw materials, a market in which we share both directly and indirectly through our overseas interests. Finally, although all-round stabilisation cannot be contemplated until relative price systems are brought into closer equilibrium, the re-attachment of the dollar to gold is probably a necessary, though an oblique, step towards that goal.

THE IRISH FREE STATE— *QUO VADIS?*

I. DOMINION OR REPUBLIC?

OUR present and future relations with Great Britain dominate, and are likely to continue to dominate, the political situation in the Free State. And as the discussion and development of this great central problem proceed, the line of demarcation becomes clearer between those Irishmen who live solely in the past, whose supreme motive is hatred of England, and those who live in the present, whose real inspiration is love of Ireland.

General O'Duffy, the leader of the United Ireland party, defined his attitude towards this important question from a rather material standpoint at Kilkenny on October 22. He stated that his view of the British Commonwealth was that it was good business for us to accept full partnership in it. About the terms of that partnership we had, he said, as much right to say what they should be as anyone else. Our permanent membership of the British Commonwealth, and the stable settlement of our political relations with Great Britain, in his opinion, depended entirely upon whether or not the partition of Ireland was going to endure. They were going to work for the reunion of all Ireland, because they were convinced that only by the reunion of North and South could the permanent prosperity and peace of Ireland be attained. The detailed statement of policy issued by his party on November 11 unequivocally accepts "the voluntary reunion of all Ireland in a single independent State as a member, without any abatement of Irish sovereignty, of the British Commonwealth in free and equal partnership for mutual benefit with Great

The Irish Free State—*Quo Vadis?*

Britain, Canada, South Africa, Australia, and New Zealand." The party proposes to re-open the partition question with Great Britain and Northern Ireland, as the greatest obstacle to the full acceptance by the Irish people of the Commonwealth partnership. It aims at an advantageous settlement, by direct negotiation, of the financial dispute with Great Britain, and a trade treaty which will secure the most favourable terms for Irish goods in the British market. Pending such a settlement, the new party demands the complete remission of land annuities and rates on agricultural land, and a permanent reduction of the original annuities by at least 50 per cent. Other proposals involve the establishment of agricultural and industrial corporations with statutory powers, and the absorption of the able-bodied unemployed in a reconstruction corps for carrying out public works on a national scale. The statement announces the unconditional hostility of the party to communism; it proposes to abolish the proportional representation system of voting; and it contains the usual vague and rather grandiose declaration of ideal aims common to all such documents in Ireland. In this case, these aims are "the abolition of class consciousness and of narrow and intolerant conceptions of patriotism, and the creation of a national spirit based on cordial and constructive co-operation between all sections of the community."

Mr. de Valera's paper, *The Irish Press*, asserts, with some truth, that the economic policy of the new party is stolen from Fianna Fail, and that the remainder consists of scraps garnered from foreign sources. The proposal to abolish proportional representation, a distinctly retrograde step to which Fianna Fail objects, and the suggestion that "disciplined service" is to be inculcated through the Blue Shirt organisation, would seem to suggest that the new movement intends to take a fascist direction; but the party newspaper, *United Ireland*, claims that their scheme of national organisation "will not be of a socialistic or bureaucratic character, but democratic, and will grow

Democracy or Republic?

directly out of the various economic activities of the community."

The Ard Fheis, or annual convention of the Fianna Fail party, which was held in Dublin on November 8 and 9, enabled Mr. de Valera to state once more his attitude towards England, and to deal with the complaints of his followers, who were by no means silent or complaisant. He claimed that the ideal of his Government was enshrined in the proclamation of the Irish Republic in 1916, which guaranteed religious and civil liberty to all citizens. It was true they had not a republic to-day, but they had the opportunity of ruling well or ill. They were preparing the way for the day when there would be a free and independent Irish republic functioning in the country. They were quite willing to co-operate with Great Britain, and realised that the two nations, living so close together, had a great deal in common; all that they asked was that their position should be recognised by Great Britain and the world in general. Regarding Northern Ireland, he said once more that the Government believed that the only solution of the problem was for them in the Free State to work effectively to bring things to such a happy position there, that the six counties would be only too glad to come into the Free State of their own free will. He frankly admitted his disappointment at finding that the removal of the oath had not made co-operation possible between his party and the extreme republicans, and, although pressed hard by the extremist wing, declared that he would insist on order and equal liberty for all. To a demand for the release of the republican prisoners sentenced by the Military Tribunal, he replied that any Government under which politics became a shield for crime must collapse in anarchy, and that his Government would be a firm and impartial protector of the law. At the same time, however, he sought to placate this extreme element by the announcement that all service pensions granted by the Cosgrave Government to able-bodied men

The Irish Free State—*Quo Vadis?*

who fought in the 1916 rising and the civil war would be withdrawn. This proposal is naturally considered vindictive by his opponents, and is likely to lead to much bad blood. Its moral cost will greatly exceed the money saved.

At the conclusion of the Ard Fheis, Mr. de Valera made an urgent appeal for unity between the various political parties in the Free State, and said that, whilst he did not want anyone to sacrifice principles, his aim was to get the Irish people into one national body under one leadership. On behalf of the United Irish party, Mr. MacDermot replied that they had always been ready to support Mr. de Valera in maintaining order, and that they were not inclined to obstruct his domestic policy of economic development, but when it came to his external policy there were fundamental differences as to whether it was consistent with good faith or national prosperity, and Mr. de Valera could not expect his opponents to be false to their convictions on these vital issues.

It is interesting to note that, in spite of their republican declarations, Mr. de Valera's Government have agreed to contribute their share towards the expenses of the new Imperial Economic Committee, a contribution which he justifies on the ground that its aim is to get co-operation between nations on a footing of equality in matters of common concern where it is in their interest to co-operate—a definition which he does not apparently realise might equally be applied to the working of the British Commonwealth as a whole. But the issues between the Free State and Great Britain were raised in a more serious fashion on November 14, when Mr. Thomas, the Dominions Secretary, in answer to a question in the House of Commons, stated that the British Government were advised that the three Bills* recently introduced by Mr. de Valera's Government for the amendment of the Free State constitution, and the abolition of the right of appeal to the Judicial Committee of the Privy Council, involved a further repudiation of the

* See THE ROUND TABLE, No. 93, December 1933, p. 169.

Dominion or Republic?

obligations entered into by the Free State under the Treaty of 1921, and that the Free State in its intention "gradually to eliminate the Crown from the constitution" was "tending to lose" the advantages which membership of the Commonwealth brings. It is difficult to see on what grounds Mr. Thomas made this statement, as no less an authority than Professor Berriedale Keith is of opinion that the amendments to the Free State constitution, to which Mr. Thomas objects, are "manifestly and undeniably within the powers of a Dominion, as laid down by the Imperial Conferences of 1926-30, and as provided in the Statute of Westminster." Canada, as Professor Keith points out, has in fact recently abolished all criminal appeals to the Privy Council.

Mr. de Valera naturally took immediate advantage of this *faux pas* to re-open the issue. In a dispatch dated November 29, addressed to Mr. Thomas, he said that the experience of the last twelve years had made it abundantly evident that lasting friendship could not be attained on the basis of the present relations. The Free State Government (he added) inferred from Mr. Thomas's statement that the British Government had decided not to treat a decision of the Irish people to sever their connection with the Commonwealth as a cause of war or other aggressive action. He asked for a direct and unequivocal statement on the matter. Such a statement would, he said, be the first step towards that free and friendly co-operation in matters of agreed common concern between Great Britain and Ireland which ought to exist between them. Mr. Thomas, replying for the British Government, pointed out that the 1921 Treaty was duly accepted by the elected representatives of the people of the Free State, and confirmed at succeeding general elections, and that the British Government did "not feel called upon to say what attitude they would adopt in circumstances which they regarded as purely hypothetical."

British opinion seems to have been almost unanimous in

The Irish Free State—*Quo Vadis?*

considering this reply a masterpiece of diplomacy, which left Mr. de Valera guessing and gave him no material for propaganda. There are, however, many people in the Free State who think that the British Government lost an excellent opportunity of stating its position decisively and clearly. They feel that, without admitting the right of the Free State to secede from the Commonwealth by unilateral action, the British Government might have pointed out that, if the Free State did of its own free will decide to secede, such a decision would not be opposed by force of arms, though it would involve certain serious and inevitable consequences; that on no account would the British Government permit the Free State to interfere with Northern Ireland; and that such secession would therefore make the partition of Ireland permanent. In fact, the two dispatches illustrate very clearly the difference in the political mentality of the two peoples: the Irish demanding and expecting a logical answer to a definite question, and the English disliking and distrusting logic in the sphere of politics, and applying a policy of *solvitur ambulando* to the issues raised. So, for the present at all events, the people of the Free State must continue to live in a hypothetical republic.

The position was not improved by Lord Hailsham's statement in the House of Lords on December 6 that the Free State Government could not, consistently with the terms of the Treaty, repeal the right of appeal to the Judicial Committee of the Privy Council, and that their right to do so might be raised for determination by the Privy Council itself. This statement provoked Mr. Cosgrave to declare that the only method now appropriate to Commonwealth conditions is conference and negotiation. Any attempt, he said, to subject to a ruling from the Privy Council constitutional matters, arising even between Great Britain and those Dominions which were the creation of the British Parliament, might have a very disastrous effect on the continuance of the Commonwealth. He added that where Commonwealth relations, as in the case

Dominion or Republic?

of the Free State, were based upon an international agreement, the suggestion was intolerable. The incident is revealing because it shows that the British Government's quarrel with Mr. de Valera may easily, through mismanagement, become a quarrel with the people of the Free State, in which the British Government would be contending for conditions that even the strongest supporters of the Treaty in Ireland consider humiliating and indefensible. It is desirable that the British Government should realise that it must deal not only with Irish but equally with Dominion feeling in such matters, for what is Ireland's case to-day may be some other Dominion's to-morrow. Far-seeing Irishmen believe that this fact protects their liberty within the Commonwealth far more securely than would be the case if the Free State were a republic.

Mr. Frank Aiken, the Minister for Defence, who undoubtedly speaks with Mr. de Valera's authority, has recently announced that the next step on the road to national freedom will be to get authority from the people to abolish the post of Governor-General, and to substitute the signature of the President of the Republic for the signature of the British King in the appointment of foreign representatives. The Free State Government, he added, had quietly but effectively turned the King's representative, and the King himself, into automatons; they signed what they were requested to sign by the Executive Council.

But Mr. de Valera's dispatch did not please the extreme republicans, and Cumann na mBan, their women's organisation, roundly declares that "during Ireland's seven hundred years' struggle she suffered many humiliations, many defeats, but this last appeal to England for mercy and quarter before we proclaim our God-given right to freedom is the greatest insult any leader, even of constitutional movements, ever offered this country." The Irish Republican Army also strongly objects to the new armed force of 15,000 volunteers, which the Government proposes to

The Irish Free State—*Quo Vadis?*

recruit throughout the country. They believe that this force is being organised as a political instrument for the seduction of members from their own organisation, and colour is lent to this view by the fact that the recruiting officers appointed in each area are not ordinary army officers but ex-members of the I.R.A. who fought against the Free State Government during the civil war. It is clearly Mr. de Valera's intention to weaken the I.R.A. by providing its past and present leading lights with lucrative employment. The new force may also provide a counter-weight to the regular army, which has so far maintained its integrity, and held itself aloof from political intrigue. Mr. de Valera further enraged the I.R.A. by standing as a candidate, and being elected, for South Down in the Northern Ireland general election against one of their candidates, who was defeated. As he has, apparently, no intention of taking his seat in the Northern Parliament, it is hard to see what purpose this performance can possibly serve except to disfranchise the constituency.

With the Labour party his relations are more friendly. A special committee of three members, representing the Labour party and organisation, meets him once a fortnight in order to discuss policy and legislative developments, and so far the proceedings of this conference are reported to have been amicable, but the extremist elements declare that this result has been obtained only by the complete abdication of Labour leadership and policy, and by acquiescence in the "vicious industrial system," which, they claim, Mr. de Valera's Government is seeking to build up in the Free State.

The death of Mr. Joseph Devlin, M.P., has removed from the Irish political world the last surviving leader of the Irish Parliamentary party, and the most prominent Nationalist figure in Northern Ireland. A man of many gifts and generous heart, he devoted them with unselfish zeal to the service of his country and his native city, Belfast, where he was universally respected. Practically every political

Martial Law
party in Ireland was represented at his funeral, for in death alone we are not divided.

II. MARTIAL LAW

THE most striking commentary on Mr. de Valera's domestic policy is the fact that after two years of his government the country is virtually under martial law, and that all political offences are now tried by the Military Tribunal, for the creation of which he could hardly find words strong enough to condemn Mr. Cosgrave's Administration. The truth of the matter is that without the assistance of this Tribunal he would not be able to govern the country, for the I.R.A. and their associates, by intimidating jurors, who are no longer even partly protected by the suppression of their names, have made any other form of trial impossible. In addition, armed attacks for political reasons have again become prevalent. In October, armed men attacked a dance given by a supporter of the United Ireland party at Ballingar, County Galway, and wounded five people ; two young men were assaulted by armed men at night in Listowel, County Kerry, and two other young men, members of the Blue Shirt organisation, named O'Reilly and O'Leary, were taken at night from their homes at Innishannon, County Cork, by armed and masked men, and brutally treated. O'Reilly died in December as a result of his injuries, and is naturally looked upon as the first martyr of the Blue Shirt movement, of which he will probably become the Horst Wessel. It is significant that O'Reilly and his comrade had been mentioned in *An Poblacht*, the I.R.A. paper, a few days before as prominent supporters of General O'Duffy's movement. Those responsible for these assaults have been neither discovered nor punished, but the Blue Shirts have refused to be provoked into reprisals. In November a party of armed men raided the rooms of an official of the Young Ireland Associa-

The Irish Free State—*Quo Vadis?*

tion in Cork, and ransacked the premises ; and a prominent Wexford Blue Shirt was shot down one night while walking home. In the first week of January no less than nine outrages were perpetrated against supporters of the United Ireland party in various parts of the country.

One would naturally have thought that the Government's reaction to conduct of this kind would have been to proclaim the I.R.A. an illegal organisation, but they proceeded instead, on December 8, to ban the Blue Shirt organisation, the Young Ireland Association, which is the youthful wing of the United Ireland party and was originally known as the Army Comrades Association, or A.C.A., and afterwards called the National Guard.* The United Ireland party, in an official statement issued immediately afterwards, pointed out that the Young Ireland Association was a branch of their own organisation, i.e., of a constitutional Opposition party, and that it had the full confidence of their national executive, by which it was absolutely controlled. No ban or suppression, they pointed out, could make illegal things which were of their nature lawful, and the ideals and the methods of Young Ireland were fully within the laws, both of God and of the land. After commenting on the fact that the Government allowed two communist headquarters to remain open in Dublin, and every variety of communist activity to be carried on throughout the country, the statement proceeded to declare that there was nothing illegal about a blue shirt, and that no ban or ordinance could make it illegal to wear one. On this issue it is now clear that no compromise is possible, for the blue shirt has become the definite emblem of Mr. de Valera's opponents, and whatever change is made in the title of their organisation it must remain their uniform. The banning of the Young Ireland Association was justified by the Government on the ground that it was meditating a *coup d'état*, but this seems a poor defence, in view of the fact

* See THE ROUND TABLE, No. 92, September 1933, p. 880, and No 93, December 1933, p. 165, *et seq.*

that this particular body is now part of the constitutional Opposition, is practically unarmed, and has not displayed any serious military activity.

Prior to the banning of the Young Ireland Association, police raids were made on its offices and on the houses of General O'Duffy, Mr. Blythe, and other prominent members of the United Ireland party. The Secretary of the Young Ireland Association, Commandant Cronin, was charged before the Military Tribunal with sedition and with being a member of illegal organisations. He was found Not Guilty on the major charge of sedition, but Guilty on the charges of membership of the National Guard and Young Ireland Association, for which offence he was sentenced to three months' imprisonment if he did not enter into recognisances, and as he refused to do this he is now in gaol. It transpired during the trial that, whilst in prison, Commandant Cronin's blue shirt had been forcibly removed by the authorities. Mr. Denningan, the political correspondent of *The Irish Press*, Mr. de Valera's paper, who was called for the defence, admitted that he was the author of a statement in that paper to the effect that the Government proposed to allow a short period to permit members of the Young Ireland Association to leave it, but when asked to disclose the official source of his information he claimed privilege and refused, after consulting his editor, to disclose the name of his informant. The tribunal found him guilty of contempt of court, and sentenced him to a month's imprisonment, a sentence which has been unanimously condemned by Irish journalists.

As soon as the Young Ireland Association was banned, the United Ireland party decided to dissolve it, and form a new organisation, to be known as the League of Youth. They also decided to serve a writ on the Attorney-General, in order to secure from the High Court a declaration that the League of Youth was a lawful body, and so stop in advance any attempt by the Government to declare it illegal. The writ, which has since been issued, bases its claim on

The Irish Free State—*Quo Vadis?*

Article 9 of the Free State Constitution, which guarantees the free expression of opinion and the right to form associations for purposes not opposed to public morality.

But the High Court was soon called upon to decide an even more important question. On December 16, when General O'Duffy, wearing a blue shirt, attempted to address a political meeting at Westport, County Mayo, he and two of his supporters were at once arrested by the civic guard and removed to the local police barrack, amidst scenes of considerable excitement. An application was immediately made to the High Court for an absolute order of *habeas corpus*, which was finally heard before Mr. Justice O'Byrne. He decided, on December 21, that the civic guard officers had not satisfied him, as required by the constitution, that the prisoners were detained in accordance with the law, and therefore ordered their release. His conclusion was that General O'Duffy was arrested, not because he was suspected of being a member of an illegal organisation, but because he went into Westport wearing a blue shirt to address a meeting. He was satisfied that both the arrest and the detention were illegal. General O'Duffy is now bringing legal proceedings for false imprisonment against the civic guard officers who arrested him.

The High Court proceedings were, however, no sooner terminated than a summons was served on General O'Duffy, calling on him to appear before the Military Tribunal on January 2 to answer charges of belonging to two illegal associations, namely, the Young Ireland Association and the National Guard, and of sedition in the shape of alleged incitement to murder Mr. de Valera, in a speech he made at Ballyshannon, on December 9. But the General's legal advisers promptly countered by asking the High Court to make an order prohibiting the Military Tribunal from hearing and determining the charges, on the ground that the offences charged against General O'Duffy did not come within their jurisdiction. When the Tribunal met, on January 2, the day for which the hearing of the O'Duffy

Martial Law

case had been fixed, the Court, through its President, said that it was satisfied on the question of its absolute jurisdiction in the case, under Article 2a of the constitution,* but that, in order to avoid a clash, the case would be allowed to stand over until further notice. The whole matter illustrates clearly the danger of attempting to set up a military jurisdiction, separate and self-contained, alongside the normal civil jurisdiction, particularly when it is sought to use the military jurisdiction for purely political purposes. The High Court, after several days legal argument, reserved judgment.

Whilst these proceedings were taking place, the Government, no doubt to show its impartiality, arrested twelve republican youths from Tralee, County Kerry, who were brought before the Military Tribunal and charged with riotous and unlawful assembly on the occasion of General O'Duffy's visit to Tralee, on October 6.† They were duly convicted, and received sentences of imprisonment ranging from seven to nine months. These convictions led to organised protests in Tralee amongst Mr. de Valera's supporters and others. It is notorious that County Kerry has been in a state of semi-anarchy for some time, and these developments moved Mr. de Valera to address a meeting in Tralee on December 16. After referring to the long and painful list of outrages and crimes that had happened in Kerry during recent months, he declared that the authority of the Government had been attacked on both sides. They were determined to protect that authority, and to enforce it against everybody. They wanted ordered society, without which there could be no future for the country. There were only two alternatives. Either they were going to have a democracy, or there was going to be a dictatorship, in which the faction that could get the strongest support and most weapons at its disposal was going to be on top. Which was it to be: ordered democracy, or anarchy, followed

* See THE ROUND TABLE, No. 85, December 1931, p. 142.

† See THE ROUND TABLE, No. 93, December 1933, p. 176.

The Irish Free State—*Quo Vadis?*

inevitably by one section imposing its will upon the other? This appeal is a sad commentary on the condition into which the country has been allowed to drift. Unfortunately, it discloses no realisation of the fundamental fact that the great majority of our people would strongly support the Government if they proposed to deal firmly and fairly with all armed disturbers of the peace and unlawful associations, no matter how grandiloquent the titles under which they disguised themselves.

The Government have suppressed *An Poblacht*, the I.R.A. weekly journal, on several occasions, and *United Ireland*, the United Ireland party organ, once. *An Poblacht* now declares that this conduct indicates the marked anti-republicanism of the Government, who, it claims, like all political perverts, are more hostile to their former comrades, who have remained true to their national faith, than they are to avowed traitors and imperialists. Its publishers, the Republican Press, Limited, somewhat inconsistently, applied to the High Court for an injunction restraining the police authorities from trespassing on the premises or interfering with the printing of *An Poblacht*, but this was refused. In spite of these events, the United Ireland party does not seem to be making great progress, although General O'Duffy has admittedly improved its organisation, and has attracted large numbers of young men to its ranks. His blue shirts are active, well disciplined, and so far under restraint; but he himself shows little sign of political development. One of the most effective speakers on the United Ireland side is Mr. James Dillon, T.D., John Dillon's son, who is self-possessed, has a good voice and presence, and tells his audience very plainly and without rhetoric exactly what they want to know. He is bound to go far, for he has both political tradition and ability. But it is not by oratory that Irish elections are really won. There is always in the background the great mass of silent voters, who do not attend meetings, who vote according to their conscience or their pocket, and whose reactions are at

Financial and Economic Difficulties

present unpredictable. It is the "have-not" element amongst these people to whom Mr. de Valera appeals, for he has given them cheap food, cleverly distributed relief works, a wide scheme of unemployment relief, and the opportunity, which is so dear to every irresponsible Irishman, of attributing all our misfortunes to England's wickedness. As long as these conditions continue there is little likelihood that this element will change its allegiance, and every chance of another general election.

III. FINANCIAL AND ECONOMIC DIFFICULTIES

THE most serious financial embarrassment that has yet befallen Mr. de Valera's Government is the fact that the Fourth National Loan, of £6,000,000, bearing interest at $3\frac{1}{2}$ per cent. per annum and issued at 98 per cent., was not fully subscribed. More than half the loan remained in the hands of the Irish banks, who underwrote the issue. The three previous loans, issued by the Cosgrave Government, were all over-subscribed. The recent loan was apparently issued on the assumption that the credit of the Free State was still as good as it was under the last Government, but the response clearly indicates that this is not so, and trade conditions reinforce this view. During the first nine months of 1933, cross-channel and coast-wise trade entering and leaving the port of Dublin declined by 239,759 tons, as compared with the previous year; the dues fell by £6,490; and the number of ships using the port by 937. Foreign trade, on the other hand, increased in the same period by 114,210 tons, and the number of foreign ships by 241. In August, the number of people in the Free State in receipt of public assistance had increased by 27 per cent., as compared with August, 1932. The trade returns show that the total trade of the country for 1933 was £55,439,953 compared with £102,521,354 in 1930. In 1932, trade had already shrunk from £87,531,776

The Irish Free State—*Quo Vadis?*

in 1931 to £69,514,450. Moreover, the annual adverse balance of trade increased from £11,031,076 in 1930 to £16,138,353 last year. Last year's figure was some £500,000 worse than that of the year 1932. Thus in three years the external trade of the Free State has been almost halved, and the adverse balance has increased from 10 per cent. to 28 per cent. The main reason for this heavy drop in trade is the virtual collapse of the cattle business. The Government have sought to bolster it up by bounties, which are being paid by the Free State taxpayer, but now that a quota system for fat cattle has been introduced in Great Britain to protect the British farmer even bounties will be of little avail.

Great Britain continues to be virtually our only customer, taking 92 per cent. of our exports, as against 8 per cent. to all other countries. During last year we purchased goods to the value of £1,757,384 from Germany, who took goods valued at £171,074 in return. In 1931 our trade with Great Britain was more valuable than the trade of any other Dominion save Canada, and, had we seized the golden opportunity offered at Ottawa, we should probably have benefited more than any other Dominion. As it is, our share in Great Britain's total purchases has fallen from 4.19 per cent. in the first nine months of 1931 to 3.82 per cent. in the corresponding period of 1932, and 2.56 per cent. last year. Every Dominion except the Free State now enjoys a preference in the British market, while we are virtually regarded as a foreign country. It is hard to envisage anything but national bankruptcy unless the dispute with England is settled, and of this there is no sign whatever.

Against these hard facts Fianna Fail apologists, ignoring completely the acts of their own Government, argue that, as our external trade declined by £393,000,000 between 1920 and 1931, the further fall since 1931 is only a continuation of this tendency, which has been brought about by international conditions, and that the only way to save

Financial and Economic Difficulties

the situation is to alter completely the economic policy of the country by making it more self-contained, and by not relying on external trade. They contend that the economic difficulties here began before the so-called "economic war" with England, and that this event only led to an acceleration of the rate of change in our economic organisation. They state that export bounties on cattle are being paid only in order to prevent distress during the intermediate period, and to stop violent dislocation whilst other plans are being developed. The Government now aims at the repatriation of Irish capital invested abroad by encouraging it to invest in Irish enterprise through the new Industrial Credit Corporation, and it is also going to establish an Irish insurance system, which, it is claimed will be both cheap and safe. Irish manufacturers are clamouring for more legislation on the lines of the Control of Manufacturers Act of 1932, under which no foreign firm can start a new business or alter the character of any existing one without a licence. Any firm whose capital is not 51 per cent. Irish is treated as foreign. Mr. Lemass the Minister for Industry and Commerce, recently announced to a convention of manufacturers that the Government hoped that within twelve months the full requirements of the Free State in cotton piece goods would be woven here from yarn spun in the country. Glass cutlery and rubber goods were also to be manufactured and projects were in preparation for the assembling of motor cars in the Free State. When these were working there would, he stated, be a definite embargo on the import of assembled motor cars.

Orders for 80 per cent. of the equipment for the new sugar beet factories, which will cost over £1,000,000, have been given to Germany, and 20 per cent. to Czechoslovakia. In return for these orders, Germany is to take 300 tons of our butter and 5,000,000 eggs in excess of the normal quotas. In order to provide a market for the surplus oat crop*

* See THE ROUND TABLE, No. 93, December 1953, p. 180.

The Irish Free State—*Quo Vadis?*

of last year, which cannot be sold, the flour millers are to be compelled to mix a certain quantity of hulled oats with the wheat, which will produce a kind of brown bread. This has now been done. British imports will be regulated by a quota system in retaliation for the quota imposed on Irish fat cattle entering England. And so the vicious circle of economic attack and counter-attack revolves, while the man in the street is left wondering if there are any statesmen left in these islands.

All these important questions are now engaging the attention of the Dail, which reassembled on January 31. It has a heavy legislative programme to deal with, including a Bill to revise the electoral system according to population. The revision, which, under the constitution, must be made every ten years, will reduce the membership of the Dail. Another Bill is to amend the judicial system, which will probably involve the appointment of two new High Court judges, and so satisfy some of the hungry legal sheep in the Government fold. The farmers will, however, be more interested in the fact that the grant for the relief of agricultural rates has not been increased, although there is every chance that the rates themselves will be. On the other hand, it is pleasant to record that the Government's very comprehensive housing scheme, which will eventually abolish our disgraceful city slums, is ahead of schedule, and is giving much-needed employment in urban areas.

Amidst these rather gloomy conditions one must chronicle another bright spot. The now almost moribund Gaelic League, which ostensibly exists for the purpose of promoting the use of the Irish language, has started a campaign for the abolition of jazz dancing, the launching of which was the occasion for some very severe strictures on Mr. Sean McEntee, the Minister for Finance, whom Mr. Sean O'Kelly, the Secretary of the Gaelic League, stated had a "soul buried in jazz." Why poor Mr. McEntee should have been selected for censure it is difficult to see, for his other colleagues, except Mr. de Valera, who, alas!

Financial and Economic Difficulties

does not dance at all, are all equally addicted to this terrible pastime. But the Minister for Posts and Telegraphs, Mr. Boland, promptly retaliated by cancelling certain addresses on Irish culture that Mr. O'Kelly was to have delivered from the Dublin broadcasting station, a place from which the strains of jazz have been known to proceed. At the same time it is notified that our future supply of jazz *via* the ether is to be severely rationed. The conclusion would seem to be that we shall eventually be permitted to listen neither to native culture nor to native jazz. And yet, as a nation, we were once believed to possess a sense of humour.

The Irish Free State.

February 1934.

CANADA

I. THE POLITICAL SCENE

FROM July, 1930, when the Conservative Ministry of Mr. Bennett was placed in power by the voters of Canada, up to midsummer of last year, there was a state of equilibrium and almost complete lack of movement in Canadian politics. The country was prepared to give the Government a fair field for the exercise of its decisive mandate to try a policy of high protectionism as a remedy for the Dominion's economic troubles; the national emergency created by the depression, and the resulting unemployment, were so serious that the Opposition forces hesitated to court unpopularity by giving rise to any suspicion that they were animated by a factious spirit and indifferent to the gravity of the economic situation. So, during one special and two regular sessions, they gave a reasonably free hand to the Government for most of the measures that it sponsored for the amelioration of the depression, and contented themselves mainly with such criticisms of its policies and administrative methods as they felt to be merited. However, when after a trial of two and a half years it had become plain that high tariffs had not produced economic salvation for anybody but the particular industrial interests they aided, that unemployment instead of being wiped out had increased, and that the plight of the agriculturalists had gone from bad to worse, signs of popular discontent with Conservative policies began to manifest themselves; and last session the Liberals, fortified by this knowledge, adopted in Parliament more aggressive tactics, and began to challenge

The Political Scene

outright the wisdom and efficacy of the Government's policies.

Ministers and their supporters had been praying assiduously for signs that the bottom of the depression had been reached, and that an improvement in business and economic conditions would provide an effective justification for their policies and a defence against Opposition attacks. So they were greatly heartened when there began in the spring an upward movement in business, which continued through the summer and autumn and by the end of 1933 had brought the official index of the physical volume of business to a level roughly 27 per cent. above the low point reached in February of last year. But welcome as this improvement is, it still leaves economic conditions very far below any level that would be counted in Canada as decent prosperity, and it has apparently not availed to check the steady erosion of popular support, which the Ministry has been experiencing. At any rate, three Federal by-elections which were held in October seemed to offer convincing evidence that the tide of popular sentiment, perhaps more from dissatisfaction with Conservative policies than from any enthusiasm for the Liberals, was flowing against the Government.

Of these by-elections the most ominous was in the province of New Brunswick, of which Mr. Bennett is a native son; the Restigouche-Madawaska division, which the Conservatives had carried by 548 votes at the general election, was captured by a Liberal candidate with a majority of 6,472. In the Yamaska division of Quebec the Liberals, whose candidate had carried the seat at the general election by the bare majority of one, and forfeited it for corrupt practices, were on the defensive; but despite the handicap entailed by their soiled political dove's insistence on running again, they managed to elect him by 84 votes over a good Conservative candidate. In the Mackenzie division of Saskatchewan, which had been held by Mr. Milton Campbell, an agrarian friendly to the

Canada

Conservative Ministry, who appointed him to the Tariff Board, the real fight proved to be between the Liberal and the nominee of the new radical party, the Co-operative Commonwealth Federation, and the Government had to face the grim fact that their candidate, who polled less than 15 per cent. of the total votes cast, had not been a serious factor in a contest in a typical rural constituency in the West. Victory perched upon the Liberal banners, and a majority of 1,614 demonstrated the ability of the Liberals to cope with the competition of the new party in a division that seemed to offer the latter an exceptionally favourable fighting ground. They now profess that they have taken the measure both of the Conservatives and of the C.C.F., and that the country is clearly prepared to shun extremist policies and give liberalism and its programme another chance. Further encouragement has also come to the Liberals from the provincial elections in Nova Scotia and British Columbia. In both of these provinces, Conservative Ministries were swept from power and replaced by Liberal Administrations, while in British Columbia the Conservatives were so badly defeated that they were only able to return one solitary member to a house of 47.

The Liberal leaders, however, realise that with a new radical party definitely in the field they must move leftwards, and after the official party programme had been discussed by the National Liberal Federation a revised edition was announced to the country by Mr. Mackenzie King. In the main it restated the party's traditional aims and policies, but it specifically pledged it to a reduction of the tariff to the level prevailing before the Conservative régime began, to the establishment of a central bank and a national investment board, and to electoral reform through the introduction of proportional representation and the alternative vote. There has, however, been evidence of a certain cleavage of opinion on questions of policy. Mr. Mackenzie King prefers to stand by the ancient

The Political Scene

gods of liberalism and has the sympathy of the Quebec wing of the party and the older members generally, while the younger elements have a predilection for full-blooded "planning" on the model of the N.R.A. During the summer the Liberals refurbished their organisation and, a novel departure in Canadian politics, held a Liberal summer school, an experiment which proved successful and which the Conservatives felt it necessary to imitate.

The new C.C.F. was also very active in 1933, and at its first national convention, held at Regina in July, it provided itself with a definite programme, and with a permanent leader in the person of Mr. J. S. Woodsworth, who as leader of the Labour group in the Federal Parliament since 1921 has earned the respect of all parties. As the C.C.F. programme is frankly collectivist, there seems no valid reason why the new party should not take the title of "socialist." It has a body of able and zealous propagandists at its disposal and commands substantial strength in Ontario and the western provinces, but it lacks both reasonable press support and an effective organisation; in the absence of any serious following east of the Ottawa river it cannot hope at the next election to challenge successfully the supremacy of the two historic parties. At present the strength of parties in the House of Commons is as follows:—Conservatives, 136; Liberals, 90; C.C.F., 15; Independents, 2; Vacancies, 2. In the Senate the Government, despite seven unfilled seats, have 51 supporters against 38 Liberals.

The most important business before Parliament will be the decennial revision of the Bank Act, which was postponed to await the report of the Macmillan Commission on Banking and Monetary Problems. In the Commission's report, which was published in November, the most important recommendation, from which Sir Thomas White, a former Minister of Finance, and Mr. Beaudry Leman, an ex-President of the Canadian Bankers Association, dissented, was that there should be established a central bank of

Canada

rediscout which should have its capital privately subscribed and should function on an independent basis. Other minor reforms of the Canadian banking system were advocated, and it was suggested that a special system for agricultural credits was desirable and should be the subject of a further inquiry. Now the Canadian banks have made no secret of their dislike of the project of a central bank, particularly of the proposal that it should be given a monopoly of note issue. The vocal protests of their spokesmen against the adoption of such an experiment with a system that has successfully stood the test of an unparalleled economic crisis have been supplemented by vigorous hostile literary propaganda. However, not only has Mr. Bennett explicitly pledged his Government to introduce legislation establishing a central bank, but the Liberals and the C.C.F. are also committed to the idea, and the best that the banks can hope for is to secure a structure for the bank that will not seriously interfere with their own scheme of operations. The radical elements in Parliament will press for an institution that would have its capital subscribed by the State and be under the firm control of the Government; but it is probable that the Government will oppose this plan and follow the scheme outlined in the Macmillan Report. In addition the whole Bank Act will be subjected to review.

In view of the new monetary programme that has been sponsored by President Roosevelt, the Canadian Government will be forced in the near future to make important decisions about Canada's monetary policy. They cannot disregard developments in the United States, in view of the close commercial and other relations between the two countries. Authoritative financial experts predict that the Canadian dollar, which has more or less kept step with the downward devaluation of the American dollar in terms of gold, will continue to stick close to it, even if the American dollar's gold value falls below 60 cents, and it is considered probable that under these circumstances the Ministry will seek authority from Parliament to follow the example of

The Political Scene

the United States and reduce the gold content of the Canadian dollar. So it can be forecasted that banking and monetary problems will play a large part in the discussions of the session.

There are other developments at Washington that may provide the Canadian Parliament with material for abundant discussion and controversy. If, before the session at Ottawa ends, President Roosevelt's influence is strong enough to secure the ratification of the St. Lawrence Waterway Treaty against the formidable opposition that has developed to it, the Canadian Government can scarcely avoid carrying out its part of the bargain and submitting the Treaty to Parliament. It will then assuredly become one of the dominant issues of the session and prolong its course; for, while the Treaty has strong support in certain parts of Canada, there is no evidence that the province of Quebec has in any way abandoned its hostility, and Mr. Bennett might find some difficulty in preventing a revolt among his French-Canadian followers in Parliament.

The Opposition profess to have abundant material for a comprehensive arraignment of the Government for a variety of sins of omission and commission, but they will concentrate their main attacks upon what they regard as the baneful results of its high tariff policy, the flaws in its administration of unemployment relief, and its wheat marketing policy, which is wrapped in deep mystery but which seems to have involved it in dangerously heavy commitments in the wheat market. Exhaustive debates upon tariff policy are inevitable, and the Opposition will insist upon a grand assize into the relations between the Tariff Board and the Department of National Revenue, in which evidence of serious friction has been revealed. The Tariff Board has been functioning regularly since July and has by common consent shown both vigorous industry and judicial impartiality, as spokesmen of British interests who have appeared before it have testified. But it has encountered persistent obstruction from certain officials of the

Canada

Department of National Revenue, sympathisers with a high tariff policy, who have declined to implement its orders and challenged its authority to interfere with their rulings. Faced with such obstruction, Judge Sedgewick, the chairman of the Board, on January 7, courageously made a strong protest that the Board was not getting from government officials the co-operation to which it was entitled. He is evidently determined to bring the issue to a head.

Farm marketing schemes are likely to be continually to the fore. For one thing, the Government will be pressed to reveal its policy for implementing Canada's commitments under the international wheat agreement, and has to reckon with a formidable agitation in the prairie provinces for a national wheat board. There has also developed among other groups of farm producers a campaign for a comprehensive farm marketing scheme, whose sponsors want the ideas embodied in the British Agricultural Marketing Act applied to Canada with the necessary adaptations. So complicated, however, are the issues involved that the Government will probably decide to be content with a limited experiment and to defer the evolution of a national marketing scheme.

Then, quite unexpectedly, Parliament has been provided with another bone of contention by the Ministry's sudden decision to resume the traditional practice of conferring honours and decorations upon Canadians, who for fifteen years have been debarred from accepting them by a vote of the Commons. Mr. Bennett has justified his action on the ground that this vote only bound the Government and Parliament of the day, but Mr. Mackenzie King has sharply challenged both the propriety and the wisdom of his course. He complains that the Government, in presenting the country with a *fait accompli*, has offered Parliament a grave affront. He is evidently preparing to raise the constitutional issue that Ministers, in giving advice to the Crown about the exercise of the prerogative, are responsible to the House of Commons and must take cognisance of its expressed

The Political Scene

will, which as far as the Government knew was against the restoration of titles. The list of Canadian names that the Government submitted was carefully compiled and gave no ground for criticism, but, judged by press comments, the country's reception of the move is not enthusiastic. Many Conservatives have an uneasy feeling that the Government has gratuitously presented its opponents with very useful ammunition for an election campaign, as they will accuse Ministers of being more concerned with gaudy favours for their friends than with the fate of the unemployed and the hard-pressed farmers.

Since the present parliament has now lasted more than three and a half years, the normal political warfare of the session will be spiced with party manœuvres and jockeying for position against the day of the general election, which must come within eighteen months. Very few Canadian parliaments, however, have been allowed to live out their full statutory terms, and an election before the end of 1934 cannot be dismissed as an impossibility. Indeed, some Liberal strategists regard it as a certainty, under a conviction that the Conservatives will prefer to risk the ordeal while they still retain control of the three provincial governments of Ontario, Saskatchewan and New Brunswick, which all must seek new mandates this year and may well pass into Liberal hands. On the other hand, if a progressive recovery of business were assured, the Conservatives would prefer to delay the election as long as possible, in order to be able to claim credit for rescuing the Dominion from a grim pit of depression. Now another factor has been introduced into their tactical calculations by the re-emergence of the St. Lawrence Waterway issue. It is the sort of project that wins votes in a Canadian election, by reason of the hopes raised that large sums of money will be spent in certain localities, and Ministers might see a prospect of reviving their fortunes by making a mandate for the scheme the main issue of a general election.

II. THE TARIFF BOARD AND TARIFF POLICY

THE new Canadian Tariff Board, which was provided for in legislation passed in 1931 and designated as the tribunal to interpret the United Kingdom-Canada trade agreement of 1932, has now been in commission for some six months, and it may not be too early to consider the nature of its task and its prospects of discharging it satisfactorily.

The new board is not the first tribunal of its kind. In 1927 there was set up by the Administration of Mr. Mackenzie King an advisory board on tariffs and taxation which functioned until the change of government in 1930. Although in introducing the legislation setting up the present board Mr. Bennett emphasised the great gulf fixed between it and its predecessor there is clearly a strong family likeness. The new board, like its predecessor, is essentially a fact-finding body. So far as tariff questions are concerned, its function, like that of the former board, is to find the facts and make recommendations on the basis thereof. There is this significant difference, however, that while the facts found and the recommendations made by the former board are a Cabinet secret to this day, the reports made by the present board are to be tabled in Parliament immediately they are made. It is also to be noted that, whereas the old board provided a forum in which anyone, in his capacity as a consumer, could make his views known, regardless of direct interest in the question at issue as manufacturer or importer, the new board has made it clear that no one not directly concerned can claim any *locus standi*. In other words, the new board is intended to be much more judicial in character than its predecessor, and to that end there has been appointed as chairman, not an active member of any political party, as were the two successive chairmen of the former board, but an Ontario

The Tariff Board and Tariff Policy

High Court judge, Mr. Justice Sedgewick, who has already given striking evidence of the complete independence and soundness that were confidently expected of him. His two colleagues are Mr. Milton N. Campbell, an ex-Progressive member of Parliament from Saskatchewan, and Mr. C. P. Hébert, a junior member of a well-known importing firm in Montreal and an *alumnus* of New College, Oxford, who may be regarded as representative respectively of western and eastern Canada. Though it cannot be said that the ideal of "taking the tariff out of politics" has been achieved—the functions of the board are, as has been stated, purely fact-finding and advisory—nevertheless the new board marks a very large step in the direction of the judicial determination of what tariff rates should be.

It was this judicial quality of the new tribunal that made it possible to designate it as the authority to interpret and give effect to the United Kingdom-Canada trade agreement of 1932. In article II of that agreement, it will be recalled, the Canadian Government undertook that, except in the case of industries not fully established, protective duties should not exceed such a level as would give United Kingdom producers "full opportunity of reasonable competition on the basis of the relative cost of economical and efficient production." The principle was also laid down that protection should be afforded only to those industries which are reasonably assured of sound opportunities for success. So much for the agreement. As for the intention of the parties to it and the function of the Tariff Board in connection therewith, Mr. Bennett has expressed himself as follows :

I told Mr. Baldwin : "I am prepared, if you will give us a preference for all Canadian commodities in your market, to ask the Parliament of Canada to ratify an agreement that we will give you an equal chance with Canadians in our market for your goods, and I will set up a Tariff Board to say what is an equal chance."

It is to be noted, further, that United Kingdom manufacturers are given the right to bring their applications before

Canada

the Tariff Board, which presumably is to hold the balance between United Kingdom and Canadian interests just as judiciously as an Admiralty Court does between British and, say, French interests.

Such then is the task set the board. What does it involve, and what prospect is there of its being satisfactorily discharged? It is, of course, much too early to dogmatise. Only one important application invoking article II of the agreement has so far been made, in respect of woollens, and it is only in its early stages. Up to the present, attention has been confined to the endeavour to arrive at a common method of computing costs—no light problem. No attempt has yet been made to work out in practice exactly what is meant by the words of the agreement, "full opportunity of reasonable competition." It has become clear, however, that very divergent views are held. British manufacturers maintain that Canadian customs duties are not to exceed such a level as will equalise costs as between them and Canadian manufacturers. This interpretation is rejected by the Canadian manufacturers, who argue that it would lead to widespread dislocation, and to the disruption of many well-established and efficient Canadian industries. They further argue that it is an entirely erroneous interpretation of the actual terms of the agreement. Attention is drawn to the fact that in article 10 the Canadian Government undertakes that "protection by tariffs shall be afforded against United Kingdom products only to those industries which are reasonably assured of sound opportunities for success." This, it is urged, must mean that "industries which are reasonably assured of sound opportunities for success" are to be "protected," i.e., safeguarded, i.e., assured of the Canadian market, or at any rate, of as much of the Canadian market as is represented by goods that can be economically produced in the Dominion.

If article 10 were the whole story, the foregoing interpretation of the general intention of the parties to the

The Tariff Board and Tariff Policy

agreement would be hard to gainsay. But there is article 11, and it says, as has already been stated, that the Canadian Government undertakes that protective duties—the idea of protection is still adhered to—“shall not exceed such a level as will give United Kingdom producers full opportunity of reasonable competition on the basis of the relative cost of economical and efficient production.” The British interpretation of this, given above, is based on the fact that the only indication of what is meant by “full opportunity of reasonable competition” is the addition of the words “on the basis of the relative cost of economical and efficient production.” In other words the British view is that the only factor to be taken into account in determining what is “reasonable competition” is the comparative production costs, to the exclusion of all other considerations, such as the desirability of maintaining a certain category of employment in Canada, or of preventing the loss of capital invested in Canadian industry. On this view, the single and simple principle to be applied is what the Australian Tariff Board in its last annual report calls the “equalising principle of tariff making,” i.e., the equalising of production costs, so as to bring the price of the imported article to the same level as that of the local product.

The application of such a principle would, in the opinion of the majority of Canadian industrialists, lead to far-reaching dislocation of, and loss of capital invested in, Canadian industry; they maintain that the whole tenour of the Ottawa Conference report, and in particular the blessing it gives to “industrial co-operation within the Commonwealth to secure the best division of industrial activities among the several parts and the ordered economic development of each,” negative an interpretation of the actual agreement that will result not in “ordered economic development,” but in dislocation and curtailment.

To take a concrete example, which as a matter of fact has been cited to the Tariff Board in the course of the hearing of the recent British woollens application: the

Canada

Canadian clothing industry, with some 1,000 plants, employing 50,000 people and producing a total of \$200,000,000 worth of goods, supplies 98 per cent. of the total clothing requirements of the people of Canada. Incidentally, it provides a market for 95 per cent. of the woollen and worsted cloth made in Canada. The spokesman of this industry maintained with considerable vigour that if the tariff on competing imports were based exclusively on the principle of equalising production costs, it might easily lead to the shutting down of a substantial proportion of the plants now operating, with consequent curtailment of employment and loss of capital. Assuming for the sake of argument that such a fear is well founded, does the formula "full opportunity of reasonable competition" require the Tariff Board, and, upon its recommendations, the Government of Canada, to apply the equalising principle regardless of consequences; or is it at liberty, under the agreement, to take into account other considerations, such, for example, as that it is expedient in the national interest that there should be a Canadian clothing industry capable of supplying the bulk of the needs of the Canadian people, and of providing employment for thousands of people, for whom alternative occupation is not in sight? If the "equalising principle" view is correct, it would appear that such considerations are not admissible.

While this all-important question has not been ruled upon by the Canadian Tariff Board, the Australian Tariff Board, in its report for 1933, has expressed its view in clear-cut terms. "While heartily supporting the competitive principle in tariff-making," it "rejects the idea that duties should be merely equalising." "In established efficient industries, where capital and overhead charges enter largely into production costs, the division of the present market between local and overseas producers, by restricting local output, would increase the costs of production, necessitating higher selling prices and the imposition of higher duties to restore reasonably competitive

The Tariff Board and Tariff Policy

conditions." An example given is that of the galvanised iron industry. Inquiry has shown that the costs of production on a domestic output of 60,000 tons per annum would justify a selling price £2 13s. 1d. per ton lower than on half that output, or 30,000 tons per annum. If, then, duties were imposed that would just bring the price of imported galvanised iron to the same level as that of the local product based on an output of 60,000 tons per annum, and the effect was to reduce local output to 30,000 tons per annum, it is clear, the board considers, that "the duty would need to be increased by £2 13s. 1d. per ton to ensure price equality under the new conditions." Such a procedure, the board declares, "would be farcical, for it would involve considerable dislocation of industry, at least temporary idleness of large numbers of trained operatives and of some very highly valuable plant; while ultimately the duty rate would have to be increased and for some appreciable period the cost of galvanised iron, whether imported or local, would be higher than necessary. In the result, the view taken by the Australian Tariff Board is that "a reasonable duty to protect an efficient economic industry should be high enough to raise the landed cost of an overseas product to a level which will

- (a) compensate the local manufacturer for the higher cost (if any) of Australian labour;
- (b) offset the higher costs (if any) of raw materials and overhead charges; and
- (c) provide a marginal advantage in favour of the Australian manufacturer."

As regards the margin postulated, it should, in the view of the board, "be wide enough to secure to efficient Australian manufacturers so much of the market as is represented by goods which can be economically produced in the Commonwealth, but narrow enough to preclude any inefficiency, uneconomic extension, or undue profit-taking." Such is the Australian Tariff Board's view of the proper

interpretation of articles in the United Kingdom-Australia trade agreement that are identical with those in the United Kingdom-Canada agreement.

Whether the Canadian Tariff Board and the Canadian Government will take a similar view remains to be seen. Does such an interpretation give the United Kingdom manufacturer "full opportunity of reasonable competition on the basis of the relative cost of economical and efficient production," which Mr. Bennett has declared to mean "an equal chance in Canadian markets" for United Kingdom goods? Or are the United Kingdom producers entitled to ask that the rates of duty shall be such as will put them on the same footing as if they were located in Canada? Whatever warrant there may be for this latter view, in the wording of the agreement or in authoritative pronouncements as to the intention of the parties, the fact remains that in one Canadian industry after another there has been such over-development, that there is already far more plant and equipment than is required to supply the needs of the Canadian market. In these circumstances it is clear that if a whole series of United Kingdom industries are to be put in a position to compete in Canada on an equal footing with the existing Canadian plants, the result will inevitably be substantial dislocation and loss of invested capital. To such a result strong objection is naturally taken by the Canadian industrialist, who argues that as he has risked his capital on the faith of "protection" being maintained, and as he is giving employment in Canada, and helping to build up the country, he should not be put out of business for the *beaux yeux* of the United Kingdom manufacturer, who, however cheaply he may be able to produce in the United Kingdom, is not giving employment or paying taxes in Canada. Such part of the Canadian market as the domestic manufacturer is unable to supply—there are classes of goods which, because of the smallness of the demand or for other reasons will probably never be made in Canada—might well be secured

The Tariff Board and Tariff Policy

to the United Kingdom manufacturer, provided that it is able adequately to supply it, but the domestic manufacturer should not be driven from domestic markets that he is able to supply. On the contrary—such is Canadian industrialist opinion—tariff rates should be sufficient “protective” to assure him the market, provided that it is in a position to produce economically and efficiently, which condition, so important to the consumer, the Tariff Board should be the judge.

When we turn from Canadian industrialist opinion to consider the general economic structure of the country we are confronted with the fact that, in addition to being seriously over-industrialised, we have very large surpluses of natural products which it is essential to our economic well-being that we should market abroad. It was precisely with a view to marketing these surpluses abroad, in the best market in sight, viz., the United Kingdom, that the Canadian Government undertook to increase the market for Canada for United Kingdom manufactured goods. Some progress in this direction has been made along the line of complementary production as between the two countries but not by any means to the extent of providing a *quid pro quo* for the advantage accorded to Canada in the United Kingdom market. It is further to be noted that the *disadvantage* has gone, apparently for good, when Canadian natural products, wheat in particular, found a market abroad automatically, and when it was unnecessary, in controlling the country's buying and in formulating commercial policy generally, to think in terms of securing such markets abroad for natural products. In future, it looks as though this would become the determining consideration. It is in these circumstances that the carrying out of the trade agreement with the United Kingdom becomes of such importance. The best possible market for our natural products has been secured for a five-year period ending in 1937, and our anxiety with regard to a large part of our selling has been for the moment removed; but the con-

Canada

dition of our retaining that market is that we so direct our buying as to provide a *quid pro quo*.

It will be seen that the function of the Tariff Board in investigating and advising upon the whole question of control of buying is of the most far-reaching importance to the economic well-being of the country. Put at its highest, the task may be regarded as involving the complete revamping, on a more orderly and economically justifiable basis, of the entire industrial structure that has been built up at haphazard over the last two generations. Not that a drastic surgical operation is advisable or possible; but just as there is a growing feeling that there must be some "rationalisation" of our seriously over-developed transportation structure, so there is increased recognition that, in the interests of the consumer and of the country as a whole, there must be elimination of waste and uneconomic conditions generally in industry. It is obvious that such a programme should not, and indeed could not, be carried out in cold blood, or "at one fell swoop." The dislocation, in the way of unemployment created and capital lost, would be too great; and commitments made, on the faith of long-established protective duties, are entitled to consideration. Moreover, there is force in the contention of the Australian Tariff Board that common sense does not permit, and the trade agreement does not require, rigid mathematical adherence to the yard-stick of production costs. Not only should "infant industries" be accorded special treatment, but no industry, it may be argued, should be deprived of protection until its relation has been considered both to the general industrial structure of to-day and to what may reasonably be expected to be the industrial structure of to-morrow. But even on such a basis of interpretation, the conscientious carrying out of the United Kingdom-Canada trade agreement may well lead to a much-needed setting in order of the house of Canadian industry.

Canada.

January 1934.

AUSTRALIA

I. THE FINANCIAL POSITION

THE financial position, as disclosed in June, was that the Commonwealth Government would end the financial year with a surplus of over £3 million, while the States would all have deficits, amounting to £8.6 million (in New South Wales to £4.3 million). Sinking fund payments for the year totalled £7.7 million, so that for all Governments there was a favourable balance on income account, which on final figures amounted to £2.7 million. The States agreed to limit their deficits to £8.5 million for the year 1933-34, and the Commonwealth Bank agreed to finance these deficits by means of treasury bills, on the understanding that some funding of treasury bills should take place during the year. The Commonwealth Government announced its intention of using its improved financial position for the relief of taxation.*

The Commonwealth Government ended the year with a surplus of £3.5 million, in spite of an unforeseen expenditure of £2 million for the relief of wheat growers. Revenue showed an increase of over £7 million, including £5 million for customs and excise, and about £1 million each for sales tax and income tax, in spite of some remission of taxation under both these heads.

There were four possible policies for the Commonwealth Government in respect of their present and prospective surpluses: (1) to reduce State deficits, (2) to pay off debt, (3) to spend any surplus on capital works and the relief of the unemployed and of farmers, or (4) to remit taxation. To the first of these courses the Commonwealth Government were in principle opposed; it was not, in fact, necessary for the maintenance of public confidence, and,

* See THE ROUND TABLE, No. 92, September 1933, pp. 910-914.

Australia

as deficits were being financed by means of treasury bills, the effect would have been deflationary. Repayment of debt was also inappropriate to a period of depression. Free spending, on the other hand, would have had a cold reception from business opinion and might have impaired confidence. Remission of taxation, without any decrease of expenditure, accordingly seemed the most useful contribution that the Government could make to business recovery. Moreover, it was naturally popular. For some time the daily press with singular unanimity had come to the conclusion that heavy taxation was the only bar to further recovery, and the demand for remission was persistent. Once committed to this policy, the Government went to the utmost limit. They proposed to remit taxation to the extent of £7·5 million (about 13 per cent. of all Commonwealth taxation), and to increase expenditure by £1·7 million. The total liability thus imposed on the budget, up to June 1935, would be nearly £16 million. The expectation was that about £11 million of this would be provided by the present improved state of government revenues; the remainder would be met by the accumulated surpluses of the last two years, amounting to about £4·9 million. The statement, being in effect a two years' budget, was of special interest.

The Government, then, decided to give away everything in sight, leaving no reserves for special calls on its revenues. It took this step no doubt partly in order to defend itself in advance from the probable demands of industries, State Governments, pensioners and its own employees. The policy was not, however, quite as reckless as it appeared, because the sobriety of the Treasury estimates of revenue left a probable margin. In any case, circumstances called for a bold constructive policy, which from the Treasury point of view could not avoid some elements of risk.

The net additional expenditure of £1·7 million was made up chiefly of small restorations of certain cuts effected two years ago by the Scullin Government in pensions and public

The Financial Position

service salaries. In addition, £1·5 million was to be added to expenditure from revenue on defence and new works, but this was offset by automatic decreases in other items.

The remissions of direct taxation amounted to £3 million. The special surtax of 10 per cent. on income from property was reduced to 5 per cent., and "personal exertion" rates were reduced by 15 per cent. The land tax and the taxation of insurance companies were substantially reduced. Perhaps the most useful remission was one of 5d. in the £ in the tax on company incomes.

Remissions of indirect taxation amounted to £4·3 million, of which £2·6 million was accounted for by reduction and exemptions in the sales tax. Reductions of tariff rates, mostly in accordance with the Tariff Board's recommendations, accounted for £1·4 million, and excise reductions on beer and spirits for the remainder.

The atmosphere of universal beneficence which pervaded the Federal budget did not extend to State Treasurers. Their task was still the unpleasant one of reducing deficits. The budget proposals are set out below in comparison with the June undertakings and actual results in 1932-33 :—

State Deficits in thousands of £'s

			1932-33 Results	June Undertaking	1933-34 Budget
New South Wales .. ..	..	..	4,271	3,950	3,601
Victoria .. ..	..	..	856	800	700
Queensland .. ..	..	..	1,554	1,850	1,848
South Australia .. ..	..	..	1,009	1,100	933
Western Australia .. ..	..	..	864	750	748
Tasmania .. ..	..	..	55	50	51
Six States .. ..	..	..	8,609	8,500	7,881

The figure of £8·5 million for total deficits was accepted subject to reductions on account of London conversions and of the further efforts that some Treasurers thought possible. On the face of it the budget figures show an improvement, but it is too early in the financial year to forecast how budget plans will turn out. The attitude of

Australia

the States towards the problem varies. Victoria, South Australia and Tasmania follow the deflationary instincts natural to Treasuries. On the other hand, policy in New South Wales and Queensland is guided by a considered resistance to deflation. Western Australia is dominated by the consciousness that it is still "The West," with all its accepted connotation. The reduction in the New South Wales deficit is rather the result of a skilful adjustment of accounts than of any real approach to a balanced budget. One may guess that the three last mentioned States will be content to persist with deficits no greater than at present until opinions change as to the wisdom of this policy, but the present rise in wool prices is likely to put New South Wales and Queensland in a better position next June than their estimates indicate.

The general position was thus satisfactory, for the States were more than holding their own and the Commonwealth was making a bold bid to stimulate private enterprise. The assumption that the taxes remitted would "fructify in the pockets of the people" may prove ill-founded under present conditions, but detailed examination of the taxation remitted suggests that two-thirds of the whole may be expected to pass into active circulation, bringing substantial indirect benefits in the way of employment and profits.

Unfortunately, at this juncture the continued low price of wheat brought the wheat-growers' plight to a head. The price of wheat has been for some months under 2s. a bushel (Australian currency) at country sidings; nor is there any present promise of improvement. Something had to be done for the wheat-grower, but the Government was empty-handed. It had mortgaged its future for two years, and there was nothing more to give away. The cheers that greeted the budget remissions of taxation were still echoing, and it was very embarrassing to reverse the movement so suddenly.

In this dilemma, a tax on flour—always the favourite nostrum of the Country party—won its way against the

The Financial Position

instinctive repugnance of the direct Government supporters. It was in a sense not exactly taxation—at least it was a different sort of taxation from that remitted, and there was a kind of confused appropriateness about it ; so the Government embraced it. In Australia, a tax on essential foods is passed on by means of wage-fixing machinery to the employer, and is eventually borne in large measure by the unsheltered export industries. The flour tax was therefore going to fall in the end on the people most needing relief. For this and other reasons, the proposal raised a hullabaloo, and the Government, retracting, arranged for a loan, to be repaid in three years out of revenue. Any loan for such a purpose aroused indignation in other quarters. The Government appears at this stage to have lost its head, for a series of new expedients was reported almost daily from Canberra. The question became political in the worst sense, and the issue was long uncertain. Relief to the amount of £3 million was the minimum figure on which the Government could make terms with the Country party. In the end the money will be found mainly by a flour tax (£1,600,000), partly by increasing the present ridiculously high protective duty on imported tobacco (£220,000), and partly by abandoning part of the proposed remission of the special 10 per cent. property income tax (£220,000), so that the tax will be 6 per cent. instead of the 5 per cent. indicated in the budget. The rest will be made up out of surplus revenue.

The Government's weak acceptance of a flour tax opens up the dismal prospect of a systematic bolstering up of exports by means of a "home-price" on the commodity exported. Already a Bill has been announced to make more effective the subsidising of butter exports by means of Federal control. We have had the home-price for butter for some years by arrangement within the industry, but the scheme was breaking down under the increased proportion of exports. When the several Governments of the Commonwealth make it possible for producers to dump

Australia

butter on the world market at less than the cost of production, it is difficult to see how the Commonwealth Government can with any decency support Mr. Bruce's recent protests against the narrowing of the British market for Australian dairy produce. Further comment must, however, await the detailed proposals of the Government.

A word may be said on the treasury bill controversy. The Commonwealth Bank still urges a substantial funding of the outstanding bills. A considerable body of opinion holds strongly that it has been the financing of deficits and public works by means of treasury bills that has enabled the country to escape the worst excesses of deflation. A compromise has been reached to this extent, that for the balance of this financial year the Loan Council will raise money for public works on the market, while the Bank will take treasury bills to cover revenue deficits; but there is still disagreement about funding. The matter came to a head in November, when the Loan Council wanted a loan mainly for works, and the Bank one mainly for funding. A compromise was reached by which the loan was equally divided between the two purposes. It seems that the inflationary use of treasury bills is not likely at the most to go further than keeping the volume of bills for some time at its present level, and that any substantial increase on account of deficits will be quickly funded. There are now about £50 million of treasury bills in Australia. Whether the volume is excessive or not must be judged by comparison with the long-term government debt of £600 million, or banking assets totalling £400 million. The bills are held entirely by the banks, and there seems no reason why the market should not be broadened by including other financial houses as customers. Generally, it seems clear that the treasury bill has come to stay as a useful financial instrument.

As a whole, the position of Australia must be regarded as comparatively satisfactory. In the field of public finance, three years ago we faced a total prospective deficit of £40

The Financial Position

million. Last year, we had in effect a surplus on income account for all governments combined; and this year we could have considerably improved on that if it had been worth while. But there are widely different views both as to the significance of the present position and as to the probable effects of the policy pursued.

Credit or responsibility does not belong exclusively to one political party. The predominance of Nationalist Governments does not altogether allay anxiety in respect of financial and economic policy, and in New South Wales counsels of caution find grounds for criticism of both the Commonwealth and State Ministries. On the other hand, it must be remembered that in the Commonwealth Government it was the Scullin Ministry which, though with reluctance, cut pensions, government wages and salaries, reduced interest on loans, and imposed unpopular taxation. As cynical observers three years ago remarked, it was all to the good that a Labour Government should carry out these reforms—they could do it with much less social disturbance than any other party. The Government would be rejected violently at the next election and their opponents come in to reap the fruits. And that, too, was all to the good, because business would recover confidence more quickly and fully under a Government that could be counted upon as sympathetic to the full enjoyment of the fruits of profitable enterprise.

In the matter of external solvency, the change has been equally revolutionary. Dr. Roland Wilson's work on the balance of payments, which is being published in the 1933 *Year-Book*, will repay close study in this connection. For the present year it is reckoned that imports and exports of commodities, taken in conjunction with external interest on public debt (£24·6 million), give a true picture of the balance on current account, because current gold production just about balances the net debit on all other items. On all current items we had a net debit of £42 million in 1928-29, which increased to £72 million in 1929-30 with

Australia

the beginning of the fall in export prices. In 1930-31 it was reduced to £16 million and in 1931-32 actually turned into a credit of £6.4 million. For 1932-33, there was a small debit of £3.8 million. For these two years, therefore, we have achieved a satisfactory balance, in contrast to 1929-30 when the net debit amounted to 62 per cent. of our total credits.

This result justifies the Commonwealth Bank's judgment that an exchange rate held steadily at £125 Australian to £100 sterling was necessary to attain and preserve external solvency, even after the drastic cuts in wages and interest and other internal costs that were carried through in 1931. Yet this exchange rate has not built up the necessary reserves in London against a bad season, and the present balance has been achieved only by reason of a run of exceptionally good seasons. On a more cautious view of prospects, the rate would have been held higher—at 135 or 140—so as to give a safe London reserve. The recent rise in wool prices, however, combined with another good season, has confirmed the Bank's optimism. Wool prices in November were 80 per cent. above the 1932 average, and, after allowing for a light clip and lower prices for wheat and butter, exports should show an increase of about £15 million in the current year. Some expansion of imports will follow, but the net result should be a small but appreciable increase of London reserves.

The Tariff and The Exchange.

The problem of adjusting the tariff so as to avoid the excessive protection given by the depreciation of the Australian pound and the 10 per cent. primage duty on imports was discussed briefly in the September ROUND TABLE.* Reference was made there to an unpublished report of the Tariff Board on the subject, on which the Government had been sitting since Easter. It continued to sit on the report, showing plain indications of unhappiness

* THE ROUND TABLE, No. 92, September 1933, p. 901.

The Financial Position

and exposed to the taunts and jeers of the Country party. The Government was deeply committed to accepting the advice of the Tariff Board, but its protectionist elements were alarmed at the widespread reduction of duties involved. The Board's report, though moderate, was indeed a landmark in tariff policy. The reference of the exchange question to them forced them to consider the relative movement of costs in Australia and abroad, and the evidence was convincing that, in spite of the depreciation of the Australian pound, costs in manufacturing industry, apart from raw material imported, had fallen in relation to British costs. Their conclusion was that the 10 per cent. primage duty could be abolished and all protective duties reduced by one quarter (with a maximum of $12\frac{1}{2}$ per cent.) without danger to Australian industry. This reduction, the Board considered, would still leave some industries over-protected, but would be safe as a general reduction over all protected manufactures. This was the gist of the Board's recommendations, which covered also special provisions of some complexity to deal with depreciated currencies, future movements of the Australian exchange and other special circumstances.

After long hesitation, the Government decided to accept the Board's report with regard to primage and to duties on British imports, leaving imports from other countries, where indeed the evidence was not so clear, for further consideration. The necessary amendments to the tariff passed through Parliament very quietly. The expected opposition both in Parliament and in the country was almost perfunctory. Even the most fanatical of the protectionist papers accepted the revision with almost formal protests. One can only conclude that there has been quite a remarkable recovery of fiscal sanity in Australian public opinion during the last two years.

Presumably the Tariff Board is now authorised in effect to take exchange fully into account in its investigation into individual industries, and one may expect in the

Australia

immediate future a very valuable pruning of the excises of the tariff in a number of important items.

II. CONSTITUTIONAL AND OTHER PROBLEMS

Lieutenant-Governors in Western Australia and Tasmania

THE letters patent constituting the office of Governor in the Australian States provide that during the absence of the Governor the duties of the office shall be discharged by a Lieutenant-Governor, or by an administrator appointed under the Sign Manual and Signet. When a Governor is merely temporarily absent from the seat of government, he may appoint under the Public Seal of the State a Deputy-Governor, if there is no Lieutenant-Governor, or if such officer is absent from the State or unable to act. Sometimes a specific person is appointed Lieutenant-Governor, but in any case a dormant Commission appoints the Chief Justice of the State for the time being, or in his absence, the senior judge, as the Lieutenant-Governor or as the administrator. These arrangements are not without their difficulties.*

If a Lieutenant-Governor is appointed who has been actively associated with a political party, even bona-fide decisions are liable to the suspicion of bias among those who have been opposed to him politically. And if he conceives it to be his duty to use his powers to further the interests of his party—as was expected of the Lieutenant-Governor in Queensland—then the office loses both its independence and its dignity. On the other hand, the appointment of members of the judiciary is not without serious reactions upon the judicial office. It is impossible to ignore the changed temper in party politics in some of

* See THE ROUND TABLE, No. 40, September 1920, for the circumstances in which Mr. Lennon was appointed Lieutenant-Governor and the results of his appointment; No. 59, June 1925, for a Tasmanian case; and No. 61, December 1925, for a full discussion of the method of appointing State Governors and the constitutional issues connected therewith. See also *Correspondence re the Appointment of Governors to Australian States*. Cmd. 2,683. June 1926. Price 1s.

Constitutional and Other Problems

the Australian States, or the growth of the influence that extra-parliamentary bodies can exert upon Ministers. In such circumstances many judges feel that they should not be placed in a position that may involve them in political conflicts. It cannot be too often emphasised that anything which tends to lessen the prestige of the judiciary is to be avoided.

Some of these questions are raised again by the appointment of Sir James Mitchell as Lieutenant-Governor of Western Australia. At the last general election Sir James Mitchell's Cabinet was defeated and was superseded by a Labour Ministry. Sir James Mitchell himself lost his seat. Some time afterwards it was announced that the Chief Justice, Sir John Northmore, had resigned his commission as Lieutenant-Governor, and that Sir James Mitchell had been appointed his successor. Some members of the Labour party strongly criticised this action, and the member who defeated Sir James at the election asserted in Parliament that the Labour Government had not been paid the compliment of prior consultation by the Imperial authorities who were responsible for the appointment. The Labour Premier, Mr. Collier, refused to say whether or not this was true, and even when Sir John Northmore made a public statement regarding the appointment refused to say more than that "matters of this kind are always stipulated to be strictly secret and confidential, and are consequently treated as such by Ministers." Sir John Northmore was not so reticent. In an interview with the press he said that he had expected that the "grotesquely inaccurate statements" about Sir James Mitchell's appointment "would have been authoritatively contradicted." As this had not been done he wished to state "quite definitely that the appointment of Sir James Mitchell as (his) successor was made by the King on the recommendation of the Premier, made through (him) in the ordinary way to the Secretary of State for the Dominions and (he) understood, with the approval of the Cabinet."

Australia

In Tasmania the main interest centres round the manner in which Sir Herbert Nicholls, the Chief Justice, resigned his office as Lieutenant-Governor, although the fact that his successor was some time ago active in politics raises in a minor degree the same issues as in Western Australia. The Premier, Mr. McPhee, intimated to the press that he had been told by Sir Herbert that he had forwarded his resignation to the Dominions Office. It was not clear that there had been any prior consultation with the Government. Subsequently it was stated that the King had accepted the opinion of the State Government that Sir Elliott Lewis might most suitably fill the position. Sir Elliott had been twice Premier of Tasmania, and had held other ministerial offices. He resigned from active politics in 1922, and has devoted himself to his practice as a solicitor. Since 1924 he has been Chancellor of the University of Tasmania.

Politics in Western Australia and Tasmania are fortunately free from the bitterness and factiousness that characterise some of the other States, and the appointments of both Sir James Mitchell and Sir Elliott Lewis have been well received. Nevertheless, the constitutional aspects of such appointments have been in no sense clearly worked out. At the same time, if persons who have been active in politics are eliminated from consideration, and if the judicial office is likely to be adversely affected, it will be very difficult to obtain a Lieutenant-Governor with the necessary qualifications for the office. And yet the political history of Queensland might have been very different had a non-party Lieutenant-Governor been appointed.

Increase in Federal Parliamentary Salaries.

Members of Parliament must grow accustomed to the animadversions of their opponents, and even to the criticism of their friends, but it is seldom that all members, irrespective of party, come under a common lash. This has been the experience of Federal members who recently

Constitutional and Other Problems

voted themselves a "restoration" of £75 per annum in their parliamentary "allowances" during a discussion of a measure appropriately entitled "A Financial Relief Bill."

As part of their "sacrifice" under the Premiers' plan, members of the Federal Parliament reduced their allowances by 25 per cent., as against the 20 per cent. reduction applied to similar salaries paid to public servants of the Commonwealth. That is to say, the allowance was reduced to £750 per annum, from £1,000 per annum, to which sum it had been raised in 1920. The restoration was approximately equal to the relief granted in the Commonwealth budget to the public servants.

It was unfortunate that the "increase" should have been voted not long after the Federal Arbitration Court had ruled that the economic circumstances of the country did not yet justify the restoration of the 10 per cent. cut in the basic wage that had been imposed on wage-earners as part of the plan for the rehabilitation of industry. It was doubly unfortunate that it should have occurred on the very day that the New South Wales Arbitration Court declared a further reduction in the basic wage (in that State), for men from £3 8s. 6d. per week to £3 6s. 6d., and for women from £1 17s. 0d. per week to £1 16s. 0d.

On the other hand, it is true that the Commonwealth budget showed a considerable surplus, although the States have still serious budgetary problems. And it is also true that, although the Federal Government was making generous remission of taxation, it had threatened to go to the electors rather than concede widespread demands to restore the "cuts" that had been made in old age pensions.

Some of these things made the "restoration" to members not a little incongruous, and the political manoeuvres accompanying it, and still more the exaggerations in the press, aroused indignation. The editorial columns of the press, irrespective of party affiliation, reflected the storm of popular feeling, which found voice in trenchant denunciations from platform and pulpit. The conservative press

Australia

vied with the normally less restrained journals in its use of disparaging and sarcastic captions, which ranged from such phrases as: "Another Salaries Grab," "The Galled Jade," and "The £75 Look," to "The Salaries Blunderstorm," "At the Burglar's Hour," "An Inglorious Exhibition of Political Greed." Labour organisations, which stand for the principle of increased wages, resented the action of their own political representatives as damaging to the workers' cause.

Members first affected astonishment, then attempted justification, and, finally, stung by one particularly cynical criticism in a Sydney journal, moved in the House to hale to the bar the editor and the publisher of the paper. And they also threatened reprisals by attacks upon the postal and telegraphic concessions afforded to newspapers.

Fortunately, wiser counsels prevented precipitate action, and when, after a lapse of nearly a fortnight, the directors of the offending newspaper explained that the article had not intended to reflect upon the personal honour of members, Parliament decided that its dignity had been vindicated.

Legislative Council Elections in New South Wales

The election of the reformed Legislative Council of New South Wales has brought to a close one of the most memorable chapters in the constitutional history of that State. After the acceptance of the reform by the people,* Parliament set about providing the machinery for the election. The validity of this legislation was unsuccessfully challenged in the State Courts, but an appeal to the Privy Council is now pending.

Meanwhile the election of new members has been held under a system of proportional representation. There were four ballots, at each of which fifteen members were

* For an account of the fight for the reform of the Legislative Council and the result of the referendum, see THE ROUND TABLE, Nos. 91 and 92, June and September 1933.

Constitutional and Other Problems

elect to hold office for twelve, nine, six, and three years respectively. (In future, at the end of every three years, fifteen members will be elected for a term of twelve years.) The writ for the elections is returnable on January 17, 1934, and the new Council will be constituted on a subsequent date to be proclaimed.

Twenty-three of the 118 sitting members did not seek election to the new Council, and of the 126 nominations received 68 were made by Government supporters, 45 by the Lang Labour party, and six by the Federal Labour party, while seven stood as Independents. The ballots were held at intervals of a fortnight, commencing on November 2, and each candidate had four chances of election.

With so many candidates, and with party feeling inflamed, as it was, by the bitterness that the project of reform had engendered, it was inevitable that there should be a vigorous canvassing of votes. The Government had refrained from "running a ticket," but agreed upon a group that it recommended as worthy of support. The Lang Labour party not only had a carefully prepared ticket, but attempted to regiment its supporters into voting a meticulously marked "individual ticket," which was distributed to each supporter. It confidently asserted that it would be able to check how each person voted, despite the stringent precautions to preserve the secrecy of the ballot.

Not only were these predictions falsified, but the results of the ballots provided not a few surprises. While the Government supporters secured the full thirty-six seats to which their voting strength entitled them, the Opposition was split on unexpected lines. Of the 24 Opposition members returned, no less than five represented Federal Labour, and two were Independents, whose success has caused considerable heart-burning. Those people who had hoped to see a Council composed predominantly of new members have the satisfaction of knowing that there are nine new faces in the House (seven being Government sup-

Australia

porters) in addition to 14 members who were appointed by the present Government last year. In other words, slightly more than one-third of the House can be regarded as "new."

There is little doubt that the quality of the new Council will be soon tested. Most people, however, will agree with the statement of the Premier, Mr. Stevens, that "the new Council is one which will give the people a sense of security, and which by its sane outlook and practical wisdom will gain and retain the confidence of the whole community."

The Idea of Longer Parliaments

The desirability of securing some continuity in the working out of the various "plans" for rehabilitating the fortunes of the Commonwealth has provoked some interest in the idea of "longer" parliaments. The matter was considered by the Royal Commission on the Commonwealth Constitution, and the majority report* recommended the extension of the term for which members of the House of Representatives should be elected, from three to four years. The proposal was made partly out of sympathy with members campaigning over the immense areas that characterise many of the Australian electorates, and partly upon a consideration of factors affecting the internal working of Parliament.

In the South Australian election campaign of April, 1933, the leader of the anti-Labour forces (Mr. R. L. Butler) urged that five-year parliaments would promote economic stability, foster political harmony and reduce the expense and dislocation associated with elections. Although the proposal evoked little popular interest, Mr. Butler proceeded, on his assumption of office, to put it into effect. He brought down a Bill to amend the constitution of South Australia by extending the life of the Assembly from three to five years, and of the Council from six to ten years. The

* Report of the Royal Commission on the Constitution, 1929 (F. 1251), Government Printer, Canberra, pp. 268 and 304.

Constitutional and Other Problems

Bill passed the Assembly with the necessary constitutional majority, but an amendment by a supporter of the Ministry, to the effect that the term of the Legislative Council should not be extended, destroyed the argument that the number and expense of elections would be diminished.

By the time the Bill reached the Legislative Council, vigorous and unexpected public opposition had developed. It was contended that even if Mr. Butler had mooted the idea in his policy speech, the real issue upon which he had fought the election was a promise to continue to adhere to the Premiers' plan. He could not claim that the principle of extended parliaments had been endorsed by the electorate.

The Council, therefore, compromised. It refused to extend its own life without first consulting the electors (the Legislative Council is elected), but it agreed that Mr. Butler was reasonably entitled to have the life of the Assembly extended to five years.

As the Bill left the Council it contained but one section, which limited the extension to the life of the present Assembly. This destroyed the principle of the Bill, but nevertheless the Government accepted it. Moving that the Assembly accept the Council's amendments, the Premier gave an assurance for himself and his Ministers that before the expiry of the present Assembly's term of office a further Bill embodying the original principle would be brought down. By that time, people would have had an opportunity of estimating the value of the reform. The Labour party bitterly opposed both the principle and the compromise. It contended that Mr. Butler could not control the Council, even if he could pledge his Ministers, while it was highly unlikely that the Council would assist Labour to gain office for the five-year period proposed.

Although the immediate political reaction to the South Australian experiment has been the decision of the Queensland Labour Government to amend the constitution of that State by making it impossible to reconstitute an Upper

Australia

House, or to extend the life of parliament without first taking a referendum,* the modern tendency to engage in "planning" the economic and financial life of the community may necessitate the adoption of longer parliaments. And this suggestion is strengthened by a consideration of political developments. The frequency with which threats are made by Opposition parties, that they will denounce agreements, or reverse policies, or terminate appointments, shows how far present-day parliaments have departed from the Victorian ethic, while the uncertainty that is engendered seriously disorganises commerce and industry. Five-year parliaments might lengthen the time for working out rival policies. At the same time, the post-war experience of Great Britain, Canada, and South Africa, who have quinquennial parliaments, shows that they have not enjoyed more political stability than has South Australia under a triennial system.

Government Difficulties

"Generally unsettled with occasional heavy squalls" aptly describes the recent political weather reports from Canberra and Melbourne. The Canberra unsettlement is principally connected with implementing the Ottawa agreements, the difficulties of which were foreshadowed in the Australian contribution to the September issue of this review,† but not a little is due to the efforts of sectional interests to appropriate some of the benefits that the improved financial condition allows the Federal Government to distribute. Apart from the crisis over the old age pensions referred to in another paragraph, the Government has been subject to constant pressure by insurgent

* Those who recollect that in 1907 the Queensland Parliament passed a measure requiring that any disagreement between the Assembly and the Council should be submitted to a referendum, and that in defiance of such a vote, in 1917, the Council was abolished, may be forgiven for being a little cynical about this proposal. See ROUND TABLE, No. 40, September 1920.

† See THE ROUND TABLE, No. 92, September 1933, p. 895.

Constitutional and Other Problems

groups. For example, there have been organised raids by representatives of rural interests; there has been the agitation of various interests to have the land tax abolished, of commercial interests to have the sales tax and primage reviewed, of the defence interests, pleading unsettled world conditions as a reason for spending more upon armaments, while the only discordant note in a chorus demanding further reductions in the cost of government has come from the public servants. These influences are reflected in the budget and its history, which are dealt with in the previous section.

Far more difficult has been the task of tariff revision. At the last election, the Country party had vigorously assailed the policy of the Labour Government in imposing prohibitive duties, as well as some embargoes upon imports. But when Mr. Lyons refused the Country party's demand for the customs and other portfolios as a price for their support, the long-standing coalition with Dr. Page's supporters was broken. Dr. Page showed his chagrin by announcing that the Lyons Government would probably be short-lived, and from time to time the smouldering resentment of the Country party at its exclusion from office flames up to the embarrassment of the Government. Its general line of attack is against the sloth and neglect of the Government in its tariff policy, which is also alleged to be in "violation of the spirit of Ottawa." But English primary producers use the same phrase to condemn the Australian practice of export levies to enable products to be sold in English markets cheaper than at home.*

On the other hand, the Labour party and the manufacturers violently assert that "the egregious blunder of Ottawa is denuding Australian manufacturers of the protection which the people wish them to have." And the Lyons Government is warned that "its recreant, defiant attitude on the fiscal question has strengthened the determination of the people that at the next election they will

* See *The Spectator* of August 4, 1933.

Australia

take added precautions to ensure that the national policy of protection will be more rigorously maintained." The reply of the Ministry is that the tariff legislation and the work of the Tariff Board "answer in full the unjustifiable assertion of sectional and often self-seeking interests that the Government is not honouring its pre-election tariff promises nor implementing the Ottawa Agreement."

In Victoria strained relations between the United Australia party and the Country party have existed for some time, and have been intensified by personalities. The Government is dependent upon the co-operation of the Country party, but that party has for some time shown a disposition to use its strategic position to extort concessions in return for support, while some of its members have developed such an attitude of intransigence as to paralyse legislative action. Some proposals of the Government (as in the Transport Bill) have been rejected with little reason, and this has had the effect of holding up other legislation aiming at rural rehabilitation. Although there is agreement upon the broad lines of a rural programme, there is discord over methods. Farmers' relief, bulk handling of wheat, the marketing of dairy produce and the milk supply, all reveal acute differences, which were still unsettled in the last days of the session.

The Premier, Sir Stanley Argyle, has shown a disposition to temporize, and this has been interpreted as weakness, but occasionally—as in the recent by-elections—he has "taken the gloves off" and attacked the insurgents for their disruptive tactics. Nevertheless, the petty bickering has discredited the Government. Electors are not disposed to inquire too closely into the personal quarrels of the groups and factions, but they are concerned that these things shall not threaten the initiation of legislation that may provide a basis for rehabilitation. At the recent triennial Australasian conference of the Country party a more tractable spirit was manifested, and resolutions were adopted agreeing to co-operation with the United Australia party,

Constitutional and Other Problems

especially in Victoria and the Commonwealth. This has gone far to relieve the anxiety that was tincturing the otherwise improving feeling of confidence. For even with wool keeping up, high prices for gold, successful conversions of overseas loans and of local issues, and prospects of another good season, it was feared that political dissension might wreck all the efforts of the past three years.

Notwithstanding the improvements just mentioned, all the State Governments are anxious about the lagging return of "prosperity." The amounts needed for food relief have fallen to the lowest levels since the depression. This is partly, but not solely, the result of government expenditure upon relief works. There is a vigorous body of opinion that favours increased government expenditure upon public works, but the difficulty is to find the works that are "economic" under present conditions.

Australia.

December 21, 1933.

SOUTHERN AFRICA

I. POLITICAL CHRONICLE

ON January 26 the Union Parliament will meet again after a seven months' recess. It will take into review the record of what General Smuts has described as an *annus mirabilis* in South African history—it will look out upon the future with substantial confidence, coupled, however, with an intriguing curiosity as to the nature of the scenes that are to be enacted on the political stage.

As for 1933, South Africa is one of the few countries that can look back on it with almost unalloyed satisfaction. The political situation has changed during the last twelve months out of all recognition—and the change has been entirely for the better. In the economic sphere the recovery has been most encouraging, and the future is full of promise.

There can be no question of the success of coalition in allaying the strife of a generation, as far at least as most of the leaders and the great majority of their followers are concerned. General Hertzog and General Smuts had fought one another strenuously, often bitterly, for twenty years. The gap between them seemed to be unbridgeable. But the very intensity of the political strife that has so often prevailed in South Africa, and the magnitude of the issues round which that strife has revolved, have tended to develop in its people a political mindedness, of which one of the characteristics is a genius for compromise. Its political leaders are good fighters, but they have the good fighter's characteristic of being able to turn his back on the bitterness of the struggle when the time has come for

Political Chronicle

peace. The two Generals are co-operating to-day in a spirit of real friendliness ; the Cabinet gives little continuing evidence of the heterogeneity of its origin. Hardly less significant is the real change of heart over a great part of South Africa to-day. Between Afrikaans-speaking and English-speaking South Africans there has been a great growth of mutual confidence. More striking still has been the disappearance in most of the country districts of that form of bitterness which has of late gone deepest into South African life, the bitterness of feeling between Afrikaans-speaking South African party men and Afrikaans-speaking Nationalists. The party feeling that poisoned the wells of friendship and co-operation between those who had essentially the same interests and outlook has gone ; the virulent opponents of a year ago now rejoice in chipping one another good humouredly as they recall incidents in the battles of the past.

All this undoubtedly represents a major political achievement, of importance not only in respect of South Africa's internal relations, but also because of the enhancement of the Union's prestige and of the good will towards it that has, one would hope, been called forth in the other member-States of the Commonwealth and elsewhere.

Since South Africa is not Utopia, no one would expect the political developments that have taken place to have commanded absolutely universal approbation. In a sense the completeness of the success of the coalition movement has provided the occasion for the reaction that has revealed itself. The coalition agreement between the leaders postulated the maintenance by the two parties of their respective identities. Yet to great masses of the Afrikaans-speaking people coalition and what it represented seemed so entirely right that almost at once the question was raised, "Why stop at coalition ?" Coalition was in the nature of things a temporary expedient. What was to follow it ? A return to party strife on the old lines seemed unthinkable. There was no effective alternative, it was

Southern Africa

clear, to the fusion or union of the South African and Nationalist parties. Without waiting for the leaders, the rank and file initiated a movement to that end. Into that movement the leaders found themselves irresistibly drawn.

Inasmuch, however, as there had been certain elements in both parties that had accepted coalition without enthusiasm, it was only natural that they should find fusion somewhat strong meat. At the outset the fusion movement was a rural movement. There was little enthusiasm for it among the English-speaking supporters of the South African party in the towns. Natal, in particular, sturdily distinctive in its outlook, and by virtue of its consciousness of a specifically British tradition inclined to be intensely suspicious of General Hertzog and of much that he has stood for in the past, might have been expected to regard fusion almost as some new Pan-Afrikaner conspiracy. In fact, however, General Smuts has obtained the adherence of his whole party for the principle of fusion. At the party congress in each of the four provinces, including Natal, he secured a unanimous vote; indeed the Natal congress was the most enthusiastic of them all. There was magnificent leadership underlying this achievement. The leadership, however, found its response in what has undoubtedly been in the nature of a swelling wave of national feeling. The readiness of the British minority in South Africa to turn away from the old suspicions, for the nurture of which it was always possible to find abundant material, may yet come to be regarded as one of the big things in South African history.

General Hertzog has been less fortunate than General Smuts. When first he decided on coalition he was strenuously opposed within his Cabinet and his party by one of the ablest of his colleagues, Dr. D. F. Malan, the leader of the Nationalists in the Cape Province. Eventually Dr. Malan agreed to give the coalition conditional support, though he remained outside the Government. There was, however, ground for the suspicion that even this con-

Political Chronicle

disposal support was accorded merely to ensure the return of his followers at last year's general election. Certainly no one was surprised when Dr. Malan attacked the fusion movement as a violation of the coalition agreement, and gave utterance to criticisms of ever-increasing acerbity of the Coalition Government, and more especially of the Prime Minister. Able, determined, a master of political manoeuvre, Dr. Malan is a dangerous political opponent. His control of most of the Nationalist press places exceedingly effective instruments at his disposal. And since the appeals to sentiment—the awakening of the memories of South Africa's uneasy past—which General Hertzog himself so largely used in building up the Nationalist party, have not yet lost all their value as ammunition in political warfare, he can see clearly marked out before him the natural path for the leader of a reactionary party to tread.

Hence the issue of fusion has been stoutly fought at the provincial congresses of the Nationalist party. At the Cape congress, in his own province, Dr. Malan prevailed. In the other three provinces General Hertzog carried the day, not, however, without some difficulty, especially in the Free State. As a result, the majority of the Nationalist party is committed to the principle of fusion. The Cape section of the party officially stands out, although an "invasion" of the Cape by General Hertzog and his Nationalist colleagues in the Cabinet revealed that there, too, the Prime Minister can count on a substantial following for the cause that he has espoused. There can be no doubt that when the two leaders come forward with an agreed basis and programme for the new united party, it will be acclaimed by the great mass of the South African nation.

So, then, in most of South Africa a very much healthier feeling has come to prevail. It is with a sigh of relief that political strife has been allowed to lapse into the background, and that the energies thus released are being diverted to the task of economic reconstruction. In that task, too,

Southern Africa

substantial progress has been made in 1933. The opportunity offered by what may conveniently be called the gold premium has been effectively seized. The Witwatersrand, still essentially youthful in its vitality and its adaptability, has responded with enthusiasm to the new stimulus. The flotation of fresh ventures, the expansion of existing propositions, the undertaking of new developments, have proceeded apace. Confidence has been stimulated, and expectations have soared. Much of the activity has, of course, been merely speculative, but speculation very often both opens the way to, and provides the means for, constructive progress, and during this last year much has undoubtedly been done to lay solid foundations for an extension at once of the present scope and of the expectation of life of South Africa's major industry. Even the heavy taxation on the mining industry imposed during the last session of Parliament did little to slow up the process. Such effect as it might have had was rapidly neutralised by the increase in the price of gold.

For South Africa in general the Witwatersrand is a radiating centre of prosperity. An improvement of conditions there communicates itself over an ever-widening circle. So it has been during the last year. The recovery in agriculture was, however, considerably retarded by drought conditions as bad as any that South Africa has experienced for more than half a century. The croakers, who declared that South Africa is drying up, or painted lugubrious word pictures of the encroachment of the desert, seemed to have all the evidence that they needed to prove their theses. To-day, however, they are silent. As ever the land of contrasts, South Africa has passed from the utmost severity of drought conditions to abundance of fructifying showers. Again the desert is blossoming like the rose; great stretches of the Karroo are a very riot of variegated flowers. It is long since the indications of agricultural prosperity have been as favourable as they are to-day. In its measures of immediate agricultural relief

Political Chronicle

the Government has been favoured with the assistance of Nature beyond even its wildest hopes. As a result it finds itself in a most advantageous position for attacking the permanent problems of rural poverty and retrogression, the solution of which is essential for the Union's future welfare.

If the year that has come to an end is to be regarded with satisfaction and gratitude, what of the prospects for the year that lies ahead? On the economic side there is, as will appear from what has been said, every reason for confidence. There are, of course, some factors that make for caution. Bounteous rains have brought floods in their train, and the valley of the Orange river, one of the few river valleys in South Africa that lend themselves to really productive land settlement, has been laid waste. There have been unprecedentedly heavy infestations of locusts from the north, reminding South Africa of its connection with the African continent, and at the same time emphasising the interdependence of the Union, the protectorates, and Southern Rhodesia, if only by virtue of the fact that the work of extermination in the Union itself may be rendered to a large extent futile if the locust is left to breed without restraint in its border territories. Moreover the return of prosperity to the Union has been bound up with the gold premium, and the lesson of South Africa's dependence on world conditions has been too effectively forced home in recent years for the possible repercussions of a continuance or an aggravation of the present instability in the world economic position not to be appreciated. These, certainly, are factors that make for caution. They serve, however, merely to temper, not to destroy, the prevailing optimism.

There is perhaps more uncertainty in regard to the political prospects. There can be little doubt, even in this country of surprises, that the fusion of the parties will be effected. There need be little fear that the present harmony between General Hertzog and General Smuts will

Southern Africa

be disturbed. As for questions of policy there is no present sign of substantial disagreement. The native issue is not likely to be forced. For the rest, rocks at present submerged may come to present a threat of danger. The recent reversal, for instance, by the Privy Council of a famous Haldane judgment, when it agreed to hear an appeal from a decision of the Supreme Court in South Africa on a matter raising no principle of special importance, threatens to bring up the whole question of the abolition of such appeals, an issue on which a cleavage might easily arise. It is probable, however, that the necessity of avoiding big constitutional questions will be appreciated, and the present truce maintained.

There remains the possibility of trouble arising from a source whose potential danger, especially to a coalition government, is not usually recognised—the difficulty of satisfying the aspirations of political supporters in the apportionment of such openings for preferment as present themselves. All the probabilities, however, point towards a surmounting of these and other difficulties and towards a development of the present arrangement of convenience into a permanent partnership. On the face of it, of course, General Smuts's tactical position might seem to be exceedingly strong. He can count on a united following, whereas General Hertzog's party appears to be irretrievably split, with the result that he would seem to be entirely dependent on the good will of his former opponent. One must, however, avoid the danger of judging the situation too narrowly. General Smuts is in any case not the man to abuse a tactical advantage such as he now holds; if he were disposed to do so, it is doubtful whether the nation would forgive him. General Hertzog may have lost a considerable section of his own immediate following, but he has gained tremendously in prestige and in good will in the country as a whole. It is to-day unthinkable that the termination of his premiership, otherwise than at his own strongly expressed desire, would be tolerated.

Political Chronicle

The uncertain factor in the situation is rather that presented by Dr. Malan. It is clear that when Parliament meets he will not find more than fifteen or twenty followers to support him in opposition to Generals Hertzog and Smuts. It is admitted that, if after the fusion of the parties a general election is held, probably not more than half a dozen of those followers would be returned. Yet history has a knack of repeating itself in South Africa. Dr. Malan's position to-day is peculiarly similar to that of General Hertzog himself twenty years ago, when he went out into the wilderness with but a handful of parliamentary followers, out of whom he created the great Nationalist party. The party cries that were used in those days are for the most part still ready to Dr. Malan's hand to-day. The right of secession, neutrality in time of war, he has always espoused; with republicanism as a slogan he is already toying; he is sedulously at work in the graveyard of bitter memories of the past. He and his followers will not fail to raise any issue out of which sentimental capital may be made. Will he repeat General Hertzog's own success? Will he also in time secure a majority following pledged to support his views? The question is one of very considerable importance. If Dr. Malan fails, then it may be accepted that the issue of South Africa's continued association with the Commonwealth on the basis of the Statute of Westminster is settled for a considerable time to come. If he succeeds, then we may look forward to the raising from South Africa of issues very similar to those which are being raised from Ireland at the present moment by President de Valera.

The probabilities seem to point towards the conclusion that Dr. Malan will not succeed. For one thing, he is a good dozen years older than General Hertzog was when he started on his crusade; for another he is at a disadvantage as compared with his former chief both in personality and in power of popular appeal. Moreover it is at least doubtful if the old sentimental slogans will be as potent

Southern Africa

in their effects to-day as they were twenty years ago, when country audiences were less sophisticated, when the events that gave them their significance were fresher in men's memories, and when the outbreak of a European war created conditions that greatly increased their potency. It would, however, be foolish to ignore the possibility of the emergence of factors, inside and outside South Africa, that would have an opposite tendency to those which have been mentioned. The potential significance of Dr. Malan's opposition to the fusion movement sponsored by General Hertzog and General Smuts should not be under-estimated.

II. THE ALTOGETHERNESS OF EVERYTHING

THE Union has many neighbours. Both they and the Union itself are daily becoming more conscious of one another, a consciousness that is not always accompanied by a sense of comfort. A summary of their mutual relations during the past few months compels a realisation of what someone has so aptly called "the altogetherness of everything."

At the close of 1932 the Union slid off the gold standard, achieved a premium on the gold of which it is far and away the world's greatest producer, and made possible big further developments of the low-grade ore of the Rand. The commercial clauses of the Mozambique Convention of 1928 were already irksome*; the demands of the mines for native labour brought into sharper relief than ever the clauses that limit the Union's recruiting rights in Portuguese East Africa. Hence, in September, 1933, the Pretoria Government exercised its right to demand a revision of the Convention. Immediately afterwards the Union authorities set aside a long-standing prohibition against the recruitment of tropical natives for the gold

* See THE ROUND TABLE, No. 72, September 1928, p. 883, and No. 73, December 1928, p. 210.

The Altogetherness of Everything

mines, and agreed to an experimental importation of 2,000 men from beyond latitude 22° south. That resolution must affect the local labour supply of both the Rhodesias, and possibly of Nyasaland.

Nor is that all. General Smuts has always looked to an extension of the Union's influence northwards, and, by the same token, Pretoria has just been put into telephonic communication with Lusaka, the new capital of Northern Rhodesia. Mr. Pirow, the Nationalist Minister for Defence in our Coalition Cabinet, has been planning an aerial base at Durban, the replacing of pre-war guns in the forts there and in the Cape Peninsula, and the mechanisation of the defence force. He speaks with foreboding of the possible, though far-off, day when the Union may be called upon to defend European women and children in territories far to the north that have conformed to our policy of "differentiation between black and white and (the) maintenance of white superiority," against the black warriors of territories in which "the policy of assimilation is being applied to its logical conclusion." Meanwhile, the French Air Ministry has discreetly released talk of a French aeroplane service from Paris to Katanga, hard by the Northern Rhodesian frontier. And at the moment when the Union had concluded a shipping agreement with Italy and was about to scrap both the last vestiges of its own navy, Italian submarines appeared in its ports, the first such vessels to circumnavigate Africa.

Drawn thus closer to her northern neighbours by air, telephone, and ministerial vaticination, the Union sees these neighbours threatening to draw away from her economically. Some time back, Northern Rhodesia gave notice of withdrawal from its customs agreement with the Union. In December, 1933, Southern Rhodesia followed suit, though avowedly with a view to revision.

There has also been a revival of the idea of the amalgamation of the two Rhodesias. In April, 1933, a group of unofficial members of the Northern Rhodesian legislature,

Southern Africa

headed by Mr. L. E. Moore, of Livingstone, abandoned their opposition to the idea in face of the Governor's suggestion of a wider employment of natives rather than expensive Europeans in the humbler ranks of the police and various other departments. Their motion in favour of amalgamation was defeated. Nevertheless, south of the Zambesi, the Rhodesian party, which until recently held office at Salisbury, adopted as a plank in its election platform closer union with Northern Rhodesia and the incorporation of the Tati district and the northern Bechuanaland Protectorate. Its rival, the Reform party, went further still and proposed "confederation or other form of union" with "neighbouring territories," thus leaving the door open for closer working with the Union. But it is noteworthy that no one in Southern Rhodesia had a good word to say for General Hertzog when, in November, 1932, still in his pre-coalition manner, he announced that the "ultimate fate" of the colony was incorporation in the Union. That incorporation, he declared, could only take place on the basis of unification as distinct from federation, equality of English and Afrikaans, and no restrictions on the settlement of Rhodesian lands by Union citizens. Those principles had ensured the rejection of General Smuts's more tactful offer ten years before; they are certain to ensure rejection in any future worth present consideration.

Next comes the matter of railways. These promise to play once more their accustomed part of bringing the States of southern Africa closer together, and to loggerheads. Both the leading political parties in Southern Rhodesia desire a railway corridor to the west coast as an alternative to Beira, where they find the amiable but leisurely Portuguese officials something of a burden. One projected route runs from the middle Zambesi to Tiger Bay near the mouth of the Kunene river down the Caprivi Zipfel, which is South West African soil, mandated to the Union. The alternative route runs down to Walfish Bay, in South West Africa again; in addition it traverses the Bechuanaland

The Altogetherness of Everything

Protectorate, on which Southern Rhodesia has always had its eye, and provision for whose inclusion in the Union is made in the South Africa Act. Does this spell more complications?

The Bechuanaland Protectorate has been in the limelight recently owing to the suspension and reinstatement by the Imperial authorities of Tshekedi Khama, regent of the Bamangwato.* Behind that picturesque incident and the march of Vice-Admiral Evans's marines lies the whole question of the continued Imperial administration of Bechuanaland, Basutoland and Swaziland. The Union has always envisaged the day when it would take over the Imperial "islands," and it cannot be doubted that this Tshekedi affair brings that question to the front once more.

Lastly, South West Africa is stirring uneasily, sinking deeper into debt to the Union, and fretting against the Union's trade and railway policies. Nazi enthusiasms are ranging the bulk of the Germans against the pro-Union British and Afrikanders, with repercussions in the Windhoek legislature and in its relations with the Union authorities.

Let the mere list of these interlocking policies and problems, all the way round the Union's borders from Mozambique to the mouth of the Orange river, stand thus baldly on record. Perhaps, later on, it will be possible to show them all more adequately under one view. For the present it must be enough to single out three matters for more detailed examination: (a) the Italian shipping subsidy, (b) the Tshekedi incident, and (c) the position in Southern Rhodesia.

(a) *The Italian Shipping Subsidies*

The subsidy to the Italian shipping companies appears to have been arranged by Mr. A. P. J. Fourie before the coalition was formed, and the agreement was taken over by the new Government. It provides for a subsidy of £150,000 per annum for five years to the Italia and Libera

* See THE ROUND TABLE, No. 48, September 1922, p. 910, No. 49, December 1922, p. 200.

Southern Africa

lines. It is stated that the Italian Government has also granted a subsidy of £300,000 per annum towards the new services. The Italia line, commencing on March 8, will provide a fast four-weekly service to Dakar, Gibraltar, Marseilles and Genoa. The time to Marseilles from Cape Town will be 14½ days. The boats are fitted with 90,000 cubic feet of refrigerated space for fruit and other perishable products. The Libera line will provide a semi-fast service to Mediterranean ports via both East and West African ports, and a monthly service via nearly all coast ports. Sailings between most of these and the Cape are at present very irregular. Trade does not justify regular sailings, and the absence of regular transport adds to the difficulties of building up the trade.

The two main objects of the agreement appear to be to secure trade with south European countries through the fast service, and to open up new markets for Union products in Africa through the semi-fast and slow services. The Italian companies are members of the Ocean Freight Conference, so that the fixed rates to Mediterranean and north European ports will apply. The west and east coast African ports, however, are not affected by the Conference. The Union Government will therefore control the rates on this route.

For some time there have been complaints about the difficulty of opening up new trade connections in Africa owing to the absence of regular sailings to certain ports, and the high freights charged where existing lines already call. The last report of the South African Shipping Board pointed out that freight rates to the natural export markets of South African industries, especially in East Africa, are often higher than rates to those markets from overseas countries. Representatives of the shipping companies naturally replied that freights must be affected by the volume of trade. This is a perfectly valid argument so far as the ports are concerned that at present have no direct regular communication with the Cape. Even

The Altogetherness of Everything

though one or two lines have offered to put into any port if the freight available amounted to £50, in the absence of a subsidy it could not be expected that such small quantities could be carried at as low a cost as freight on the regular routes, for these freights would be the only inducement to call. The argument of the shipping interests is not so strong when it is applied to East African ports at which boats call regularly. If the calls are to be made in any case, competition would not necessarily result in the peak portion of the traffic paying lower rates than the other portions. But when competition with the Conference lines arose in the past, the Union Government did nothing to prevent their use of "clubbing" devices to drive out the competitor.

In the absence of legislation that would make competition possible, and in the knowledge that in any case competition could not provide the services to many ports where Union producers believe that they could ultimately develop markets, most people in the Union have regarded the subsidies to foreign ships simply as one of the ordinary forms of protecting new industries. The criticism has been not so much against subsidies as a temporary expedient, as of the probability of their being worth while, and of the secret methods by which they have been arranged without any attempt to find out whether other lines could have provided facilities at a lower rate. On the former point the *Cape Times* estimated that, during the first six months of 1933, the total export trade of the Union to the ports served by the new arrangement amounted in value to about £131,000; a very great increase would be necessary to justify the subsidy. More, indeed, was expected from the fast sailings to Marseilles and Genoa than from the opening up of the coast ports. Doubts were expressed whether France would agree to allow, without restriction, the import of goods carried on the subsidised Italian line. But the difficulty of developing the African trade at all in view of the present high rates made many business

Southern Africa

men consider that this was too pessimistic a view. Criticism has concentrated mainly on the way the subsidy has been arranged. The suggestion that the Italian companies must be able to provide the services more cheaply than others because they also obtain a subsidy from their own Government is, of course, simply a piece of bad theory. The only way in which it could have been found out whether the service was obtainable from the English or German lines was by allowing them to tender.

There are still some people in the Union who believe that subsidies generally do more harm than good. When the shipping subsidy was announced, one of these remarked that already the Union taxpayer had to pay a subsidy to enable Italy to buy South African meat more cheaply, and now our Government had been persuaded to make the taxpayers pay the Italians to come and fetch it. In so far as this happens, whether it is intended to happen or not, it can only check the speed of economic recovery by helping to keep world prices of primary products below the economic level. This disadvantage must certainly be set against the claims made for the agreement, which Mr. Fourie has admitted "is all bound up with" the Italian meat contract. That connection is thoroughly undesirable. It would be an evil day for the Union if, now that quotas are so common in trade, the acceptance of imports were to be adopted by other countries as a means of obtaining subsidies for their industries.

(b) *The Tshekedi Affair*

On Sunday, September 10, 1933, the good people of the Cape peninsula were startled by the spectacle of a naval detachment of 200 men with three guns from the ships at Simonstown being entrained for the Bechuanaland Protectorate. No one had heard of any trouble in that quarter, and the despatch of so considerable a force naturally gave rise to much surprise and some alarm. The next morning's papers contained statements by the Acting High Commissioner

The Altogetherness of Everything

for the United Kingdom and the Acting High Commissioner for the Native Territories under the administration of the Imperial Government, which allayed the alarm if they did not entirely dissipate the surprise. Sir Herbert Stanley, His Majesty's High Commissioner for South Africa, who is entrusted with the administration of the native territories of Basutoland, Swaziland and the Bechuanaland Protectorate, and is the representative in the Union of the British Government, was away on leave. In his absence the office of High Commissioner devolved on the Naval Commander-in-Chief at Simonstown, Vice-Admiral Evans.

The statement that he issued was to the effect that a disturbance had taken place at Serowe, in Bechuanaland, in which Tshekedi, the Acting Chief of the Bamangwato tribe, was involved. There was no fighting, said the statement, nor casualties of any kind; the lives of the European inhabitants were not in any danger, and it was not found necessary to draft any forces to the spot. Certain action taken by the Chief having made it necessary to hold an enquiry, the Acting High Commissioner had ordered an immediate enquiry to be held and such action to be taken thereafter as might be deemed necessary. The Acting High Commissioner informed the press that it had been reported to the Magistrate at Serowe that a European resident had been tried by the Chief's Court and sentenced to be flogged, and that this punishment had actually been inflicted. He, the Acting High Commissioner, after considering the detailed reports of the occurrence obtained by the Resident Commissioner, and conferring with him and his officers, had ordered an immediate enquiry to be held locally. He added that he would proceed in person to the Protectorate, to receive reports and decide upon the action to be taken, accompanied by a naval escort. The 200 men and three guns constituted the escort.

Under the Orders-in-Council establishing what is known as the Bechuanaland Protectorate, the High Commissioner

Southern Africa

is empowered to legislate by Proclamation for the peace, order and good government of the territory. The common law of South Africa, the Roman-Dutch law, is applied to the territory, but civil relations between natives are governed by their own laws in so far as these are not in conflict with civilised jurisdiction, and disputes in which only natives are involved are dealt with by the native courts. The native courts have no power to try or impose penalties upon Europeans.

Tshekedi Khama is the Acting Chief of the great tribe of the Bamangwato, being the regent for the Chief, who is still a minor. He is a son of the late Chief Khama, the famous ruler of the tribe, one of the finest statesmen the Bantu race has produced. He is a young man, educated and civilised, whose qualities evidently draw a tribute even from the authorities who find fault with his conduct as Chief. One of the official complaints against him was that he would not work in harmony with the Administration, and he claimed that, as the country had not been annexed by the British Crown, the sovereignty of the Chief over his native subjects could not be overridden by the laws promulgated by the High Commissioner. This constitutional question, however, was definitely excluded from the scope of the enquiry instituted by the Acting High Commissioner into the trial and punishment of Europeans by the Chief's Court.

The Commission sat and concluded its enquiry on Wednesday, September 13. Tshekedi desired to be represented by counsel, and had instructed a member of the Cape Town bar to appear for him before the Commission of Enquiry. The Commission, however, refused to hear him, and required Tshekedi to conduct his own defence. Prior to the enquiry, orders were issued suspending him temporarily from his office of Chief and placing him under open arrest. The case that Tshekedi attempted to make was that he was justified in trying and sentencing the European because the latter was living among the natives

The Altogetherness of Everything

as a native, and had been guilty of offences against native women, and that he had drawn the attention of the Administration to this man's misconduct without result. The misconduct of the European, it may be added, was not disputed, and at the close of the enquiry an order was issued banishing him and another white man from the native areas.

On Thursday, September 14, the Acting High Commissioner returned to Serowe, where he was received by the escort with a salute of 19 guns, and read his decision. He complimented Tshekedi on his personal qualities, his education and intelligence, but criticised him for selfishness and failure to work in harmony with the Administration. He admitted the bad character of the European concerned and announced his banishment from the reserves. He then informed Tshekedi that as a punishment for causing the flogging of the European he would be suspended from his functions as Chief and excluded from the Bamangwato reserve during His Majesty's pleasure.

On September 29 a statement was published by the Acting High Commissioner, in which he cited a communication from Tshekedi abandoning any claim of right to try a European and undertaking not to deal with European cases in future; stating that he did not claim, and would not claim, to be immune from the laws of the Protectorate now or hereafter in force; regretting what had occurred and assuring the High Commissioner that he would at all times work in harmony and loyal co-operation with the Administration. After dealing with the facts of the case, the Acting High Commissioner announced that His Majesty had been graciously pleased to terminate Tshekedi's suspension from his office as Chief, and also the order requiring him to live outside the reserve.

When this statement was published, Tshekedi was on his way to Cape Town, and on the following day he is reported to have paid an official call on Admiral Evans, the Acting High Commissioner, by whom he was received on board the flagship at Simonstown. On the following Monday he

Southern Africa

was formally reinstated by the Acting High Commissioner at Serowe. So ended happily a remarkable incident in the history of the Protectorate administration.

The question of the future government of the Protectorate, separated by a long and purely artificial frontier from the Union of South Africa, together with that of the two other High Commission Territories of Basutoland and Swaziland, which form two small enclaves within the Union borders, is one that calls for early settlement. The South Africa Act of 1909, by which the Union was constituted, provides that the King-in-Council, on an address from both Houses of the Union Parliament, may transfer to the Union the government of these Territories, and provides in a schedule an elaborate form of administration which is to be applied to them on such transfer. Since that time, nearly a quarter of a century ago, nothing has been done either to give effect to or to abrogate these provisions. There can be no doubt that this condition of suspense has been the most serious obstacle to the carrying out of measures of administrative and economic development that are everywhere regarded as being urgently required.

(c) The Change of Ministry in Southern Rhodesia

The last ROUND TABLE article on the political situation in Southern Rhodesia was written in October, 1932.* Our Rhodesian correspondent then defined the atmosphere as one of "cautious optimism." On the whole that optimism has been justified. Reviewing his Ministry's record after his return from the Ottawa Conference, Mr. H. V. Moffat, the then Premier, claimed that it had made a fair division of land between European and Bantu under the Land Apportionment Act†; that the Native Affairs Act had laid the foundation of native local government on the well tried lines of Rhodes' Glen Grey Act and Smuts' Act of 1920;

* THE ROUND TABLE, December 1932, p. 211.

† For the Report of the Land Commission *vide* THE ROUND TABLE, No. 67, June 1927, p. 632.

The Altogetherness of Everything

that the maize, tobacco and dairy controls had saved the farmers, that gold production had gone up, and that the finances had been administered prudently.

Doubtless the Ottawa agreements have helped Southern Rhodesia round the corner. The stabilisation of the British preference on her tobacco for ten years is a great gain; so also is the Canadian preference on her maize and peanuts; while the meat quota system in Great Britain holds out hope to her cattle ranchers. Doubtless also the Union's departure from the gold standard and the approximation of its currency to the British and Rhodesian pounds has facilitated trade. Nevertheless, Mr. Moffat was justified in claiming some of the credit for himself and his colleagues.

The Ministry's record has not, however, saved it from extinction. Mr. Moffat gave notice that he would retire shortly, and his retirement was certain to weaken his Ministry and its hold upon the country. Mr. Moffat, son of the Rev. John Moffat who played no small part in the making of Rhodesia, had succeeded Sir Charles Coghlan, the doughty champion of self-government in Chartered days, as leader of the Rhodesian party. That party had held office for ten years, from the very beginnings of responsible government. At first it really had been "Rhodesian" in the sense that nearly everyone who was not a Labour man had belonged to it. But with the passing of time, cleavages began to appear, as they must in a legislature and electorate where the party system was as fluid as it had once been in the Cape province of the 'eighties. Gradually opposition groups took shape under various names; Progressives, Country party, Independents, and the rest. Mr. R. D. Gilchrist was for a long time the head and centre of this growing Opposition; but, in July, 1932, he public-spiritedly stood back in favour of Mr. G. M. Huggins to ensure common action. Thereafter a considerable Reform party stood organised, over against the Rhodesian party.

Personalities inevitably counted for a good deal in a small community of fifty thousand Europeans. In the

Southern Africa

main both parties wanted the same things, the Reformers wanting them more quickly than did their opponents. But there were differences of policy. The attitude of the rival parties on the issue of closer union with the neighbouring colonies has already been indicated. Further, the Reformers desired to get rid of the last vestige of Imperial control over legislation concerning the natives, railways, and so on; to deal rigorously with monopolists, e.g. the British South Africa Company, which did not, in their opinion, develop their holdings beneficially; to push ahead with land settlement and the segregation of Europeans and Bantu, even to the extent of "the removal of the anomaly of Europeans and natives being on the same electoral roll"—a Cape survival—and the discouragement of miscegenation by all means short of treating it as a criminal offence. Finally, their plans for the fostering of secondary industries were more precise than those of their opponents, and they were even ready to hold a referendum on the question of State lotteries.

Meanwhile a long-standing issue came to a head, and weakened the ministerialists. Without going into historical details, it may be agreed that the position of the British South Africa Company in Southern Rhodesia rested on the Royal Charter of 1889, and the Lippit and Rudd concessions. From the former, the Company deduced that it owned the unalienated lands, and long unchallenged practice confirmed it in its deduction. Its claim was, however, challenged at last, and in 1918 the Judicial Committee of the Privy Council ruled that these lands belonged to the Crown. The lands duly passed to the Rhodesian Government under the complicated system of payments and counter-payments that accompanied the grant of responsible government in 1923.*

The Company claimed the minerals under the Rudd concession. For a long time its claim went unchallenged, but since 1928 at all events the cry has been raised more

* Cmd. 1984 of 1925.

The Altogetherness of Everything

and more confidently that the minerals were on the same footing as the land. Three successive mining Bills had to be withdrawn because the Company's rights were explicitly recognised therein, and, to crown all, in July, 1932, a prominent mineowner refused to pay royalties to the Company.

Mr. Moffat, yielding to unexpected pressure from many of his own supporters, therefore agreed to take legal advice on how best to bring this question before the Courts. The legal experts differed. Some said there was no case; others said the case was good, or at least arguable. The Company, for its part, stood to its guns and demanded a definite acknowledgment of its rights.

The Dominions Secretary decided the matter (though he did not end the controversy) by drawing attention to the so-called Devonshire Agreement which had covered the grant of responsible government. That agreement, he observed in November, 1932, "must be understood not merely as a recognition by the Crown of the Company's ownership of the minerals in Southern Rhodesia, but as imparting a promise not to call in question the rights recognised." And lest anyone should say, and there were many who did say promptly, that the undertaking merely estopped the Crown but left third parties free to take action, he insisted that this recognition was "an integral part" of the agreement under which responsible government had been given, and was "in accordance with the intention of all parties concerned."

Mr. Moffat, who personally had never questioned the Company's rights, faced the political facts. He offered to buy the Chartered mineral rights. His action was something of a gamble, as dealings in mineral rights are apt to be, but he might reasonably hope that with cheap money available the £100,000 drawn from royalties each year would meet the service of a loan of £2,000,000, which was the price agreed upon. The bargain was ratified at a stormy session of the Legislative Assembly in April-May, 1933. The

Southern Africa

Company has thus relinquished its hold upon the minerals as well as the lands of Southern Rhodesia. It still retains large farms and industries as well as the control of the railways; it is still, as the Reformers note, the biggest single capitalist in the country. But its main interests now lie north of the Zambesi. It proposes to shift its local headquarters to Lusaka, in Northern Rhodesia.

At this stage Mr. Moffat made way as Premier for Mr. George Mitchell, hitherto Minister of Mines and Agriculture. The new Premier's tenure of office was brief. A general election took place in September, 1933, a confused struggle of 78 candidates for 30 seats. In the event the Reform party came home with a short lead: 16 Reformers as against 9 Rhodesians and 5 Labourites. Mr. Mitchell resigned, and Mr. Huggins was sent for by the Governor, Sir Cecil Rodwell. Strong pressure was brought to bear from many quarters in favour of a National Cabinet on British lines, or at the very least for a coalition on the South African model, but the Reformers could not work with the Rhodesian party, and Labour, led by Mr. H. H. Davies, declined to work with the Reformers, even though both parties had in common the desire for considerable State action. Mr. Huggins therefore formed his own Ministry, with Mr. Gilchrist as second in command. Of the six Ministers, one is a newcomer to parliamentary life, and three others have sat in only one Parliament. On the other hand, they are keen and energetic.

The Reform Ministry have lost no time in getting into action. They have in their hands the report of a commission on the price of Crown lands appointed by their predecessors, which should fit in with their plans for a more rapid settlement of European areas; they are already hoping to attract tourists to the great nature reserve, which they have projected in the south-east corner of the colony, possibly contiguous to the Union's well-known Kruger Park, and they hope to enlist Portuguese co-operation in what should be an international undertaking;

The Altogetherness of Everything

they are fulfilling one election promise by arranging for a referendum on State lotteries, which, if it is successful, will add to the problems of the Union Government, which finds the lotteries of Lorenzo Marques an expensive nuisance ; above all, with the approval of all parties, they have given notice that they will terminate the present customs agreement with the Union in June, 1934. All Rhodesians hold that the agreement has been so whittled away by embargoes and quotas and the like that it is now hardly recognisable as the original scheme for a free interchange of products. At the same time they have asked for a conference, and if that cannot be held before June, 1934, for a continuation of the existing arrangements till a conclusion is reached. It is revision that they want and not a severance of amicable relations. The reply of the Pretoria Government has been cordial and reassuring.

South Africa.

January 1934.

NEW ZEALAND

I. THE BUDGET

ON one point at any rate Mr. Coates was able to improve upon the example of both his immediate predecessors in the Finance Ministry when on November 9 he rose to deliver his first budget speech. He could be a little more cheerful than had been possible for them. In his opening sentence he said he was "glad to be able to note that export prices generally are on the up grade," and though there had been occasional reactions since the first improvement set in early in the year he regarded the prospects as brighter than at any time since the depression overtook New Zealand. The Minister's diagnosis was confirmed at Auckland on November 27, when the expectations based on the recent wool sales in Australia and London were exceeded at the first sale of the New Zealand season. At Christchurch on December 11 the hopes of growers were again reported to be fully realised. On December 20 Dunedin did better still with an exceptionally large sale, at which prices from 100 to 300 per cent. higher than those of last year were obtained, France and Germany being among the keenest competitors.

In his review of the Government's exchange policy the Minister did not attempt even an approximate estimate of its effects. He admitted that the rise in export prices which followed the raising of the rate had since been succeeded by a fall which did not leave them much above the level at which they originally stood, but the Government was satisfied to continue the policy.

As a result of all the efforts made (said the Minister) the gap between costs and prices has been narrowed considerably, but the government statistician's indices still show export prices about 16 per cent. below the 1914 level, while farm costs, which are more

The Budget

difficult to measure, are still 20 per cent. above that level. This is the position after taking the exchange adjustment into account, so it will be evident that the measure of assistance given by the raising of the rate must continue in the meantime.

In his estimates for the current year the Minister puts the receipts from taxation at £16,214,000, an increase of £609,000 over last year's receipts. The new taxes imposed in January to meet the cost of the exchange policy—the sales tax and the gold export duty—have worked out well during the first half of the year, and are expected to produce £1,712,000 and £124,000 respectively by the time it closes. With the proceeds of increased customs duties and some miscellaneous receipts, the aggregate is put at £1,954,000. But decreases under other headings make a set-off of £1,345,000, in which the heaviest and most significant item is the further drop of £857,000 in income tax, making a total decrease of £1,748,000 in two years, or over one third of the revenue. On the other side of the account the outstanding item is the one declared result of the exchange policy, "exchange on normal requirements," £1,790,000.

The Minister's estimates may be summarised as follows :

<i>Expenditure</i>					£
Debt services	..	..	..	..	10,445,000
Exchange on normal requirements	..	..	..	..	1,790,000
Transfer of motor taxation	..	..	..	..	1,179,000
Other permanent appropriations	..	..	..	..	340,000
Annual votes :—					
Social services	..	..	..	..	6,900,000
Other votes	..	..	..	..	3,597,000
Supplementary, say,	..	..	..	..	149,000
					24,400,000
<i>Revenue</i>					£
Taxation	..	..	..	..	16,214,000
Interest receipts	..	..	..	..	2,551,000
Other receipts	..	..	..	..	1,541,000
From reserves	..	..	..	..	2,000,000
					22,306,000
Deficit					£2,094,000

New Zealand

The deficit is a matter for congratulation when compared with the Minister's estimate of £4,500,000 in his January statement, but it would have been nearly doubled if the reserves had not been again tapped for £2,000,000. By the consent of the British Government, the payments in respect of the funded debt are again to stand over.

Referring to the raising of the exchange rate and its effect in increasing government expenditure, measured in New Zealand currency, on external debt charges, the Finance Minister said that that had been anticipated when the rate was raised, and that full provision was made in the estimates to meet it. The amount required to meet interest and other payments in London was estimated at £7,250,000, while about £1,250,000 was needed for Australia. He pointed out that the latter payment would not call for additional expenditure, as the exchange costs would be recovered in remitting the money from London to Australia, where, as in New Zealand, sterling commands 25 per cent. premium; but he failed to note that, if New Zealand had not followed Australia's lead in this respect, there would have been a profit.

During the half-year ended on September 30, London funds purchased from the banks had amounted to £13,345,000, and, after deducting from this sum the £8,500,000 required for use in London and Australia, there was still £4,845,000 in hand as surplus sterling assets. Mr. Coates was at some pains to explain the size of the amount, which was far in excess of his estimate. Funds had been remitted to New Zealand in advance of export requirements, importers and others had been holding back from the purchase of exchange, and the position had been aggravated by unfounded rumours of a pending fall in the exchange rate. Hopes and fears and suspicions, which say more than they know, are the inevitable outcome of uncertainty, and the Minister eliminated the principal causes of uncertainty by the definite statements that "the exchange rate will be kept at the present level until at

The Budget

least the end of the present export season," and that "this does not mean that at the end of the season the rate will be reduced, or that it will not be increased." But in other respects, and especially on this question of the disposal of the surplus London assets, he still allowed ample room for uncertainty, uneasiness, speculation and contention.

The surplus sterling assets taken over under the guarantee arrangement with the banks will, says the Minister, "in no way embarrass the Government." They have been acquired in exchange for treasury bills issued to the banks in New Zealand, and as soon as the Reserve Bank opens its doors it will be possible to reverse the process and use the London funds to pay off the bills, adequate precautions being taken to protect the bank from liability.

Thus, (he continued) the net cost of the exchange indemnity agreement cannot be known until either all the London funds in question are sold by the Reserve Bank or stabilisation of the currency takes place. It would be premature at this stage to contemplate any loss arising; indeed, in certain circumstances the ultimate result might be a net gain. . . . In the meantime, the outlay in purchasing surplus sterling assets must be regarded as a suspense item outside the normal budget for the year.

This "suspense item" has naturally been likened to a sword of Damocles hanging over the budget. The sword may be the sword of Damocles, but the faith is surely that of Micawber. To incur a heavy liability and take no steps to meet it on the ground that, when at last payment has to be made, the sum may be smaller or larger than it is now is quite in the spirit of that brilliant financier. It was suggested by Mr. Downie Stewart that the real reason for this procedure was that the Finance Minister might well have £10,000,000 on his hands by the end of the financial year, unless imports increased rapidly at an early date, and that, if the cost of exchange were debited against the current year, the deficit instead of being £2,000,000 might be between £4,000,000 and £5,000,000, and the result a public outcry.

New Zealand

In January 1933 Mr. Stewart gave his reasons for believing that the extra cost to the budget of raising the exchange rate from 10 to 25 per cent. would be about £3,800,000. In the budget debate on November 15, he said that he had reviewed the estimate in the light of the subsequent figures and found that it was under the mark. In the revised table below, the third item, "net interest charges on treasury bills, say £500,000," is explained by Mr. Stewart as follows: the budget shows that the extra interest on treasury bills for the year arising from the raising of the exchange rate will be £690,000, but whereas the rate charged on treasury bills in New Zealand is 5 per cent., the interest earned on the London funds is not much more than $\frac{1}{2}$ per cent., and the difference is fairly referable to the exchange. Mr. Stewart's revised estimate is as follows:—

1. Extra cost of external debt charges	£ 1,050,000
2. Cost of exchange on £4,845,000 surplus funds purchased till September	1,200,000
3. Net interest charges on treasury bills, say	500,000
4. Customs revenue made good by extra taxation ..	800,000
5. Exchange on funds, say £4,000,000, to be purchased between September and April	1,000,000
Total	£4,550,000

Mr. Stewart's concluding point was that whether he was right or not about the evils of artificial depreciation, or about the impropriety of carrying exchange as a suspense item, there could be no question about the absolute rule that artificial depreciation necessitated a balanced budget. Concluding the debate on November 21, Mr. Coates argued that the Government's principal obligation was to the primary industry which was the base of the country's prosperity; that the only alternative to the high exchange was guaranteed prices—the remedy of the Labour party; and that Mr. Stewart himself had no policy to suggest.

The Bank Problem

In the ten months in which the high exchange had operated, (said Mr. Coates) the purchasing power of the country had increased by £7,000,000. . . . It was true that certain articles had increased by 15 per cent., and perhaps more, but they could count them almost on one hand. Barbed wire had increased 15 per cent., but no one could say the relief worker lived on barbed wire. . . . Retail prices had actually decreased since the currency was depreciated. . . . It could not be substantiated that New Zealand was going to lose £25 on every £100. It might be argued that New Zealand was just as entitled to establish an exchange equalisation fund as the United Kingdom.

II. THE BANK PROBLEM

THERE are six commercial banks doing business in New Zealand, of which only one has its head office directorate in New Zealand, and four of the other five are predominantly Australian institutions. Before the war the notes of all these banks were payable in gold, but on August 5, 1914, a Banking Amendment Act and a Proclamation issued under it made them legal tender—a provision which was from time to time extended and remains in force to-day. The Finance Minister points out, however, that, though the obvious intention of the early legislation was to establish the gold standard, the trading conditions of the country had in fact resulted in the adoption of a purely voluntary sterling exchange system.

The permanent statutory provisions are for the most part still suspended by war regulations, (he says) but such suspension had no real effect, as the provisions had always been practically inoperative.

This remarkable statement is made by Mr. Coates in a pamphlet entitled *Reserve Bank of New Zealand Proposal*, which he published in September, and he justifies it in regard both to the note issue and to the limitation of the credit structure. Of the former he says that the statutory provision was, in effect, that the note issue should not exceed three times the gold reserves, but that examination of the figures over a period of years shows that deposits

New Zealand

and advances varied without any relation to notes in circulation, and, indeed, in a manner which would be quite inexplicable in a self-contained banking system.

The explanation, of course, (he continues) is that our banking system is not self-contained, in that the banks normally hold a large amount of funds in London. In fact, these London balances are the real regulative factor and the key to our whole banking system. In New Zealand there is no bullion market, no bill market or short-loan market, and generally no money market in the full sense of the term. The all-important work of our banks is financing our external trade, which per head is one of the highest, if not the highest, in the world. Furthermore, a very large part of our trade is with Great Britain, wherein is situated the premier international money market of the world. Under these circumstances, supported by the ties of Empire and the fact that this country has been borrowing steadily in Great Britain practically ever since these islands were brought under the British flag, the dominating portion of our banking business has centred in London.

The rise and fall of these London balances thus govern the deposits and advances that constitute the credit system of the Dominion. The Minister, however, recognises our obligations to the banks, which—at any rate till the end of 1930—made the system definite and complete by their policy of maintaining steady rates of exchange, unaffected by any but very exceptional trade disturbances. In illustration of the success of this policy, reference is made to the fact that, in spite of marked variations in the trade balance between 1907 and 1911, the exchange rates for telegraphic transfers, New Zealand on London, were kept at 17s. 6d. per cent. for at least ten years before 1914. The result was to keep the New Zealand pound approximately at parity with sterling. The opinion is expressed that the co-operation of governments and central banks may do much to reduce the damaging effects of the alternation of booms and slumps arising from the wide swings of British prices, but the Minister is satisfied that New Zealand has “no option but to accept the prices ruling in the British markets.”

The Bank Problem

The chief characteristics of New Zealand's banking system are summarised by the Minister as follows :—

(1) The system is, in fact, and always has been, a sterling exchange standard.

(2) It has centred round an approximate fixed par of exchange between the British and the New Zealand pound.

(3) Our external trade is cleared through London, and the London balances of the banks are the chief factor in regulating the volume of credit in New Zealand.

(4) The banking habit is strongly developed in New Zealand, and notes are very subsidiary, being used for little beyond payment of wages, petty disbursements, and till-money.

(5) The legislative restrictions on the note issue have been quite inoperative, as the demand has always been considerably less than the maximum amount the banks were in a position to issue.

(6) The volume of credit has regulated the note issue, and not *vice versa*.

“Economic facts and the traditional exchange policy of the banks” are thus, in the Minister's opinion, the only real regulative factors of New Zealand's banking system, but he describes the control as not disinterested, having been “simply evolved as the system best suited for the purpose of carrying on commercial banking in the Dominion.” Seeing how well, on his own showing, the system has worked in the public interest, the acknowledgment is not too gracious, but in principle the case for the disinterested management of an institution specially created for the purpose is obviously, other things being equal, unanswerable. The establishment of such an institution, without any change in the sterling exchange system or in the present exchange rate, was declared by the Finance Minister to be the object of the proposed legislation.

The Reserve Bank Bill

The Reserve Bank of New Zealand Bill, which, on the Finance Minister's motion, was given its first reading on October 19, followed in its general scheme, but with a few vital alterations, the Bill circulated by his predecessor, Mr. Downie Stewart, on December 12, 1932. The primary duty of the Bank, as defined in it, is “to exercise control,

New Zealand

within the limits of the powers conferred on it by this Act, over monetary circulation and credit in New Zealand." It is not disputed that both in its powers and in its limitations the constitution of the Bank conforms to the normal functions and conditions of a central bank. It is to have a monopoly of the note issue, it is to be "the bank of the banks" and of the Government, its competition with the other banks is to be severely limited, and so on. The only serious hostility to the second reading was shown by the Labour party, who, though "the establishment of a central bank, with control of note issue" was included in their own election programme, strongly objected to the measure of shareholders' control provided by the Bill as incompatible with "the full sovereignty of the people and parliament of New Zealand over the Dominion's credit resources." Their amendment affirming this faith was rejected by 43 votes to 28, and on the same day (October 31) the second reading was carried by the same majority, eight insurgent Coalitionists and Independents voting on each occasion with the Opposition, and Mr. Downie Stewart with the Government.

It was, however, on the relative proportions of State control and shareholder control that the controversy in committee chiefly turned. The 1932 Bill provided for the constitution of a reserve bank with a capital of £500,000 to be subscribed by the public of New Zealand in £5 shares, and with a contribution of £1,000,000 from the government free of interest. But whereas the 1932 Bill placed the control of the Bank in the hands of five directors, a governor and a deputy-governor, all (after the first appointments) being elected by the shareholders, Mr. Coates's Bill increased the number of directors to seven, of whom three were to be government nominees, while the Secretary of the Treasury was also to have a seat but no vote. The ultimate complete control by the shareholders was thus reduced to control by a six to three majority, while at the same time the initial term of government control was extended by two, or perhaps three, years. Mr. Coates had accepted Sir

The Bank Problem

Otto Niemeyer's stipulation that "the Bank must be entirely free from both the actual fact and the fear of political influence," and had strongly approved the shareholder element as a guarantee of publicity, independence and free criticism, and these changes naturally caused some uneasiness. But for many uneasiness was changed to fear when the Minister was compelled to accept an amendment which took the appointment of the governor and deputy-governor from the shareholders and virtually transferred it to the government, thus giving its nominees a permanent majority.

It was the formation within the Coalition of a sort of State control cave or bloc, known in the lobbies as the "study circle," and its support by the Labour party—the one presumably with its eye on rural credits, the other inspired by its ideals of democracy and socialism—that forced the hands of the Government. The combination was considered strong enough to carry a complete State control motion, and Mr. Coates was glad to accept and move a compromise under which the governor and deputy-governor are to be appointed by the Government but on the recommendation of the directors. The arrangement is not suggestive of statesmanship or stability, and gives a very inauspicious start to an institution which, Sir Otto Niemeyer tells us, "will do more harm than good" if it cannot be kept entirely free from the fact or the fear of political interference.

But the most fundamental difference between the Bills of 1932 and 1933 relates to the price at which the gold of the trading banks should be taken over by the Reserve Bank. Clause 15 of the former Bill required the trading banks to hand over their gold coin and bullion to the Reserve Bank in exchange for its bank notes, but it also provided that if any trading bank claimed that the profits derived by the Reserve Bank from the sale of gold coin and bullion transferred to it by such bank should be credited to that bank, the question should be referred to arbitration. The first part of this clause was repeated in the 1933 Bill, but the

New Zealand

provision for arbitration was omitted, and in its place a new sub-clause was inserted declaring that any profits derived by the Reserve Bank from the sale of gold coin and bullion transferred to it under this clause should be credited to the public account.

The importance attached to the question by the Finance Minister was indicated by the unusual course he took on the introduction of the Bill. When the House went into committee on October 19 to consider the Governor-General's message transmitting the draft of the Bill, the Minister took the opportunity to read a statement, designed, as he said, "to clarify the situation in respect to profits on gold reserves." This document, which ran to nearly 3,000 words, was about equally divided into two parts dealing with "profits on gold reserves" and "treatment of gold assets when a currency is devalued" respectively, and set out the case for the transfer of gold coin from the trading banks to the Reserve Bank at the mint par value, viz. £4 5s. per ounce of fine gold. On November 6, immediately after the holding of a protest meeting in the Wellington Town Hall, the Minister issued a summary of this statement, which appeared in the press on the following day.

The opinion that Mr. J. T. Grose, as chairman of the Associated Banks, had obtained from Sir Francis Bell, K.C., on the ownership of the banks' gold holdings had already been published on October 23.

The answer is, of course, (said Sir Francis) that in law and in fact, the gold is the absolute property of the banks, and that the State has not and never had any right or title to any part of it.

It is true that the export of gold coin is prohibited, and that therefore the banks cannot transport gold elsewhere. But the prohibition does not affect the title to the property, though it limits the market. . . . It seems that the Government does not challenge the property, since it proposes to pay a price for the property. That price is to be what the Government chooses to pay, not the actual value. It is to be depreciated by a government prohibition under which its market is limited, and is to be paid in currency depreciated as the result of government action. But further, if the body to which the gold is to be transferred is allowed to transport it, and a large profit results from the transfer, that profit is to be credited to the

The Bank Problem

public account. No precedent can, I think, be found for that singular result.

In his abridged statement the Finance Minister conceded that the gold coin in the possession of the banks was "technically their property," but he denied that it was in the same legal category as goods which are their absolute property to dispose of as they please. The gold coin was subject to a charge in favour of the note issue, and it was contrary to the public interest that currency should be used as "a profit-making commodity." The Government agreed that the question must be decided from the standpoint of "fairness and good conscience." Two of the Finance Minister's fundamental points were stated as follows :—

Under the Banking Act, 1908, section 9, the holders of notes issued by the trading banks have the right to require payment of their notes in gold. The Government, in the public interest, in 1914 suspended this right. No interference with the property, or the legal rights, of the banks would be involved in removing this restriction. If that were done the banks would have to pay the note-holders in gold so far as the money in their possession would extend, and would have to import gold coin in order to meet the amount of the notes in excess of the value of the coin held by them. The existence of this power emphasises the fact that the value of each sovereign in the hands of the banks is not the world parity of gold as a marketable commodity, but is the value of the New Zealand bank note. That is what the Government proposes should be paid for it.

It is to be noted, too, that any gold holdings arise only as a result of government action. The effect of this action in New Zealand and elsewhere has been to vary, or to suspend altogether, the right of holders of notes issued by banks to convert those notes into gold. Meanwhile, government action, or action taken on the responsibility and if necessary at the cost of the State, has raised the value of gold in terms of currency.

The Minister also contended that if any persons were entitled to the accretion in value, measured in terms of gold as a commodity, they were the note-holders, whose rights the Government was taking over ; and that the realisation of any accretion to the value of gold coin would be due solely to the passing of the Bill and the setting up of the Reserve Bank.

In the reply, which was published on the same day, the spokesman of the Associated Banks described the Finance

New Zealand

Minister's statement regarding the removal of the restriction on the convertibility of notes as "inconclusive in so far as the case is not fully explained."

The present proclamation would expire (he said) in the ordinary course in January 1935, but the Reserve Bank will come into operation before that date, and its notes will be legal tender; the banks will then be able to acquire from the Reserve Bank (by selling to, or discounting with, the Reserve Bank some of the treasury bills they hold—and will hold) a sufficient quantity of Reserve Bank notes to retire all their own notes as and when presented, without requiring gold for that purpose at all. The banks could then hold their gold until the proclamation expires, whereupon, in terms of the proclamation, the prohibition on the export of gold will also cease.

The Minister is also reported as having stated that it was the "Government action, or action taken on the responsibility, and if necessary at the cost, of the State" that "has raised the value of gold in terms of currency." The reply to this is that it was not the action of the New Zealand Government that increased the world price of gold, which is the result of world conditions. In the conversations with the banks it is the world price that has been named by the banks, not that price plus the depreciation of New Zealand currency. Without departing from the opinion that the gold coin and the value of it is theirs, the banks have offered to the Government to accept from the Reserve Bank sterling in London for their gold coin, that is £1 sterling for each sovereign. . . . On, say £4,500,000 of gold the Reserve Bank would win, say, £6,750,000 sterling, or £2,250,000 above the sterling paid to the banks for their gold, and under the Reserve Bank Bill this £2,250,000 would accrue to the Government, and its value in New Zealand currency on the present rates of exchange would be, say, £2,800,000.

The matter was keenly debated in the press, and in business circles there was strong sympathy with the banks and a general feeling that their offer of a settlement was a generous one. But even commercial opinion was slow to move, and the crisis had passed in the House of Representatives before it got to work. It was not a controversy in which the ordinary citizen could pretend to form an opinion, but the solution that probably commended itself to the fair play and common sense of most thinking men was rejected by the House with supreme contempt. The motion to restore the arbitration clause which had been included in last year's Bill was defeated on November 2 by a majority of more than ten to one—56 votes to 5.

The Bank Problem

The whole of the Labour party voted in the majority and all but three of the Coalition. Mr. Downie Stewart, who was one of these three, explained that with the Cabinet's sanction he had provided in the 1932 Bill for the determination of the ownership of the gold by an independent tribunal, and that his object was "to avoid the possibility of an accusation of hard dealing being made against the Government." He agreed with the Minister of Finance that the Reserve Bank should carry with it the support, co-operation and goodwill of the trading banks, and considered that otherwise it would have a very difficult task. He admitted that the Minister had greatly strengthened the Government's case since last year, and in view of that he could see no reason for objecting to a tribunal, and considered it highly desirable that some friendly adjustment with the banks should be made. But no such adjustment was attempted. The House passed the third reading of the Bill without further amendment by 36 votes to 16 on November 2. In the Legislative Council no changes were made, the second reading being carried on November 17 by 13 votes to 4, and the third on the voices four days later.

Other reasons for regretting the decision of the Government and the legislature to eliminate the arbitration clause are that it has further shaken the hold of the Government upon the commercial community, which was already seriously weakened by much of the emergency legislation; that it has prejudiced the outlook for stable government after the next general election, and, if the reports that have reached us from England and Australia are representative, made an impression in both countries which will do our credit no good. That Mr. Coates should have been chiefly to blame is the more remarkable because in the recent case of the Southland Electric Power Board he earned the gratitude of the country by the alertness with which he recognised that the full enforcement of a perfectly just and legal claim may cost more than its worth, and took the necessary steps to clear the honour of the

New Zealand

country from the stain with which it was threatened. These steps as previously reported* have now been completed by the passage of a Finance Bill which empowers the Minister to direct that payment of interest on local body loans raised in London shall be made in sterling. In moving the second reading on December 11 Mr. Coates said that he thought "it was obvious to everybody in New Zealand that although we had depreciated our own currency, we had not depreciated in any sense the currencies of other countries."

The puzzle is increased by the contrast between Mr. Coates's action in the present case and the canon which he himself applied to one episode in it. The motives of the Reserve Bank's directorate must, he said, be "free not only from the fact but also from the suspicion" of improper influences. Why is not the honour of New Zealand to be entitled to the same punctilious protection as that of its Reserve Bank? A year ago the Government decided to buy the gold of the trading banks and to pay for it a price to be settled by arbitration. Since then the country's indebtedness has greatly increased and its financial difficulties are more acute than ever. The Government now renews its decision to purchase the gold of the banks, but withdraws the offer of arbitration, elects to act as judge in its own cause and compels the banks to accept a price that they regard as spoliation. If in these circumstances the people of other countries suspect that we have been compelled by pecuniary pressure to drive an unjust bargain, they will simply be regarding us as we, in similar circumstances, should have regarded them. An extension to the country's honour of the principle which Mr. Coates laid down for the protection of its Reserve Bank would have freed us "not only from the fact but from the suspicion" of impropriety.

New Zealand.

December 23, 1933.

* See THE ROUND TABLE, No. 93, December 1933, pp. 209-216.

PRINTED BY W. H.
SMITH & SON LTD.,
THE ARDEN PRESS
STAMFORD ST.,
S.E., AND PUB-
LISHED BY MAC-
MILLAN AND CO.,
ST. MARTIN'S ST.,
LONDON, W.C.



THE ROUND TABLE is a co-operative enterprise conducted by people who dwell in all parts of the British Commonwealth, and whose aim is to publish once a quarter a comprehensive review of Imperial politics, free from the bias of local party issues. The affairs of **THE ROUND TABLE** in each portion of the Commonwealth are in the hands of local residents who are responsible for all articles on the politics of their own country. It is hoped that in this way **THE ROUND TABLE** will reflect the current opinions of all parts about Imperial problems, and at the same time present a survey of them as a whole. While no article will be published in the interest of any political party, articles may from time to time be published explaining the standpoint of particular parties or sections of opinion. In such cases, however, the character of the article will be made clear by an introductory note.

THE ROUND TABLE

A QUARTERLY REVIEW OF THE POLITICS OF
THE BRITISH COMMONWEALTH

CONTENTS

	PAGE
John Dove	463
Isolation, Alliance or Kellogg Pact	469
I. <i>The Lesson of History.</i> II. <i>The Breakdown of Security through the League.</i> III. <i>The Choice Before Us.</i> IV. <i>The Problem of the Commonwealth.</i>	
Air Power and Imperial Defence	490
I. <i>The War of the Future.</i> II. <i>The Defence of the Commonwealth.</i>	
The American Trend	504
I. <i>The Case of Dr. Wirt.</i> II. <i>Inflation or Stability.</i> III. <i>Tasks Accomplished.</i>	
Fascism in Austria	515
I. <i>The February "Revolution."</i> II. <i>Dollfuss and the Nazis.</i> III. <i>The New Constitution.</i> IV. <i>A Hapsburg Restoration?</i> V. <i>Austria and the Powers.</i>	
China and the World Depression	531
I. <i>The Chinese Background.</i> II. <i>The Political Situation.</i> III. <i>Economic Troubles.</i> IV. <i>Opportunities of the Future.</i>	
The St. Lawrence Waterway	548
I. <i>The Attitude of the United States.</i> II. <i>The Canadian View.</i>	
India : Swaraj the Phoenix	563
I. <i>The Passing of Civil Disobedience.</i> II. <i>The New Political and Social Reform.</i> III. <i>The Communal Problem.</i> IV. <i>The Future of India.</i>	

(Continued on next page.)

N° 95. JUNE MCMXXXIV Price 5/-
London : MACMILLAN & CO., LTD.

Entered as second class matter March 15th, 1929, at the Post Office at Boston, Mass., under the Act of March 3rd, 1879 (Sec. 397, P.L. and R).

CONTENTS (continued)

Legal Revolution in the Irish Free State 579

- I. *Our "New Deal."* II. *The Blue Shirts.*
 III. *The End of the Senate?* IV. *A Surprise Budget.*

Great Britain : The Slippery Slope 599

- I. *The Budget and the Unemployed.* II. *The Government's Future.* III. *Conservatives and India.*
 IV. *Economic Recovery.* V. *Industrial Reorganisation and Wages.*

Economic Experiment in Canada 620

- I. *The Central Bank.* II. *Marketing Reform.*

Australia : Problems of Federalism 639

- I. *The Constitutional Conference.* II. *Riots at Kalgoorlie.*

South Africa : The Lion and the Unicorn 656

- I. *Political Chronicle.* II. *The Status Bill.* III. *The Late President Reitz.*

New Zealand and Some Empire Problems 675

- I. *The Trade in Dairry Products.* II. *Shipping Subsidies.* III. *Imperial Defence.* IV. *The Waitangi Celebrations.*

CONTENTS OF Nos. 93 and 94

No. 93. DECEMBER 1933

	PAGE
The Future of the League ?	I
Roosevelt's Road to Recovery	14
Japan's Bid for World Trade	29
British Commonwealth Relations	42
The Problem of South-East Europe	62
Australia and Japan	85
Was Moses Right ?	102
"The Dole"	116
India : The Trail of Anarchy	131
Great Britain : Light and Shadow	146
Ireland : Mr. de Valera's Objective	164
Canada : <i>Canadian Labour—The Banff Conference—The British Commonwealth Relations Conference</i>	182
Australia : The British Settlers in Victoria	203
New Zealand : <i>Central Banking and Exchange—Unemployment—London Interest on Local Loans—Defence</i>	209

No. 94. MARCH 1934

The Empire, The League, and Security	227
Shipping : An Empire Problem	241
Newfoundland	256
An Australian Economist Looks at the United States	270
Northern Ireland and Partition	290
The United States : Recovery and Reform	304
The Church in the Third Reich	319
India : Towards the Goal	334
Great Britain : Social and Industrial Reform	347
The Irish Free State : <i>Quo Vadis ?</i>	367
Canada : <i>The Political Scene—The Tariff Board and Tariff Policy</i>	386
Australia : <i>The Financial Position—Constitutional and Other Problems</i>	403
Southern Africa : <i>Political Chronicle—The Altogetherness of Everything</i>	424
New Zealand : <i>The Budget—The Bank Problem</i>	448

THE ROUND TABLE

can be obtained through any bookseller or any of the following:

GREAT BRITAIN AND IRELAND

Messrs. Macmillan & Co., Ltd., St. Martin's Street,
London, W.C.2.

CANADA

The Macmillan Co. of Canada, Ltd., 70 Bond Street, Toronto

AUSTRALIA

Messrs. Macmillan & Co., Ltd., 32 Flinders Street,
Melbourne.

SOUTH AFRICA

J. Tyndall, Esq., 126 Corporation Buildings, Johannesburg.

NEW ZEALAND

The Secretary, THE ROUND TABLE, c/o Messrs. McKay and
Little, A.M.P. Building, Wellington.

INDIA

Messrs. Macmillan & Co., Ltd., Bombay, Calcutta and
Madras.

THE UNITED STATES

The Macmillan Co., 60 Fifth Avenue, New York.

EGYPT

The Express Book and Stationery Store, near Shepheard's
Hotel, Cairo.

CHINA (AND STRAITS SETTLEMENTS)

Messrs. Kelly & Walsh, Shanghai, Hong-Kong and Singapore.

JAPAN

The Maruzen Company, Ltd., 14-16, Nihonbashi Tori
Sanchoe, Tokyo.

Should information be required or difficulty experienced in obtaining a copy of THE ROUND TABLE, application should be made to THE ROUND TABLE, 2 Paper Buildings, Temple, London, E.C.4, or to the above mentioned, or in Australia to Professor T. Laby, F.R.S., The University, Melbourne.

The price of THE ROUND TABLE is 5s. or \$1.00 per copy, and the annual subscription (including postage) 20s., in U.S.A. and Canada \$4.

Covers for binding volumes, 3s. 6d. each, and back numbers, price 5s. (except three or four out of print) can also be obtained from Messrs. Macmillan & Co., Ltd., London.

JOHN DOVE

JOHN DOVE died on April 18, 1934. He had been Editor of **THE ROUND TABLE** for nearly fourteen years, having in the year 1920 succeeded to the editorship occupied earlier by his friends, Lord Lothian, Sir Edward Grigg, and Professor Coupland. It is fitting that these pages should contain a brief account both of the man himself and of his career.

It was in South Africa that John Dove joined the company of those who afterwards founded **THE ROUND TABLE** review. After the South African war, and under Lord Milner's régime, his New College friends, Lionel Curtis, Lionel Hitchens and Richard Feetham, had become respectively town clerk, town treasurer, and assistant town clerk of Johannesburg. When the first-named gave up his post to become assistant Colonial Secretary of the Transvaal, Richard Feetham (now Chief Justice of Natal) became town clerk, and John Dove (who was then at the English Bar), wishing to join his friends, applied for the post of assistant town clerk in 1903. Later, on Mr. Feetham's joining the Johannesburg Bar, he became town clerk, carrying out for several years the heavy duties which the post at that time involved. He then became chairman of the Transvaal Land Settlement Board and spent two or three arduous years travelling through all the outlying regions of the Transvaal, interviewing settlers, and listening to and trying to redress their grievances. He was an ardent lover of nature as well as a keen observer of human nature, and this work, often amidst wild and beautiful surroundings, always remained vivid in his memory. But the hardships

John Dove

involved, and dysentery which he contracted while on his travels, left a permanent mark on a constitution already injured by a hunting accident in his youth. On giving up this position he joined Lionel Curtis in Australia, and together they worked at forming groups of men there who were interested in imperial problems and who would co-operate in the work of producing *THE ROUND TABLE* review, the publication of which had already been started in England in 1910. However, his health threatening to collapse altogether, he returned to England, where he underwent a severe operation and was obliged for some years to live quietly until his strength was restored.

By this time most of his friends who had worked with Lord Milner and Lord Selborne in South Africa had returned to England, following the establishment of responsible government in the Transvaal and the creation of the Union of South Africa. The part they had taken in that work had inspired them to found in England *THE ROUND TABLE*, a task in which Lord Milner took an active interest. It was in fact a successor to an earlier review, *The State*, which they had published in South Africa, devoted to the furtherance of the policy of Union. During his years of convalescence John Dove actively co-operated with them.

During the war, though his health precluded ordinary soldiering, he joined the Intelligence Department and spent many months in France, devoting himself with his usual single-minded thoroughness to his duties.

At the close of the war he became a director of the Commonwealth Trust, a non-profit-making organisation formed to take over the properties of certain German-Swiss missionary bodies in India and Africa sequestered during the war. He threw himself into this work with his accustomed energy, and despite ill-health made a number of arduous journeys, especially in India, in the service of the Trust. Anyone who has lived in India knows that the worst form of discomfort in the world is railway travelling

John Dove

in the hot weather, and to anyone in delicate health it is torture. It was under conditions like this that John Dove made repeated journeys for the Commonwealth Trust between Madras, Simla and Delhi. This work was performed with conspicuous success, but only at the cost of a serious strain on his health. It was characteristic of him that, in his anxiety to learn all that he could on matters affecting Imperial interests, he returned by motor through Mesopotamia and Palestine.

In 1920, he was appointed editor of *THE ROUND TABLE*, an office which he held until the day of his death.

John Dove's qualities as editor are shown by the fact that, as we believe, the review maintained under his guidance the high level at which those responsible for it have always aimed. His editorship covered the difficult years since the war, when sentiment throughout the Empire suffered a reaction from war enthusiasm, when no clear aim seemed to guide either public policy or public opinion in its different parts, and when the trend was away from rather than towards any closer union. Through all these difficulties Dove remained an ardent believer in the future of the Commonwealth, not for any "jingo" reasons, as those who knew him personally will not need to be told, not even for reasons of defence, but because he believed that to maintain its union would do more than anything else in the world to further the cause of peace and enable its inhabitants to lead a fuller, happier and higher life. It was his first aim, therefore, that during this distracted age, and whatever might appear to be the difficulties and obstacles, *THE ROUND TABLE* should advocate the maintenance of the unity of the Commonwealth, not as a means to greater prosperity or even greater safety, but as a great and noble ideal and as one of the chief instruments for maintaining liberty and bettering—perhaps even saving—our civilisation.

John Dove particularly excelled in the art of letter-writing. Readers of *THE ROUND TABLE* may remember articles in the form of unsigned letters to his friends

John Dove

while he was travelling in foreign countries. These letters were always fresh and illuminating, because in any new environment his extremely sensitive mind recorded his impressions as if on a photographic plate. Too few of these letters were published because, though he wrote many, he could seldom be induced to print them.

He had, moreover, a capacity to seek out and discover new and interesting writers upon important subjects which from time to time might be occupying the public stage. But in the main he was successful as an editor, just as he was in everything else he undertook, because with passionate concentration he devoted to the task in hand his whole soul and energy. He could never do anything by halves. Whether it was his work or whether it was sport, all forms of which he loved, he bent all his energies to the work of the moment. When ill-health shut him off from sport, he could still enjoy it in memory by recalling in his vivid imagination past scenes and incidents. But this concentration, this over-conscientiousness, shortened his life. While he had naturally a strong constitution, accidents, operations, dysentery and arthritis left him in constant ill-health and for almost thirty years it was only by sustained effort that he forced his body to perform its tasks. Nor did his temperament help him to take things at all easily. His was one of those cases where some obscure entangling of threads in early life permanently robs the mind of inward peace except in so far as it can be gained by self-control learnt at much expense over many years. His physical frailties were often of slight account compared with the internal struggle to rid himself of mental strain and depression.

Nevertheless, though he died because he had worn himself out in the service of his fellows, John Dove lived a full life into which there entered much happiness. He would have placed his ill-health and his over-anxiousness low in the scale compared with his intense capacity for enjoyment whether of friendship, or beauty, or work, or life itself. But though his friends wished to spare him, he could not

John Dove

spare himself. Even in the last month or two of his life, when it was fully apparent that he must relinquish his editorship, he took immediate steps to be admitted to the Slade School of Art in order that he might seriously take up the study of painting, for which he had much talent. It was characteristic of him that he should insist with his friends that this new interest was to be pursued in no dilettante spirit, but with the full intention of mastering it. For though he had sapped his physical vitality, his spirit remained youthful. Perhaps it was this which made him look far younger than his age. Certainly he would never admit, for one instant, that his bodily frailties had anything to do with advancing years. These never impaired the youthfulness of spirit which, joined with a strong sense of humour, made him so delightful a companion.

Of his rarer gifts, it is not easy for those of us who worked and lived with him intimately for many years to speak. What was so exceptional in him was not outstanding intellectual capacity or originality of mind but something far more uncommon. No one could be in close contact with him without coming under its influence. "I was indeed grieved . . ." wrote a friend, "to read of John Dove's death. I had not seen him for a long time and did not know he was more ill than usual. So it was a great shock. John Dove had one of the most beautiful dispositions I have ever known, a crystal clearness that radiated a very high quality of life. He was one of those rare human beings who in this dusty world are a standing testimony to the reality of things spiritual. The world is infinitely poorer to all that knew him." To a nature utterly selfless John Dove joined an obstinate and unfaltering devotion to all noble causes. To many of his friends it seemed that, not through effort and struggle, but by some innate gift of nature he was nearer to unseen things than the common ruck of men. It was something which did not show itself merely on occasions but which so to speak coloured his whole being—an understanding, as the author of the Book of Wisdom

John Dove

says, "which they that use become the friends of God," a spirit which is "the unspotted mirror of the power of God and the image of his goodness."

John Dove served his generation with all his strength. But to those who knew him, what he was was more important than what he did. While his friends mourn his loss, they are deeply grateful for his memory.

ISOLATION, ALLIANCE OR KELLOGG PACT

THE events of the last few weeks have created a crisis, both in Europe and in the Far East, which has been long impending and which will compel both Great Britain and the Dominions to take, in the near future, decisions of vital importance. It is now quite clear that the Covenant cannot, under present circumstances, discharge the full function that it was designed to perform. It cannot give security to its signatories against armaments and war. The League may soon revive, but it will only do so if certain difficulties are removed. For the moment, while supporting the League in all its activities as the only international organisation that exists, we are faced with the necessity of deciding between the alternative methods of dealing with the problem of security that are indicated in the title of this article.

This is not a decision that can be taken by Great Britain or by the Dominions by themselves. It can only be a Commonwealth decision, for the issue affects the first principles upon which the Commonwealth rests. It would appear that certain of the Dominion Governments are proposing an Imperial Conference to discuss the revision of the Ottawa agreements. It is even more important that there should be an Imperial Conference to discuss the situation created by recent events in Europe and the Far East. In order to understand more clearly the problem of to-day it may be useful to make a brief survey of the path by which we have reached our present international position.

Isolation, Alliance or Kellogg Pact

I. THE LESSON OF HISTORY

THE central international characteristic of the Victorian age was the preoccupation of the States of Europe, the Americas and the Far East with their own local affairs, combined with the predominance of Great Britain as a world Power. This position she held because she alone possessed a great navy and the bases that enabled it to be used in all parts of the globe. The influence of sea-power is very plainly shown in the diplomatic exchanges between the European Powers at the time of the Boer War, when it became clear to them that no kind of intervention outside Europe was practical, so long as Great Britain held command of the seas. During much of the Victorian era the policy of free trade, adopted by Great Britain in the 'forties, was also world-wide, leading to a great export of capital and to the economic development of all parts of the world—to the great advantage of Great Britain, who was first in the field. The dominance of the free trade ideal was challenged by the ideal of national self-sufficiency, when national protection was inaugurated, mainly by the United States after the civil war and by Germany after the wars of 1870.

During the whole of this period it was the policy of Great Britain to encourage Europe to maintain a political balance of power within itself, while she avoided entanglement therein, except in so far as her own vital interest required her to protect the Channel by guaranteeing the neutrality of Belgium. The result was that there were no world wars (as had been common in the preceding century) between 1815 and 1914. Great Britain was able to avoid being drawn into local wars in Europe (except the Crimean war) and the Far East; and unless Great Britain was drawn in, no war could be a world war.

This situation began to change with the decision of

1914 The Lesson of History

Germany at the beginning of this century to build a navy capable of challenging that of Great Britain. This led in the first place to the Anglo-Japanese alliance of 1902, which gave security to Japan against interference from Europe in her impending struggle with Russia, and which enabled Great Britain to concentrate her fleet in the North Sea. It led, in the second place, in 1904, to the Anglo-French entente, which ended the long and bitter colonial controversies between France and Great Britain. As the German naval programme grew more menacing (and it eventually provided for a German fleet larger than our own) Great Britain became more concerned with Europe; hence the Entente insensibly developed into an informal but definite association of Great Britain with the Dual Alliance of France and Russia, as the balancing factor in Europe to the powerful Triple Alliance of Germany, Austria-Hungary and Italy. When the war broke out in 1914, Great Britain, by reason partly of her guarantee of Belgian neutrality, partly of her undertaking to protect the northern coasts of France against invasion, and partly of the Entente itself, found that she had no option but to enter the war, carrying the Dominions with her. Historians will dispute for centuries the question of responsibility for that war, whether it was due mainly to the Kaiser's determination to build an immense navy, as we believe, or whether it was the "encirclement" of Germany that produced the German armaments, or whether the so-called encirclement was only an inevitable reply by her neighbours to the militarist and expansionist policy and the *Drang nach Osten* of Germany herself. We need not pause to try to anticipate the historian's verdict, because the real answer given by the Allies at the end of the war was that, however the blame for forcing the issue might be distributed, the ultimate reason for the explosion was international anarchy; and that competitive armaments and periodic war were inevitable unless some kind of collective international system could be established in the world, to

Isolation, Alliance or Kellogg Pact

settle international disputes by pacific means and to prevent resort to war.

The Covenant of the League of Nations was intended to lay the foundations of a new international order. It rested on two basic themes: first, the right of every civilised nation to independent self-government in its internal affairs; and, second, acceptance by every civilised nation of the obligation to consult regularly together about world affairs; to try in the first instance to solve difficult international problems by the machinery of the Covenant; to revise, through the same machinery, treaties that were out of date; to reduce armaments to the defensive level; and to take collective action against any State that resorted to war in defiance of its obligations. Whatever criticisms may be made of the text of the Covenant, the principle underlying it is eternally true. There will be no peace in the world and no security or lasting liberty or progress, until the nations submit themselves to the reign of law with all that the words imply. Anarchy in international as in domestic affairs spells violence, injustice and war.

II. THE BREAKDOWN OF SECURITY THROUGH THE LEAGUE

THE Covenant of the League of Nations did not establish a reign of law on earth. It was only a beginning. It was not even a very long step towards that goal. It left the sovereignty of States unimpaired, and it relied upon co-operation and agreement for success. It was in no sense a world State. Yet even so it was never even launched as its authors had intended, and subsequent events have revealed very clearly, not any defect in the idea underlying it, but two fundamental weaknesses in the system that actually came into being. The first was the refusal of the United States to join the League on the ground that it seemed to imply permanent entanglement in the affairs of a distracted Europe. This not only greatly

Breakdown of Security through the League weakened the world authority of the League but carried with it other far-reaching consequences. Part of the settlement drawn up by the Peace Conference had been an Anglo-American treaty of guarantee whereby the United States and Great Britain were to undertake, in addition to their liabilities under Article 16 of the Covenant, to come to the assistance of France in the case of unprovoked aggression by Germany. This treaty now lapsed with the refusal of the United States to join the League. American withdrawal further made it impossible for Great Britain to give effect to the economic sanctions against a member of the League that resorted to war in defiance of its obligations, as provided under Article 16 of the Covenant, without running the risk of renewing with the United States the ancient quarrel over commercial rights of neutrals and the "freedom of the seas." France, deprived of her guarantee, and observing how Article 16 had been weakened as a sanction against attempts to alter the treaty settlement by force, proceeded to base her security, not upon the League collective system, but upon maintaining a military preponderance against Germany. This she secured partly through her own armaments and partly through military alliances with the new nation States of eastern Europe, Poland and the Little Entente, whose armies she now proceeded to organise and equip. Thus the League has never been the real support of European stability where the great Powers have been concerned. This has been the second fundamental weakness.

The League itself, however, came into being and secured the adhesion of practically all nations except the United States and Russia. For a time it seemed to become the focus of world affairs, and it dealt satisfactorily with many difficult international disputes. But gradually events have revealed the consequences of the weaknesses in the League, as an instrument for guaranteeing world peace, to which we have referred. The first was that the affairs of the Far East and the treaties for the limitation of naval

Isolation, Alliance or Kellogg Pact

armament were arranged at Washington under the auspices of the United States and not under the auspices of the League. This inevitably immensely lessened the authority of the League in the Pacific area. It contributed to the delay and ineffectiveness of Geneva in dealing with the Manchurian problem and with Sino-Japanese relations, and to the withdrawal of Japan from the League at the end of 1932.

Again, it has unfortunately never been found possible to bring Article 19 of the Covenant, which gives the League authority to negotiate the revision of treaties, into practical effect. The Treaty of Versailles, framed in the heat of the passions generated by the war, and imposed rather than negotiated with the defeated Powers, was admittedly a "stiff" one. Though not nearly so bad as is often now proclaimed, it clearly requires some modification in the light of experience and of changes since 1919. But France and her allies of eastern Europe—driven, as they contend, to provide for their own safety by the failure of the League to give security against war—have insisted more and more rigidly upon the integral maintenance of the Treaty of Versailles. They agreed, it is true, to release Germany from the occupation of the Rhineland before the date fixed in the Treaty. Reparations, again, despite the attempt to force payment by the occupation of the Ruhr, have disappeared through their own inherent impossibility. The Locarno treaties pledged Germany and her neighbours never to resort to war, and have committed Great Britain and Italy to intervene if there is an attack by either side on her western frontiers or if there is a violation of the demilitarised zone of the Rhineland. As a result of these concessions Germany joined the League in 1926. But the League has seemed, none the less, at any rate to the ex-enemy Powers, to be an instrument for enforcing the treaties rather than for remedying defects in them.

Finally, there has been the long-drawn-out agony of the

Breakdown of Security through the League Disarmament Conference. Both the treaties of peace and the Covenant contemplated that if the League system was to grow in authority all nations should reduce their armaments to a defensive level. Indeed, no collective system can succeed unless all its members are both resolutely determined to take common action against a war-maker and to reduce their armaments to moderate police proportions. Collective security goes hand in hand with disarmament. There can be no security in an armed world, if only because, when all the Great Powers are heavily armed, sanctions against one or more of them would assume the proportions of a world war, while the small Powers would be too frightened to co-operate. But disarmament has been prevented not by technical but by political difficulties.

The economic sanctions provided by Article 16 might be effective if they were put into operation simultaneously and universally. But they are obviously ineffective if only partially applied. The power of the collective guarantee has, therefore, been largely destroyed by the abstention of the United States and Russia and now of Germany and Japan. Faced by this fact, France, as already described, has remained passionately convinced that her security depends upon her maintaining with her allies a military preponderance over Germany, unless effective international sanctions could be created to replace it. On the other hand, Germany has been no less passionately determined to escape from the defencelessness, insecurity and inequality in armaments imposed upon her by the Treaty of Versailles, and still maintained fifteen years after the Armistice. The overthrow of the Republic by the Nazi dictatorship, indeed, has been largely based upon an appeal to national self-respect. Germany has left both the Disarmament Conference and the League in protest against delay by the ex-allies in fulfilling their declarations, in 1918 of intention to disarm, and in 1932 of intention to give her "equality."

Isolation, Alliance or Kellogg Pact

Hence there has arisen the long controversy about security and sanctions as the conditions of disarmament, and about the true function of the League, a controversy between what may loosely be called the French or continental and the British or English-speaking schools of thought. The French view is derived from the conviction that Europe, and especially the defeated Powers, cannot be expected to keep the peace unless they are compelled to do so, and that in practice the only question is how the sanction for European peace, which has hitherto been represented by their own military preponderance, can be converted into a collective combination of nations adequately armed and fully determined to take automatic and overwhelming military action against any Power that seeks to alter the Versailles settlement by force. To them the Versailles treaties are, so to speak, the constitution of Europe. Any proposal to modify them except by the practically inoperative Article 19 of the Covenant is unconstitutional and treasonable and ought to call forth the same kind of universal reprobation and common action as rebellion does within the State. The French school is convinced that Europe will never enjoy lasting peace except under a régime of this kind, especially now that the Nazis are in power. In its view it is the primary function of the League to give this kind of guarantee, and if it can provide such absolute security then France will be willing to consider some measure of disarmament.

The view of the British peoples, derived from their long peace during the nineteenth century and from their own experience in the British Commonwealth, instinctively recoils from a peace system and a concept of the League that imply that peace depends primarily upon coercion. In their view no peace system, and no League, can succeed unless its members are sufficiently confident that pacific methods can remedy grievances for them to renounce the idea of altering the *status quo* by force; and they consider that "sanctions" should correspond to the intervention of

Breakdown of Security through the League

unarmed police in a peace-loving and law-abiding country, separating occasional combatants excited by passing controversies, and not to the armed police whose main task is continuously to protect a régime of dictatorship against those who seek to upset it. Disarmament, which to the French has always seemed to imply disarming the policeman in face of the bandit, has always seemed to the British the outward and visible sign of the kind of world in which alone the League could work or the sanctions contemplated under Article 16 suffice. The original concept of the League is nearer to the British than to the French view ; for the Covenant does not prohibit war or provide for instant and overwhelming military sanctions. It requires that no nation shall resort to war until it has brought into full play during a prescribed period the machinery for arbitration, mediation or conference, set up by the League, and also requires all its members to take action under Article 16 against any State that resorts to war in defiance of this obligation.

Here is the real cause of the long-drawn-out controversy about the proposed pact for mutual assistance, the proposed Geneva protocol and lately about disarmament. The original concept of the Covenant has recently almost been lost sight of, and "sanctions" have come more and more to mean, as the condition of disarmament, a watertight agreement to take instant and overwhelming action, economic if that is sufficient, military if that is necessary, against any nation that resorts to war or does not comply with a disarmament convention.

We are now, therefore, at a crisis caused by two differing concepts of the League of Nations and precipitated by the failure of the Disarmament Conference to secure universal disarmament and by the consequent rearmament of Germany. Hitherto the British Government have made it clear that they were not prepared to abandon what we have called the British view. They have refused additional guarantees and pressed for disarmament all round. France has

Isolation, Alliance or Kellogg Pact

refused disarmament unless it is "within a régime of security" of the kind we have described. It is quite clear, therefore, that the Covenant can no longer be made to work, so far as Europe is concerned, in the manner in which it has always been conceived by the British Commonwealth. The French will not disarm without new guarantees over and above those provided in the Covenant and the Locarno treaties. We have been unwilling to give these; Germany is rearming and Europe is feverishly seeking a new basis of stability, as the old system based on French preponderance disappears.

III. THE CHOICE BEFORE US

IN these circumstances what is the right course for Great Britain and the Dominions, who have hitherto been the mainstays of the League, and who still believe in the collective idea? There are three broad possibilities. The first is to revert to the policy of splendid isolation. The second is to attempt to stabilise Europe by entering into new commitments and guarantees. The third is to fall back upon the Kellogg Pact. Let us consider these in order.

Isolation, as a policy, is impracticable for any nation to-day. The contraction and interdependence of the modern world, and still more the advent of air armament, make it futile for any great Power to base its policy on ability to remain neutral in time of war. It may be possible to localise a war and prevent its becoming a world war. But the nations will not succeed in that purpose by trying to ignore war or be indifferent to it, or to behave as if war was the private concern of the belligerents alone, except in so far as they trespassed on neutral rights. It can only be achieved by the most vigilant and resolute action on the part of the rest of the world, designed to prevent war from arising, to stop it from spreading, and to bring

The Choice Before Us

it rapidly to an end on reasonable terms. Neutrality, furthermore, is possible only by leave of the belligerents, for it takes at least two to make a neutral, as it takes two to make a war. Belligerents can always force neutrals into war if they think it to their advantage to do so.

Moreover, in the pre-war age Great Britain, so long as she had a superior fleet, was immune from invasion from Europe or Asia. So were the Dominions. Air-power has destroyed this immunity by creating instruments that can cross frontiers and seas and attack vital nerve centres, and that cannot be wholly prevented from doing so. It seems now to be accepted that the only real security against air attack is the destruction of all the enemy's aerodromes and bases—an almost impossible task except by military occupation. In a European conflict Great Britain thus may be forced against her will into war. Any war in which Great Britain is involved automatically becomes a world war, because her most potent weapon is sea-power, her belligerent activities consequently extend all over the globe, and the use of sea-power to interfere with the trade of her enemies inevitably brings her into dangerous conflict with the United States—who now has a navy as large as her own—and with other neutral Powers. Isolation, as a policy, is out of date.

There is a considerable body of opinion in Great Britain which thinks that in present circumstances the best course is for Great Britain to try to prevent war in Europe by entering into fresh commitments there, and thus to stabilise the peace of the world. Two possible forms of commitment are suggested. The first is that she should guarantee a regional or European disarmament convention. The other is that she should enter into some form of defensive alliance with France. We are opposed to either of these policies for two main reasons.

The first is that such a course is unnecessary and would not, in fact, secure peace in Europe. As we have already pointed out, the League itself has never been able to

Isolation, Alliance or Kellogg Pact

assure security in Europe. The tension that is so manifest to-day is due to the fact that the system of stabilising Europe by the military preponderance of France and her military associates is breaking down (as it had inevitably to break down) and is being replaced by a system of stabilising Europe by means of an internal balance of power. The method of stabilising by balance is a preferable alternative to stabilising by preponderance, because it does not generate the heat that has produced the Nazi movement. The practical issue before Great Britain is whether she is to be drawn into some kind of special commitment, which will, in practice, bind her to assist in maintaining the preponderance of the French military combination in Europe or make her part of a new European balance, or put new automatic guarantees behind a disarmament convention in such a way as will involve acceptance of the French view of "sanctions." In our view any such arrangements would only delay the stabilisation of Europe. The new balance will not be brought into being until it is clear that Great Britain does not intend, directly or indirectly, to form part of it.

Nor is a renewed competition in armaments in Europe inherent in a new balance any more than it was during most of the nineteenth century, for the reason that, wherever the Nazi philosophy may ultimately lead, Herr Hitler, in his own disarmament proposals, does not ask even for immediate equality in a European balance of power. No great nation in Europe really wants war to-day or can afford to enter into a new armaments race, which will, at the end, leave the parties in the same relative position. Europe, barring unpredictable explosions in the Balkans, has a prospect of five to ten years of peace on a basis of balance, and within that period either it ought to be possible to reconstruct the League system on a basis of real equality in Europe, or it will have become clear that Germany or some other Power is preparing to upset the European system by force, because revision is impossible by pacific

The Choice Before Us

means, and in that case the facts will make necessary and possible the organisation of collective resistance.

Moreover, any form of automatic guarantee will only increase the probability of war. For the essence of such a system, whether it takes the form of guaranteeing a regional arms convention or that of a defensive alliance, is to take the fundamental decision, whether she should go to war or not, out of the hands of Great Britain, and put it in the hands of one or more of the European Powers. For any Power that added to its armaments contrary to an arms convention, or that forced or blundered into a war, could compel Great Britain, under her treaty obligations, to take part in it. Who can say, in the present tension of Europe, that one of the general staffs among the present European Powers would not scheme to precipitate a crisis if they knew that by doing so they could involve Great Britain in the struggle on their side?

The second main reason for resisting any proposal that Great Britain should enter into any kind of new or "automatic" commitment in Europe is that such a policy must almost inevitably lead to the break-up of the British Commonwealth and to the risk of adding a war with the United States to a war with Europe, unless the Dominions and the United States are themselves parties to it. An undertaking to take sanctions under a regional disarmament pact will, in practice, almost inevitably spell war. No great Power will tolerate sanctions against itself unless they are really universal and therefore have behind them something of the omnipotence that supports the ordinary policeman. If they are not universal, it will resist them or retaliate against them, with the inevitable result of war. In any case, the principal instrument that Great Britain will use either for sanctions or for war is sea-power, reinforced perhaps by mutual long-distance bombing. Yet the use of sea-power to interfere with neutral commerce has invariably produced a violent quarrel between the United States and Great Britain. Whenever, during

Isolation, Alliance or Kellogg Pact

the last 150 years, either Power has been engaged in war, even civil war, they have been brought to war or to the verge of war. The neutral rights issue produced the war of 1812, and the difficulties over the Trent affair in the American civil war, while in the world war it forced the United States either to fight Great Britain for the freedom of her trade or Germany for the freedom of the world. If it had not been for the invasion of Belgium she might well have entered the war on the other side. Any light-hearted engagement in Europe involving automatic commitment to war might involve Great Britain not only in war in Europe but at the same time in war with the United States.

But that is only the beginning of the difficulty. Canada, Australia, South Africa, New Zealand and the Irish Free State, as well as India, are now full partners in the Commonwealth. They have hitherto been strong supporters of the League of Nations, and so long as there is any chance of its becoming the effective instrument for a collective international system they will continue to support it. But the proposals under consideration are not for making the League once more universal but for new commitments in Europe; because with Japan and the United States outside the League the Covenant is not considered to be effective either for giving security or for maintaining peace or for revising treaties in Europe. To all such extra guarantees they have hitherto refused to subscribe. Only Australia and New Zealand ratified the abortive Anglo-American treaty of guarantee. All the Dominions refused to sign the Locarno treaties. If they now see Great Britain entering into new pledges, not as part of a universal collective system of peace, but in order to try to stabilise Europe, pledges that involve liability to automatic commitment to war, are they not likely to refuse to countersign? Might they not drift away from a Great Britain liable to be plunged into a war in Europe at somebody else's discretion, towards a United States

possessed of an equal navy and committed, at any rate at first, to neutrality and a free hand if a war breaks out? They could doubtless come to the assistance of Great Britain if her vital interests were directly menaced, but we very much doubt whether they will take any responsibility for trying to stabilise the vortex of European militarism.

The issue goes even deeper. Suppose that one member of the European coalition hostile to Great Britain were in close association with a Far Eastern Power, or suppose Japan, having already abandoned the League and taken Manchuria, developed an expansionist policy in the Pacific, as she now seems bent on doing, would not Canada, Australia and New Zealand, States fronting on the Pacific, inevitably move away from the side of the Power whose navy would have to remain in European waters under her European commitments, towards the side of the Power whose navy was uncommitted? If the Commonwealth is to endure, the primary obligation of its defensive organisation must be to its own members, wherever they are situated, and not to European Powers. There is no stronger case for trying to stabilise Europe by entering into special regional commitments than there is for trying to stabilise the Far East by entering into special regional commitments. To do either would be to tear the Commonwealth to pieces; to try to do both would be to undertake a task beyond its strength.

There is, however, a third alternative. It faces the realities that, for the time being at any rate, have made ineffectual the League procedure for the giving of security and the prevention of war; it is still based on the collective principle; yet it avoids the dangers of isolation and of undertaking new regional guarantees. It is that, without relaxing our support for the League as an instrument of international co-operation, we should deal with the security problem by combining the system whereby Great Britain prevented world war from 1815 to 1914 with the Kellogg Pact.

Isolation, Alliance or Kellogg Pact

A return to the policy of European equilibrium does not mean deserting France and Belgium; for in this century, as in the last, Great Britain cannot escape altogether the consequences of her geographical position. She can never willingly allow the occupation of the other side of the Channel by a hostile Power. She can never tolerate another invasion of Belgium or any attempt to modify the frontiers of France or to detach her colonial possessions by force. That should be made absolutely clear, not by a defensive alliance with France, but by a formal declaration to Germany, so that Europe may understand the realities of our position, and not be left in doubt as it was before the Great War. That, indeed, is the practical meaning to-day of the Locarno treaties, whose technical provisions, guaranteeing the demilitarised Rhineland subject to interpretation of "aggression" by the Council of the League, are out of date. If necessary, that interpretation should be made plain to the world, because nobody now believes that Great Britain will go to war with France to protect the immunity of the German Rhineland or with Germany to prevent her from placing troops on her own territory. Such a declaration, in itself, would mean an immense increase of security to Belgium and to France. But there is all the difference between a declaration of this kind and any kind of alliance. For the first brings Great Britain into a European war only if there is a direct attack on France and Belgium, or an attempt to modify their frontiers. Other European wars, even though France itself were engaged, would not automatically involve her. An alliance, on the other hand, means in effect war whenever France is at war.

Once the principle is adopted that while Great Britain has a limited interest in Western Europe she will definitely not form part of any European balance of power, the way is open to the restoration of the 1815-1914 system in a much more universal and satisfactory form. The essence of the old British system was that because Great

The Choice Before Us

Britain refused to form part of the European balance: she could exercise a decisive influence, either by throwing her weight on one side or the other in a conflict, or by localising it and preventing it from becoming a world war. The difficulty of Great Britain in attempting to return to this system to-day is partly that she no longer has her old command of the sea, and partly that no one could stand such dictation by Great Britain alone. The whole situation, however, has been changed by the Kellogg Pact, which is signed both by the Dominions and by the United States, as well as by practically all other nations.

The Kellogg Pact does not imply neutrality. On the contrary it recognises that war anywhere must be a primary concern of every nation, because war may always spread so as to include itself. Though it provides no machinery for forcing compliance with the obligation to renounce war as an instrument of national policy, the Kellogg Pact implies—and has been recognised by Mr. Stimson, the former Secretary of State of the United States, to imply—that the old concept of neutrality is out of date. It is clear that if ever the world is to have peace it will be because nations, like citizens, come to realise that the prevention of violence or the maintenance of world "law and order" is their primary interest, and that a world *pax* will only begin when all nations learn that they must combine against an aggressor and compel resort to pacific modes of settlement. If the more ambitious instrument of the Covenant created in 1918 has not yet succeeded, we may find more appropriate foundations for a new attempt in the universal Kellogg Pact.

World peace was maintained from 1815 to 1914 because Great Britain avoided "entanglement" in Europe except for the guarantee to Belgium, and because she had command of the sea. No Power could carry war outside Europe without challenging Great Britain, and nobody already at war cared to do that. If Great Britain avoids automatic commitments in Europe, other than those necessary for

Isolation, Alliance or Kellogg Pact

her own self-preservation, such as the guarantee to Belgium and a properly interpreted Locarno treaty, and if Great Britain and the United States agree that before using the sea-power that they now jointly control they should consult together, there is no reason why the English-speaking world, with the support of all the non-belligerent Powers, should not prevent world war in this century as Great Britain alone did in the last. This purpose involves no kind of alliance, offensive or defensive, between Great Britain and the United States. It simply means a common recognition of the fact that they cannot afford to quarrel, that if they act independently they are liable to be driven to quarrel, that they have a common interest in helping to maintain the peace, and that in sea-power, backed by the new air arm, they have the most potent weapon for achieving this end. For no Power will lightly force them into war against itself, while their joint influence as mediators and the pressure they could exert to end wars on just terms would be increased.

It is all the more possible for them to act in this way because the Kellogg Pact has introduced a new concept of "neutrality" which is of great importance. Before the war every nation had the right to go to war, and interference was regarded as an unfriendly act. Neutrals were simply given such "rights" as, in practice, belligerents had been willing to concede to them. To-day any nation that resorts to war puts itself in the wrong, as a peace-breaker. The rights lie not with the belligerents but with the neutrals, or rather with the peace-respecting Powers. Both under the Covenant and under the Kellogg Pact they have the right or even the duty to try to stop those who are disturbing the peace of nations and to bring about a just settlement.

It is the nations that in pre-war parlance were called neutral who are the real foundation for the collective system, not the war-maddened peoples of Europe. The plain duty of the British Commonwealth, which has

The Problem of the Commonwealth

already demonstrated how to work a collective system within its own boundaries, is to give the lead required to make the pacific part of the world an effective force, under the Kellogg Pact, against aggression and militarism. But the first step towards such a policy must be disentanglement from automatic commitment in what Sir Wilfrid Laurier used to call "the vortex of European militarism." And that is really the first step towards making possible the re-emergence of the League as the central peace machinery of mankind.

IV. THE PROBLEM OF THE COMMONWEALTH

TWENTY-FOUR years ago this review was founded in order to discuss the relations that should subsist between the nations of the British Commonwealth in view of the evidently approaching war. The argument then persistently set forth was that no system of defence could endure in which on the one hand the main financial responsibility rested upon Great Britain alone, and on the other Great Britain was able to commit the Dominions to war without their prior consent. The outbreak of the war answered these questions so far as the immediate situation was concerned, because, such was the magnitude of the danger, the whole Empire rallied to the cause of the allies. Responsibility for the conduct of the war, financial and human, was fully shouldered by the Dominions, and by the end of the war they shared also in the responsibilities of the War Cabinet and of the Peace Conference.

The problem of the mutual relations of the Commonwealth was settled for the period immediately after the war partly by the decisions of successive Imperial Conferences, culminating in the Statute of Westminster, and partly by membership of the League of Nations, whereby all nations of the Commonwealth voluntarily assumed the obligation to support the collective system embodied in

Isolation, Alliance or Kellogg Pact

the Covenant. Though the major responsibility for day-to-day foreign policy still rested upon Great Britain, who had a permanent seat on the Council of the League and maintained the navy out of her own resources, the main policy of the Empire was to support the League system, and nearly all the Dominions have at times had temporary seats on the Council.

But the events discussed in the earlier sections of this article bring to the front once more issues not unlike those that confronted us before the war. If the League has temporarily broken down, not as a system of international co-operation but as a system of security, if the ideal of universal disarmament is out of reach, if four of the great Powers, one of them fronting on the Pacific, are free, or about to liberate themselves, from the obligations of the Covenant, what is the international policy of the Commonwealth to be? If, moreover, as seems probable, there is likely to be rearmament of some of the great Powers, then, in spite of any limitation there may be, defence will once more become a major imperial preoccupation. Is each part of the Commonwealth to prepare to defend itself, or are they all to co-operate in a common scheme of imperial defence? If the latter course is adopted, how is defence policy to be formulated and co-ordinated, and how is its cost to be distributed? Finally, what is the significance of the new air arm? Does it mean that the old long-drawn wars of the past are over, and that the new strategy implies instant and overwhelming blows at the heart to disorganise the enemy's power of resistance? It is obvious that the advent of air-power has transformed the problem of defence both for Great Britain, which lies alongside the congested area and the great air forces of Europe, and of India and the Dominions, which lie far away but are nevertheless accessible to air attack as they have never been to military or naval attack. Is it still possible to arrive at a universal convention to abandon bombing from the air, with sanctions

The Problem of the Commonwealth

adequate to deter a possible violator? That seems to be the one form of universal disarmament treaty still within reach.

It is quite obvious that we have entered into a new phase of world and Empire history. There is no ground for panic. The League, in our view, will in due time come back into its own, and meanwhile we should do all in our power to prevent the further weakening of the only real international organisation that exists. The time has come first for deep and serious reflection, then for consultation and finally for decision, between the members of the Commonwealth. We have set forth some of the fundamental considerations that must, we think, be taken into account. When the facts and the issues are a little clearer, we consider that an Imperial Conference should be held to define the policy of the nations of the Commonwealth towards Europe, towards the Far East, towards the Covenant and the Kellogg Pact, and towards the problem of their mutual defence.

AIR POWER AND IMPERIAL DEFENCE

AIR-MARSHAL LORD TRENCHARD once said that if he had the casting vote he would "abolish the air"; for though during peace time aircraft might prove a greater blessing to the Empire than to any other country, this could not balance out the harm they would do in war. It is pertinent to recall that a hundred years ago the Duke of Wellington held a similar view about the steamship. In 1828, twenty-six years after the first practical steamship was launched, the Colonial Office received from the Admiralty the following answer to a request for a steamer to convey mails from Malta to the Ionian Islands: their lordships "felt it their bounden duty to discourage to the utmost of their ability the employment of steam vessels, as they considered the introduction of steam was calculated to strike a fatal blow to the naval supremacy of the Empire." This is exactly what it did not do; for not only did the steamship enrich the Empire beyond the dreams of early nineteenth century avarice, but it enabled Great Britain to found a navy which until 1914 rendered the Empire all but invulnerable. In 1878 Mr. Gladstone very rightly said:

The strength of England is not to be found in alliances with the great military Powers, but is to be sought henceforth in the efficiency and supremacy of her navy.

It was this supremacy which enabled the greater colonies to grow into Dominions and become independent nations. It was this supremacy which enabled them and Great Britain to enter the world war as a single unit, and it is

The War of the Future

this supremacy which to-day is challenged by air-power. Yet, as the Duke of Wellington was wrong, may not Lord Trenchard also be wrong? May not air-power not only vastly increase the riches of the Commonwealth by speeding up communication, but also unify it by quickening contact between its parts, and above all maintain its security as fully as once did steam-power?

I. THE WAR OF THE FUTURE

IN considering how this last contingency may be fulfilled we must examine the technique of modern war, a technique that has to fit three-dimensional movement. The military object in war is to enforce a policy or to resist its enforcement, the means employed being direct physical action, economic pressure, and attack on morale. The first is normally the duty of the army, the second that of the navy, and the third, as we believe the future will reveal, is pre-eminently the domain of the air force. As long, however, as we require soldiers on land and sailors at sea, the air force must also assist them in their work. There are, therefore, three main air force problems: a military problem, a naval problem and a problem peculiar to the air. The first two are largely concerned with information and protection—the maintenance of the freedom of military and naval movements on land and sea. The third is a matter of gaining, not air supremacy, a conception derived from the old technique of war, but a supremacy over the enemy's political will by dementing his civil will. It is not by tactical action directed against his army and his navy that this object can be achieved, nor yet by a clash with his air force if this can be avoided, but by an attack on the morale of his people, against which those instruments can no longer afford direct protection. This is the keystone in the arch of the new technique.

That the full meaning of this technique is not generally

Air Power and Imperial Defence

understood is seen from the question that is so frequently asked : is it feasible to replace an army and a navy by an air force ? This question originates from a misconception of the military and naval object, which is not to kill soldiers and to sink ships, but to change the policy that these soldiers and ships are defending. If, in the event of war, an air force can change this policy with less physical destruction than armies and navies have had to effect in the past, then an air force will not absorb the military purpose of navies and armies, but will instead establish a new conception of war, in which their main rôle will be the occupation of land and sea after a victory has been won by aircraft over the enemy's morale.

Though this change in technique is not as yet fully appreciated, the feeling of impotence that it has created in the political mind ever since the conclusion of the world war has contorted Governments into the proverbial position of the ostrich. One and all have been agreed that the most terrible thing that can happen in another war is public panic, overthrowing them and indeed perhaps the whole political system. Yet in place of accepting this possibility and examining it in order to discover an antidote, each in turn has plunged into the realm of political witchcraft ; for all have exorcised war and have attempted to lay the newer and more scientific weapons under interdict. In this terror, which has paralysed our statesmanship, the problem of the Commonwealth has been almost forgotten. Submarines and aeroplanes may be awkward inventions for a non-self-supporting and overcrowded Great Britain, but in the circumstances that face the majority of our Dominions and colonies are not they a valuable as well as an essential part of Empire defence ? Have we learned nothing from the world war, or is it that we are determined to learn nothing ? Given the military and naval weapons with which that war was fought, great decisive battles, whether on land or at sea, are virtually events of the past. Its leading characteristics were blockade and siege, and this type of

The War of the Future

war can only be ended by the revolt of a starved out enemy. Consequently the end is the same as that which is likely to be effected, at infinitely less cost of life, wealth and property, by air attack.

Yet it is perfectly true that had it not been for the ability of the British navy to maintain an effective blockade of the Central Powers, the Empire could neither have entered the war as a unit, nor, during its course, have maintained itself as such. This is an undoubted fact, but it should not mislead us, for air-power is bound to change the whole of this problem.

Since a blockade takes months and even years before its full effect is felt, the problem is as much one of time as one of means. The weapon that most effectively reduces military time is the aeroplane, not only because it can move more rapidly than any other arm, but because it can be quickly manufactured, and because its moral effect is so immediately incisive. Given a reasonably good civil air service to work from as well as the necessary materials—metals, oil, etc.—there is no reason why a nation should not be able, immediately before or during a war, to turn out large numbers of flying machines. In face of an enemy so equipped, could a blockade, such as we established in the world war, be maintained long enough to prove effective? It is extremely doubtful. To establish a blockade two means are at the disposal of the blockading Power: the closing of the enemy's ports and the destruction of his overseas trade. The first requires the blockading fleet to be based on harbours covering or flanking the sea-approaches to the enemy's ports; if those harbours could be attacked by aircraft the blockading fleet would have to put to sea and risk being harried by submarines. Possibly it would have to remain at sea, for while riding at anchor it would offer a superb target to air bombardment. In the second case the blockading submarines and destroyers would have to operate near the foci of the trade routes, that is, comparatively close to shore; hence unless they were

Air Power and Imperial Defence

strongly supported by aircraft they would be continuously open to observation and attack from the air.

The truth is that at least in European waters, which are comparatively narrow, aircraft rather than submarines and surface craft will prove the more effective means of making and breaking a blockade. A new technique of blockading will have to be developed, the aim of which will be, not to bottle up a harbour or scour the seas for enemy merchantmen, but to keep the enemy's ports under constant or intermittent air bombardment. The purpose would be threefold: to throw their inhabitants into panic and so hamper unloading; to destroy their wharves, warehouses, etc.; and to prevent merchant ships from entering the harbourage. Thus in narrow waters the most powerful weapon of economic attack is probably the aeroplane or seaplane and no longer the submarine. For example, although submarines lying off the mouth of the Thames or the Elbe would by no means be impotent, they would not prove so effective as the destruction or paralysation of the port of London or the port of Hamburg. In this new technique of blockade the critical fact is, that though navies may still be able to close enemy ports, they must operate from land bases which in most cases are exposed to air bombardment, while they cannot directly attack the enemy's aerodromes and so deprive his aircraft of their bases.

A very similar problem arises in regard to keeping sea communications open—a vital imperial war problem. To take an instance that is purely illustrative and has no political significance, by air-power a hostile Italy could block the Mediterranean to British shipping. Italian aircraft, based on Sicily and Tripoli, would not only render Malta untenable, or certainly inoperative as an air base, but would make it all but impossible for British merchantmen and warships to round Cape Bon. Similarly, a hostile France, with aircraft based on Tunis, could block this same gap, and a hostile Spain, with a small though efficient air force, could block the Straits of Gibraltar, if she could not

The War of the Future

turn this one-time impregnable fortress into little more than a dangerous bomb trap.

Similar considerations might be advanced regarding land warfare, but the important point is that while in the world war the decisive operation of war was the economic attack, in a war of scientific weapons this is replaced by the attack on morale, and the idea of destroying by that of terrorizing. Gas, for instance, more especially in the form of a vesicant chemical, is a terror-spreading weapon because it replaces killing by wounding; tanks are terrifying weapons because they instil into unarmoured troops an intense feeling of impotence; submarines are terrifying because their unseen danger becomes ever present to the mind; and similarly aircraft are disseminators of terror because of the suddenness of their attacks and because the civil population is helpless against them.

The new technique of war is thus being built upon the idea of terror and not on that of slaughter combined with material destruction. Its object is to dislodge an idea by awakening an instinct. The idea is the desire to defeat the enemy, the instinct is that of self-preservation. It is no longer a question of imposing will upon will, a maxim that the war manuals never fail parrot-wise to repeat; for the acceptance of one will by another is a rational act, whereas a mind terrorized ceases to be rational, becoming wholly instinctive.

Since this is the object of the attack on morale, it stands to reason that the slaughters and destruction that characterised the old technique of war will be subordinated to this one object of the new technique—the maddening of the enemy. Consequently all searchings after physical and economic targets on sea or land will be subordinated to the one essential action—the attack on the civil population. This does not mean the total suppression of those arms which cannot directly attack the people; it means their adoption of a new and, in a sense, an auxiliary status. Thus tanks, infantry, guns, battleships, cruisers, sub-

Air Power and Imperial Defence

marines, etc. can no longer be looked upon as the spearhead of armament. In the new technique of war their utility will consist first in supplying a base of action for aircraft, and second in occupying the areas that are paralysed by terror. In the hey-day of the old technique, infantry formed the tactical base of operations from which cavalry manoeuvred. In the new, cavalry are replaced by aircraft, and infantry by all the other arms and fortifications that can protect aircraft bases.

Can the civil will be protected from this assault upon its reason? Discipline and organisation will certainly accomplish something, more, probably, than anti-aircraft artillery; for the latter, even though supported by searchlights and sound locators, and in spite of every form of calculating instrument remains distinctly defective. Obviously the most certain protection is to be sought through aircraft, for the aeroplane is the only weapon that can meet opposing planes at high altitudes.

It is sometimes thought that the next war will open with great battles in the air, but the opposite is far more probable. Decisive air encounters will be avoided, because the object is to destroy not material and personnel but morale. Since many cities will be open to attack, and since attacks will be made with extreme rapidity, it will be the exception and not the rule for head-on collisions between opposing air forces to take place. To illustrate how difficult it is to come to grips with an enemy in the air, even when this is the intention, we may quote the instance of a German air squadron detailed to defend Mannheim-Ludwigshafen during the world war.

In the period June 30, 1917, to October 21, 1918, it took the air 54 times with a total of 300 aeroplanes; 16 times out of the 54, 65 aeroplanes flew together, but did not succeed in engaging the enemy in the air over German territory. Thirty-one times, when 172 aeroplanes took the air, they did not come into contact with the enemy at all, and only 7 times, when 63 aeroplanes flew together, was the enemy forced into action, with the result that 8 of his

The Defence of the Commonwealth

aeroplanes were shot down. It is worthy of note that the air squadron was only once able to engage the enemy on his approach, and so prevent him from dropping bombs on Mannheim-Ludwigshafen.

The logical conclusion is that the only reliable protection against civil panic is power to instil panic in the enemy's civil population. The argument of retaliation is two-edged if the object is to create a more perfect state of peacefulness after the war than that which existed before its outbreak. But against would-be maniacs in a mad world it is an extremely powerful argument. As General Groves writes: "The only known effective deterrent to aerial aggression is the fear of reprisals in kind." It is the hangman's rope suspended over every would-be murderer's head, the *lex talionis*—an eye for an eye and a tooth for a tooth.

II. THE DEFENCE OF THE COMMONWEALTH

THE radical change that has been introduced in the technique of war by the rapid evolution of air-power makes it imperative to review our traditional conceptions of imperial defence. In the past, on account of the supremacy of our navy, which commanded the seas in peace as in war, and which was not only the most powerful of war weapons ever created by any single nation but also the most powerful of diplomatic weapons, it was unnecessary for the Dominions to raise fleets of their own or even armies of their own. When an emergency arose, under cover of the British fleet, time could always be gained wherein to make good the peace-time deficiencies in their military preparations.

In 1914, because Great Britain was still an unattackable island and because her fleets picketed every sea, it was possible to turn the hub of the Empire into a vast arsenal, and simultaneously to draw man-power from every quarter of the globe, train it, arm it, equip it and lastly transport

Air Power and Imperial Defence

it to theatres of war sometimes separated by thousands of miles. It was naval power that accomplished this, naval power that by blockading the enemy safeguarded the hub of the Empire, that by keeping communications open allowed the circumference to support and feed the hub, and that, by denying the enemy access to the seas, eventually reduced him to impotence.

Since 1918 all this has changed. The hub is now open to attack such as no navy or army can repel. Blockade is no longer possible in the form that rendered it overwhelming. Mere man-power is not so necessary, because mechanisation is slowly advancing and machine-power is likely to prove the decisive factor on the battlefield. Lastly, sea communications are now far more open to attack. The truth is, that more and more is the burden of imperial defence being loaded upon the shoulders of Great Britain; because although strategically the Dominions have never been independent countries even in the past, they are likely to become less and less so as long as the British navy is still looked upon as the pivot of imperial defence.

To-day we stand where we stood just a hundred years ago. Then steam-power definitely challenged the existence of an Empire founded upon sail-power; now air-power is challenging an Empire founded upon the steamship. Yet if we grasp the changes in war that air-power will eventually force us to grasp, we shall be able to place the Empire on a securer footing in an armed world than it has ever rested upon before. We go so far as to say that the destiny of Western civilisation during the next hundred years, as during the years 1815-1914, once again rests in our hands, and on how we act will depend whether Europe will remain at peace or be plunged into war.

In this problem it is obvious that the starting point is the hub, Great Britain, and that the first step in its solution is to provide this hub with an air force of sufficient size and strength to deter any continental Powers, through fear of reprisals, from launching an air attack upon these islands.

The Defence of the Commonwealth

Though such a force should be able to protect the heart of the Empire, it cannot of itself protect the circumference; consequently the second part of the problem depends, first, upon whether India and the Dominions can provide their own local air protection, and secondly upon whether, in the event of another world war, all the air forces of the Empire could combine against an enemy centralised in one locality or split up among several.

As in every other military problem, the primary determining factor is not strategy or tactics, but equipment and finance. Seventy to eighty years ago, when steam-power was beginning to change the nature of naval warfare, though it was still possible for the colonies to build wooden frigates, it was totally impossible for them to build iron battleships, and even to-day as self-governing Dominions they are not wealthy enough to equip themselves with modern warships on an extensive scale. With the exception of New Zealand, moreover, they have objected to paying money contributions for the furtherance of a defensive policy in which they had no immediate voice, and for the upkeep of a navy whose administration was not in their hands. Australia alone created a navy of any real fighting strength, but her two cruisers and smaller craft have never pretended to be more than an addendum, however valuable, to the British navy, and a nucleus for expansion if the emergency so required.

Air-power, however, alters the whole of this problem, because it is the cheapest form of fighting power that has been introduced during this scientific age. Thus while no Dominion to-day can afford a fleet sufficiently powerful by itself to safeguard her trade and keep open her sea communications, and while no Dominion can as yet afford a mechanised army of any size, all Dominions can afford small but highly efficient military air forces. These units, not being tied to land and sea communications, could probably be concentrated within a few days in an area thousands of miles distant from their starting points.

Air Power and Imperial Defence

There is no question here of any infringement of equality of Dominion status, such as might be read into the subsidising of defences controlled elsewhere, or the creation of instruments of war useless save in co-operation with those of a larger Power. Rather the argument is on the other side; for not only is every air squadron in itself ready instrument of local defence, but air forces, unlike navies, cannot roam at large, putting into port only for fuelling, victualling, and repairs; they demand a land base, and a Dominion would rightly object if an imperial air force, quartered on her territory, were controlled, manned and paid for by any one but herself.

Two further problems must be considered: the first is the incentive behind military expenditure, and the second is the establishment of airways that will facilitate war concentration. These two problems are really one for both depend upon the future development of civil aviation.

Obviously if civil aviation were not a practical proposition military aviation would be no more than a martial luxury which the Dominions could ill afford. But this is not the case, for by reason of the vastness of their size civil aviation is daily becoming more and more of a necessity to them. Here the Dominions have a decided advantage over the Mother Country, because, while Great Britain is little more than a terminus for air routes, India, Canada, Australia and South Africa, without mentioning the large colonies, are in fact natural homes of aviation. It is not too fanciful to predict that, before very long, for every one civil machine in Great Britain there will be two and possibly three in each of these four countries. In fact, the foundation of military power will not as heretofore be concentrated in the hub, but will be distributed throughout the circumference of the Empire. The whole picture of imperial defence will thus be changed; for no longer will the Dominions mainly depend for their security upon Great Britain, but Great Britain will in large part depend for

The Defence of the Commonwealth

her security upon the Dominions. Then and then only will they become true partners in the Empire, taking their full place in it strategically as well as politically. When equality in risk and responsibility is thus accomplished, the Commonwealth of British nations will accord in fact with its constitutional formulae.

The Commonwealth consists in the main of a number of vast independent or semi-independent areas covering nearly a quarter of the globe, to each of whom civil air-power is an essential necessity of progress. Civil air-power is the foundation of military air-power, a foundation from which in a crisis military air-power can rapidly be developed. All the great Dominions, furthermore, are at present out of range of European air attack. Granted, therefore, that a common policy is established in foreign and in defensive affairs, it is possible for the Commonwealth to create from its civil resources a potential, if not an actual, military air force that can hold the balance between the nations. What Power, in the event of another great war, is going to attempt to bomb London out of existence, if, when this dire act is accomplished, the whole aerial might of the Empire will be turned against it in an overwhelming reprisal? It would almost seem that an all-wise Providence has allowed the secret of flight to be discovered not in order to turn humanity mad but in order to prevent it from losing its wits.

If we are realists and look facts in the face, we must recognise that the menace of air warfare has come to stay and that no enchantments can abolish it. We must understand that air-power has radically changed and is radically changing the whole of the technique of war. Its supreme weapon is the attack on morale, the assault on the minds of civil populations, however hideous and barbaric this may seem to us. It can so vastly influence and restrict present-day methods of sea and land warfare as virtually to geld them, if only by the greater rapidity with which it can force a decision. And when we do realise this we shall see that air warfare is but another of those

Air Power and Imperial Defence

mysterious stepping stones across the turbulent river of war which bring us nearer to the far bank called peace. Quite possibly it may be the last of these stones, because it strikes at the origin of all modern wars, crowd-delirium or crowd-hatred ; for it brings the possibility of war and all its insane terrors and destructiveness daily and hourly to the threshold of every home.

Here another comparison may be drawn with the development of steam-power at sea. Not only did it vastly enrich and strengthen the Empire, but it achieved more than this : it reduced the potentialities of naval warfare in a degree that no international conference or agreement could possibly have accomplished. It annihilated piracy and small wars at sea, for iron-clad navies grew so costly that none but the greater maritime Powers could afford to build them. To-day, because nine-tenths of the naval power of the world is concentrated in the hands of five nations, naval causes of war and naval warfare itself have been vastly restricted.

Now yet another invention, air-power, challenges not only these few remaining fleets, but also the massed armies of the epoch of unlimited war, those human locust swarms which, pumped on to the battlefields by the million, in four years of devastating war ate up the prosperity of forty years of peace. Unlike the steamship, the petrol-driven flying machine will cheapen war and restrict it by that same cheapness. All nations, however poor, will be able to afford efficient air forces of a certain size and will be compelled to concentrate them because the air cannot be fortified. Yet such a price will be placed upon the morale of the nations, on account of the punishment they may expect, that any would-be aggressor, confronted by a powerful combination of actual and potential adversaries, will think twice, thrice and many times before going to war, for the price he may have to pay may well be the terrorization of his people and the complete destruction of their national morale.

The Defence of the Commonwealth

To-day the key to European peace is ours. The potential air-power of the Empire is so vast that we can render ourselves and the Dominions virtually unattackable, and being unattackable we shall become once again not the dictators of war but the arbiters of peace. When our navy was supreme, there were no naval wars worth considering between the years 1805 and 1904. With an Empire based on air-power and organised to use it in war time, there is no reason to doubt that for many years to come we could throttle practically every war that might threaten the peace of the world.

The steps we should take towards this great realisation are simple. We should first set our own house in order and establish in Great Britain an air force equal in strength to that of the strongest air force on the continent. Needless to say, the lower the level at which parity can be established, the better for us all. Next, we and the Dominions should create an air council for the Empire, an organ that will think out the problems of air-power in all their many forms and act as an imperial advisory and co-ordinating instrument in peace and war. Lastly, we should by every means in our power encourage civil aviation, and establish throughout the Empire a network of flying stations on the lines of the coaling stations that steam-power forced us to adopt. The unity, the safety, the prosperity of the Empire depend on vigorous and far-sighted action.

THE AMERICAN TREND

AT the end of March President Roosevelt left Washington and went fishing for seventeen days off the coast of Florida. He needed the holiday and it did him a world of good. He came back tanned, rested and in the best of health. This is not trivial ; it is important. It is the most important thing in the United States today. It doesn't matter whether you believe in the theories of the Brain Trust or whether, like feeble Dr. Wirt, you are convinced that they are taking the United States straight into sovietism. It doesn't matter whether you regard the policy of devaluing the dollar in terms of gold as a moderate success or as a gross failure. It doesn't matter whether you put your trust in the New Deal or in the Old Adam. The directing genius of American affairs is President Roosevelt ; and so long as he keeps well and serene and responsive, so long as his physical condition permits him to continue his unparalleled personal labors—for just so long do we stand a more than even chance of pulling out of this depression and arriving once more on a plane of normal well-being.

A bare statement like that lends itself at once to various misinterpretations ; so it would be well to clear some of them up at the start. A German might say the same of Hitler, but for the sake of those who are just plain bewildered by what is going on in the United States, and even for the sake of distinguished statesmen who "will be interested to see the backwash from Germany and the United States a year from now," it should be patiently explained that we still enjoy the form and practice of a democratic State and that President Roosevelt does not

The American Trend

exercise his influence by virtue of a dictatorship either in law or in fact. Day before yesterday a hundred thousand people—socialists and communists—paraded through the streets of New York City without any sign of disorder whatsoever. Free speech is exercised as freely as it ever was. Federal legislation is still enacted by Congress and its validity is still tested before the Supreme Court. The Senate can and does refuse to confirm the St. Lawrence Waterway Treaty in spite of the President's plea ; and both Houses of Congress can and do pass an Act, over the President's protest and veto, restoring pay cuts to federal employees and liberalizing payments to veterans of the war. Newspaper correspondents in Washington have never within their memory been given such full and frank information as they get from the White House today, and it is the President's usual practice, when an important measure is being considered by Congress, to invite from a dozen to fifty interested legislators of both parties to discuss the Bill with him. S. K. Ratcliffe, who knows a lot about this country, said, after a trip around, "This isn't Hitlerism, it's hypnotism." So it is, and that's almost too good and too true a saying to spoil by qualification. Nevertheless, for the literal minded, one might add that it looks surprisingly like democratic leadership.

When one says that the President is the directing genius he doesn't mean that he's a Hitler—nor does he mean that he's a Stalin either. And this has to be spelled out too ; for in addition to the old ladies at the hairdresser's and the old men at the club there are certain other individuals (still enjoying freedom of speech) who are convinced that communism is on its way in the United States just as sure as shooting. On a perfectly normal afternoon toward the end of March, with plenty of other things to write about, the eastern American newspapers blossomed forth with a tale so fantastic as to make you rub your eyes and hold your hands to your head. The *New York Sun*, for a starter, gave it a three-column headline ; it seemed as if

The American Trend

someone, prime for the madhouse, must have set the type before the authorities could get the handcuffs on him! But by the next morning the more sedate *New York Times* had followed suit, the news had travelled across the country, and the story of Doctor Wirt had become a national hubbub.

Doctor William A. Wirt, sixty years old, was and still is superintendent of the school system of Gary, Indiana. The town of Gary is named for the former chairman of the board of the United States Steel Corporation, its principal manufacturing plant is located there, most of the children now in school will end up in the mills; and in the meantime they are being "elevated" (as the French would say) by the "platoon" system of education for which Doctor Wirt is famous. They study, they work in the mills and they play—all in platoons. The news-hawks, in their usual conceptual shorthand, kept referring to Doctor Wirt as a "celebrated educator." Be that as it may be, the Doctor had been moved by his zeal for the Republic to unmask the revolutionary purposes of President Roosevelt's "Brain Trust," and "if it requires that I be a sacrifice to get the people to thinking about what is going on, I am willing to be one."

Last summer (he wrote in a formal memorandum) I asked some of them what their concrete plan was for bringing on the proposed overthrow of the established American social order. I was told that they believed that by thwarting our then evident recovery they would be able to prolong the country's destitution until they had demonstrated to the American people that the government must operate industry and commerce. The most surprising statement made to me was the following: "We believe that we have Mr. Roosevelt in the middle of a swift stream and that the current is so strong that he cannot turn back or escape from it. We believe that we can keep Mr. Roosevelt there until we are ready to supplant him with a Stalin. We all think that Mr. Roosevelt is only the Kerensky of this revolution."

Doctor Wirt was summoned to Washington before an investigating committee of the House of Representatives.

THE ROUND TABLE

THE ROUND TABLE is a Quarterly Review of the politics of the British Commonwealth conducted in a strictly non-party political spirit. It seeks to promote the unity of the British Commonwealth by presenting every quarter an accurate and non-partisan account of the politics of all parts, together with articles dealing with foreign and inter-Imperial problems from the point of view of the whole Commonwealth.

THE ROUND TABLE, which appears every March, June, September and December, can be obtained through any Bookseller or through any of the following:

GREAT BRITAIN AND IRELAND: Messrs. Macmillan & Co., Ltd., St. Martin's Street, London, W.C.2.

CANADA: The Macmillan Co. of Canada, Ltd., 70 Bond Street, Toronto.

AUSTRALIA: Messrs. Macmillan & Co., Ltd., 11 Flinders St., Melbourne.

SOUTH AFRICA: 1 London Road, 2nd Floor, Central Buildings, Johannesburg.

NEW ZEALAND: The Secretary, **THE ROUND TABLE**, c/o Messrs. McKays and Co., A.M.P. Building, Wellington.

INDIA: Messrs. Macmillan & Co., Ltd., Bombay, Calcutta, Madras.

EGYPT: The Express Book and Stationery Store, near Shepherd's Hotel, Cairo.

CHINA AND STRAITS SETTLEMENTS: Messrs. Kelly & Walsh, 111, 113, 115, 117, 119, 121, 123, 125, 127, 129, 131, 133, 135, 137, 139, 141, 143, 145, 147, 149, 151, 153, 155, 157, 159, 161, 163, 165, 167, 169, 171, 173, 175, 177, 179, 181, 183, 185, 187, 189, 191, 193, 195, 197, 199, 201, 203, 205, 207, 209, 211, 213, 215, 217, 219, 221, 223, 225, 227, 229, 231, 233, 235, 237, 239, 241, 243, 245, 247, 249, 251, 253, 255, 257, 259, 261, 263, 265, 267, 269, 271, 273, 275, 277, 279, 281, 283, 285, 287, 289, 291, 293, 295, 297, 299, 301, 303, 305, 307, 309, 311, 313, 315, 317, 319, 321, 323, 325, 327, 329, 331, 333, 335, 337, 339, 341, 343, 345, 347, 349, 351, 353, 355, 357, 359, 361, 363, 365, 367, 369, 371, 373, 375, 377, 379, 381, 383, 385, 387, 389, 391, 393, 395, 397, 399, 401, 403, 405, 407, 409, 411, 413, 415, 417, 419, 421, 423, 425, 427, 429, 431, 433, 435, 437, 439, 441, 443, 445, 447, 449, 451, 453, 455, 457, 459, 461, 463, 465, 467, 469, 471, 473, 475, 477, 479, 481, 483, 485, 487, 489, 491, 493, 495, 497, 499, 501, 503, 505, 507, 509, 511, 513, 515, 517, 519, 521, 523, 525, 527, 529, 531, 533, 535, 537, 539, 541, 543, 545, 547, 549, 551, 553, 555, 557, 559, 561, 563, 565, 567, 569, 571, 573, 575, 577, 579, 581, 583, 585, 587, 589, 591, 593, 595, 597, 599, 601, 603, 605, 607, 609, 611, 613, 615, 617, 619, 621, 623, 625, 627, 629, 631, 633, 635, 637, 639, 641, 643, 645, 647, 649, 651, 653, 655, 657, 659, 661, 663, 665, 667, 669, 671, 673, 675, 677, 679, 681, 683, 685, 687, 689, 691, 693, 695, 697, 699, 701, 703, 705, 707, 709, 711, 713, 715, 717, 719, 721, 723, 725, 727, 729, 731, 733, 735, 737, 739, 741, 743, 745, 747, 749, 751, 753, 755, 757, 759, 761, 763, 765, 767, 769, 771, 773, 775, 777, 779, 781, 783, 785, 787, 789, 791, 793, 795, 797, 799, 801, 803, 805, 807, 809, 811, 813, 815, 817, 819, 821, 823, 825, 827, 829, 831, 833, 835, 837, 839, 841, 843, 845, 847, 849, 851, 853, 855, 857, 859, 861, 863, 865, 867, 869, 871, 873, 875, 877, 879, 881, 883, 885, 887, 889, 891, 893, 895, 897, 899, 901, 903, 905, 907, 909, 911, 913, 915, 917, 919, 921, 923, 925, 927, 929, 931, 933, 935, 937, 939, 941, 943, 945, 947, 949, 951, 953, 955, 957, 959, 961, 963, 965, 967, 969, 971, 973, 975, 977, 979, 981, 983, 985, 987, 989, 991, 993, 995, 997, 999.

JAPAN: 111, 113, 115, 117, 119, 121, 123, 125, 127, 129, 131, 133, 135, 137, 139, 141, 143, 145, 147, 149, 151, 153, 155, 157, 159, 161, 163, 165, 167, 169, 171, 173, 175, 177, 179, 181, 183, 185, 187, 189, 191, 193, 195, 197, 199, 201, 203, 205, 207, 209, 211, 213, 215, 217, 219, 221, 223, 225, 227, 229, 231, 233, 235, 237, 239, 241, 243, 245, 247, 249, 251, 253, 255, 257, 259, 261, 263, 265, 267, 269, 271, 273, 275, 277, 279, 281, 283, 285, 287, 289, 291, 293, 295, 297, 299, 301, 303, 305, 307, 309, 311, 313, 315, 317, 319, 321, 323, 325, 327, 329, 331, 333, 335, 337, 339, 341, 343, 345, 347, 349, 351, 353, 355, 357, 359, 361, 363, 365, 367, 369, 371, 373, 375, 377, 379, 381, 383, 385, 387, 389, 391, 393, 395, 397, 399, 401, 403, 405, 407, 409, 411, 413, 415, 417, 419, 421, 423, 425, 427, 429, 431, 433, 435, 437, 439, 441, 443, 445, 447, 449, 451, 453, 455, 457, 459, 461, 463, 465, 467, 469, 471, 473, 475, 477, 479, 481, 483, 485, 487, 489, 491, 493, 495, 497, 499, 501, 503, 505, 507, 509, 511, 513, 515, 517, 519, 521, 523, 525, 527, 529, 531, 533, 535, 537, 539, 541, 543, 545, 547, 549, 551, 553, 555, 557, 559, 561, 563, 565, 567, 569, 571, 573, 575, 577, 579, 581, 583, 585, 587, 589, 591, 593, 595, 597, 599, 601, 603, 605, 607, 609, 611, 613, 615, 617, 619, 621, 623, 625, 627, 629, 631, 633, 635, 637, 639, 641, 643, 645, 647, 649, 651, 653, 655, 657, 659, 661, 663, 665, 667, 669, 671, 673, 675, 677, 679, 681, 683, 685, 687, 689, 691, 693, 695, 697, 699, 701, 703, 705, 707, 709, 711, 713, 715, 717, 719, 721, 723, 725, 727, 729, 731, 733, 735, 737, 739, 741, 743, 745, 747, 749, 751, 753, 755, 757, 759, 761, 763, 765, 767, 769, 771, 773, 775, 777, 779, 781, 783, 785, 787, 789, 791, 793, 795, 797, 799, 801, 803, 805, 807, 809, 811, 813, 815, 817, 819, 821, 823, 825, 827, 829, 831, 833, 835, 837, 839, 841, 843, 845, 847, 849, 851, 853, 855, 857, 859, 861, 863, 865, 867, 869, 871, 873, 875, 877, 879, 881, 883, 885, 887, 889, 891, 893, 895, 897, 899, 901, 903, 905, 907, 909, 911, 913, 915, 917, 919, 921, 923, 925, 927, 929, 931, 933, 935, 937, 939, 941, 943, 945, 947, 949, 951, 953, 955, 957, 959, 961, 963, 965, 967, 969, 971, 973, 975, 977, 979, 981, 983, 985, 987, 989, 991, 993, 995, 997, 999.

UNITED STATES: The Macmillan Co., 60 Fifth Avenue, New York.

ORDER FORM

Date

To

Please add my name as a subscriber to **THE ROUND TABLE** for a period of one year commencing with the ^{*current} ~~*next~~ issue.

I enclose a remittance of *£1, *\$4.

Name

Address

* Delete one of these words and prices as necessary.

The American Trend

He showed no reluctance to go. On the witness stand he spoke earnestly and with evident alarm about the direction in which the United States seemed to be heading; but his proof of a revolutionary plot was nothing more than his unsupported recollection of some dinner conversation in the heat of a Washington summer. The views which he attributed to his fellow guests were vague and innocuous, the individuals themselves were quite unknown, and the gist of their angry testimony was that Dr. Wirt had bored them to death at dinner with his flow of talk. At the end of a one-day hearing, the chairman of the committee told Doctor Wirt that he could "turn in his expense account and go home." The news-hawks, disappointed, hunted up his counsel, former Senator Reed of Missouri. Wouldn't it be a good thing, they asked, for the Doctor to stay in Washington and watch developments? "I know of no reason why he should not go back home," said the Senator, "unless he has some better place to go." So the Superintendent of Schools returned to Gary, travail over, with the ridiculous mouse on the end of a leash.

Now inasmuch as this is an anonymous article and since it is bound to be full of expressions of opinion on controversial issues, and since, in such a case, the background makes a great deal of difference, the writer should explain that he is not a Democrat, but a Republican. He does not know the President of the United States, and therefore has not succumbed to his personal charm. He is not interested in reform at the cost of recovery. He believes that the internal situation of the country, following the closing of all banks last March, forced the Administration to leave the gold standard. He regrets deeply that his government did not make provision for paying interest on its obligations in the equivalent of gold to bona fide non-resident holders. He believes that the three months' gold purchasing experiment conducted by the President and Professor Warren was unsound, but that very little harm, on the whole, came of it. He believes that there was much waste and some

The American Trend

dishonesty in the lavish expenditure of government money during the winter in an effort to put people to work—on anything—in order to avoid the straight dole. He believes that in ordering the cancellation of the existing air mail contracts without trial and hearing, the Administration acted hastily and truculently—and that the Administration will pay the price for its action in the end. He also believes that talk of fascism is nonsense, that talk of communism is absurd, that the record of the past year, on the whole, has been remarkable and that Roosevelt's leadership has been firm and wise. But he also believes that we are now, at this very moment, in the crisis of recovery. The course of events during the next few weeks will determine the outcome.

If this is so, it is not too much to say that the good health of the President is the most important thing in the United States today. Unity of command is essential: unity of command cannot be found anywhere else. And if it were to be found, nothing could be done about it now. Someone went to Emerson one day with news from the brilliant young Margaret Fuller. "She has decided to accept the universe," he was told. Emerson thought for a moment. "She better had," he replied.

II

FOR fourteen months from the fourth of March 1933 to the end of April of this year the economic condition of the United States improved greatly. There was a slump in the late summer and early autumn after the sharp speculative rise of June and July, but progress was resumed in November and continued through the first quarter of this year. Thus far in 1934, 9,272,000 railway cars have been loaded against 7,736,000 in the comparable period of 1933 and against 9,011,000 in 1932. It is estimated that 4,000,000 unemployed have been absorbed back into work

The American Trend

during the past twelve months. Steel ingot production is at 58 per cent. of capacity, which means that the industry is operating at the rate of 70 per cent. of 1929. Commodity prices have increased from 55 per cent. to more than 73 per cent. of the arbitrary "normal." Bankruptcies are unusually low—the current week makes the most favorable showing of any like period since 1920. Automobile sales for the first quarter of this year ran to 85 per cent. of the level of 1923–1925, and the consumption of electric power is as great as it was in 1930. Foreign trade has shown a sizable expansion on both the import and the export side. Almost seven hundred closed banks have opened since January first. Long-term government securities are selling on a three per cent. yield basis and there is an abundance of banking credit available at low rates for sound private borrowers.

In spite of these favorable indications there is extreme tension in the air. We have known all along that we would have an issue to face, and that the sooner it was faced the better; but the moment of confrontation, so to speak, is just no fun at all. It cannot be denied that our twelve months' progress has been due, in part, to inflation of the dollar. It has been said that the Government couldn't stop inflation if it would because the repercussions would be too severe. Nevertheless, there are signs that the Administration intends to call a halt; and if this is so, we are in for a trying period. There has been no advertisement of such a change of policy, but signs point that way. For many weeks past the Treasury has not lifted its offer for the purchase of gold above the price of thirty-five dollars an ounce; and ten days ago, when it became momentarily profitable to export gold to the European continent, the Treasury announced that shipments would be permitted. Two hundred million dollars out of the two billion dollar fund appropriated by Congress for stabilization of the exchanges has just been segregated into a special account as if there were an intention to use it. About the use of

The American Trend

this money we know as much as you know about the employment of your Exchange Equalization Fund, which seems to be precisely nothing. At all events, the financial markets suggest that a conservative monetary policy is in the making. Two weeks ago the Government borrowed ninety-day money at the rate of seven hundredths of one per cent. per annum, and Treasury certificates maturing on December 15 are priced so high today that they yield no return to maturity, large holders preferring to forgo current interest on their money in order to retain these bonds and exchange them eight months from now for securities which the Treasury must offer on that date.

When the President returned from his holiday he found inflationary sentiment rampant in both Houses of Congress. On April 8 one hundred and forty-three members of the House of Representatives had signed a petition to force the Frazier-Lemke Bill out of Committee to the floor of the House. Nine more signatures would have done the trick. This Bill provides for the liquidation and refunding of all farm mortgages through the medium of long-term government bonds bearing a low interest rate. The bonds are to be offered at par and, under the proposed law, Federal Reserve Banks would be required to invest their surplus as well as their net profits in these securities. In case they should not find a ready market, the Federal Reserve Board would take them up and pay currency for them. The authors of this ruinous Bill claim that it would put two and a half billion dollars into circulation. Its opponents point out that this amount may be called "additional circulation," but it is government debt as well and the cost in fact would be nearer to seven billions. Anyhow, that Bill, thanks to the President's emphatic intervention, still rests with the Committee. He likewise disapproved of the McLeod Bill for paying depositors the greater part of the money they lost in closed banks during the years 1930-1933.

Finally, faced with three more Bills, all designed in one

The American Trend

way or another to monetize silver and raise its price, he stated that the financial plans of the Administration did not include measures of this character. Thus far, his influence has been strong enough to keep these Bills down, and at present there would not be votes enough to pass any one of them over his veto. But the silver bloc in Congress is exceedingly powerful, and before adjournment they may force the President to accept, not a mandatory duty, but a permissive power to purchase silver and join it to the monetary base. Even with this threat in the offing, however, it is generally felt that the Administration will henceforth pursue a more orthodox course in monetary matters and permit the classic factors of cheap money and abundant credit to contribute what they can toward recovery.

Obviously, such a radical change of direction cannot take place without dislocation : commodity prices have recently weakened as speculative holders have sold out their positions, the stock market has suffered a twelve days' decline, and a marked slowing up in the *tempo* of business is reported in many quarters. Industry, in a period of inflation and at the instance of the Government, has increased both wages and prices ; such wages cannot be paid except on a high turnover, and such prices cannot be sustained unless there are buyers. The pause in buying is ominous, hence the tension in the air.

There is no salvation except by putting an end to the inflationary process, even at the risk of a temporary decline in industrial activity. And, in its other aspect, inflation through budgetary deficits caused by the lavish spending of government money and the loose extension of government credit is quite as dangerous. Wheat and cotton and tobacco growers have been paid huge subsidies for reducing their crop acreage and these windfalls of cash have stimulated trade. Almost a billion dollars was spent during the winter months in direct and indirect relief. Government grants and loans for public works have helped the heavy

The American Trend

industries to some extent, and these aids are continuing. Naturally, the pulse of business has been quickened by these injections. When the President notified Congress early in January that he proposed to run a deficit of \$7,300,000,000 for the fiscal year ending June 30, and that another \$2,000,000,000 would have to be spent in the succeeding twelve months before the national budget could be brought into true balance, business men, shivering in anticipation of ruin some day, decided to make hay while the sun shone. And now, early in May, with less than two months of the current fiscal year left to go, it is suddenly disclosed that the Government is falling far short of its estimated expenditures, and that at least two and a half billion dollars of the advertised amount will not be spent. Business officials, whipsawed between policies of monetary inflation and monetary stability, government prodigality and government retrenchment, don't know where to turn or what to do next.

Those who have responsibilities in business and finance are convinced that unless the Government stems the slow tide of inflation promptly, it cannot be stemmed at all. They are prepared for an anxious period of readjustment. They welcome all signs that point to the end of money tinkering, all evidences that the Administration is moving toward a balanced budget. They look forward to the gradual stabilization of the exchanges, and in general approve the Bill now before Congress permitting the President to enter into special tariff arrangements. There is a growing resentment against experimental policies, and a hope that with the passage of the Stock Exchange Control Bill, now far advanced in Washington, both Houses of Congress will feel that their mandate to wreak vengeance on Wall Street for its excesses of 1929 has been fulfilled.

Finally, they earnestly believe that before Congress adjourns it should amend the Securities Act of 1933. This measure, passed in the press of legislation last summer, and in the heat of agitation against the Kreugers and the

The American Trend

Insulls, contains such drastic provisions levelled against all those who participate in the preparation, underwriting and sale of securities, such severe penalties to be imposed even on innocent error, that the capital market, in the midst of an abundance of credit, is stone dead. Reasonable modifications of the existing statute would free this accumulation of capital for investment and would counterbalance the deflationary effects of government retrenchment and of return to the principles of sound money. Without this bridge from the first phase of recovery to the second we may shortly find ourselves back again in the pit.

III

PRESIDENT ROOSEVELT'S Moley, Tugwell, Berle, Landis, and the rest of them—his Brain Trust—do not constitute the first collection of its kind: Colonel House surrounded himself with an "Inquiry" in preparation for the Peace Conference. In those days in Paris, as today in Washington, they worked under pressure of time and circumstance, holding such power over men and events as they never had before and will never have again. In 1919, as in 1934, able high-minded men with limited experience in practical affairs tried to couple measures for reform with measures for recovery. In Paris they failed. No permanent recovery was brought about, no change in human nature took place; and the reforms which they championed have gone dud with the collapse of the international régime.

The President, his Congress and his advisors have abolished child labor, put a curb on financial malpractice, and improved the condition of labor in general, all in the space of one short year. They have been able to work these reforms within the framework of recovery, thanks to inflation, fresh confidence and leadership at the top. The result is encouraging, it is good so far, but the heady wine

The American Trend

has done its work, and its virtue is exhausted. If we move to the right, as now seems likely, the convalescence will be slow, but at least we shall know where we are. And zealous reformers, from this point on, would do well to respect the ancient landmarks; for if they travel wide of them, they will travel far, and in the disintegration of society which is bound to follow they will lose the gains which they have lately won.

United States of America.

May 3, 1934.

FASCISM IN AUSTRIA

"AUSTRIA is ruled," said old Friedrich Adler, the founder of Viennese social democracy, "by Absolutism modified by *Schlamperei*" (that lovely and untranslatable word meaning, roughly, artful slovenliness). This is strikingly true of the country to-day. A fascist régime is in power. Since the week of February 12, when the party that numbered 40 per cent. of the electorate was bloodily suppressed, and even more certainly since the latter part of April, when the fundamentals of the new constitution were revealed, Austria has been in the hands of a reactionary clerical government which turns the clock back, not a couple of decades, but a couple of centuries. The country has reverted to the absolutism of its fathers.

It is difficult, nevertheless, to take the Dollfuss dictatorship altogether seriously. This is because of Austrian gentleness, Austrian genius for compromise, Austrian love of cloudy legal abstractions and Austrian *Schlamperei*. The country has an inordinate capacity to do things by halves. The Austrian terror is a semi-terror. No one believes that the corporative state represents any peculiarly or vitally Austrian necessity. The constitution is an elaborate structure which boils down to the fact that Dollfuss appoints the government and the government appoints Dollfuss. Hardly anything is discernible of the immense spiritual drive and force that even anti-Nazis must recognise in the Nazi revolution. There is precious little reformatory *élan*, precious little spiritual effort to purify and cleanse the nation. The revolution was clerical, one might say, but not religious. It was a job-hunter's ramp, a substitution of Outs for Ins. It is hard to accept at face value a dictator-

Fascism in Austria

ship wherein several Cabinet Ministers maintain their own miserable private armies, wherein the real capital (Rome) is some hundreds of miles outside the country, and wherein the supreme ruler, as announced by the constitution, is the Almighty.

Yet, so far as the administration of government goes, a dictatorship it is, and one of the most reactionary in the world. Hitler "made" his elections, but at least elections did occur; Mussolini directs a political party which gives some substance of vitality to the State; even Stalin is part of an organism to which he admits responsibility. But in Austria there is nothing but Dollfuss and the Almighty. There can be few governments in Europe that rest on so little popular support. Forty per cent. of the people are socialist or communist; forty per cent. (at least) are Nazi; Dollfuss shares the remaining twenty per cent. (or less) with his semi-allies, the disorderly and discontented Heimwehr, and obstructionist minorities like the Pan-Germans and Agrarians. The Heimwehr would vote for itself; but no one else would vote for it. Votes, however, don't count, bayonets do; and Dollfuss, Starhemberg and company have them.

The dictatorship has certain distinct aims: first, to preserve itself both from attack by Germany and from internal disintegration; second, to try to win over the crushed and bitter socialists; third, to introduce the corporative state and make it work. These items must be discussed in detail later. But first there is a word to be said about the manner in which the dictatorship reached power.

I. THE FEBRUARY "REVOLUTION"

THE Government has peppered Great Britain and America with propaganda to the effect that the events in February were a socialist "revolution." Just as the Nazis in Germany tried to foist upon the world the legend

The February "Revolution"

that they saved the Reich from Marxism, so have the Dollfuss apologists explained that they used field artillery to kill women and children in residential buildings in order to crush a "Bolshevik insurrection." This is no better than an impudent lie. Realists have much to admire in Dr. Dollfuss—his extraordinary nimbleness, his adhesive skill in negotiation, his courage, his piety, and his great fight to save Austria from the Nazis. But the hypocrisy of his closest associates is beyond belief. If the Austrian Government should rise and say, "Yes, we goaded the socialists to desperation and then crushed them, because this was part of our policy and a necessity to our ideas for the salvation of Austria," one might well respect the courage and candour of the pronouncement. When the Austrian Government blinks jesuitically and says that the socialists plotted their own suicide in the guise of a communist rebellion, one can only sigh for the cause of truth.

To say this is not to admit a sympathy with Marxism, nor yet any great respect for Bauer or Deutsch, the socialist leaders—although the heroism of the socialist rank and file deserves deep admiration. The socialists in Austria have admittedly made dreadful mistakes; the anomaly of a socialist state in a clerical country made an outbreak some day inevitable; the February general strike was beyond doubt a miserable mess. Nevertheless, it remains true that the events of February 12 were a cold-blooded fascist (Heimwehr) *coup d'état*. The socialists can no more be blamed for resistance to the stream of government provocation than can the Belgian army be blamed for resistance to the German armies in 1914.

The Government charges Bauer and Deutsch with being bolsheviks. The fact is that their brand of social democracy saved Austria from bolshevism in 1919 when both Bavaria and Hungary succumbed to communist régimes. The Government alleges that members of the socialist Schutzbund possessed illegal arms. They did indeed—arms which the Government itself gave them.

Fascism in Austria

It has been conveniently forgotten that the *Schutzbund* was armed as a defensive measure against Yugoslavia during the Klagenfurt crisis in 1920, and that for many years the *Schutzbund* and federal army held the arms *in common*. The socialist *Schutzbund* was an illegal armed force ; but so was the *Heimwehr*. The socialist tenements, the Government says, were "fortresses." Of course. Any modern building is a fortress as soon as artillery starts to fire on it, if defenders with guns are within.

The *Heimwehr* has been devoted to a policy of armed extirpation of the socialists since about 1927. Time and time again freebooters like Prince Starhemberg and Major Fey publicly threatened armed action against the defenders of the Austrian republic.

A *Heimwehr Putsch* was averted in 1929 by the narrowest of margins, and in 1931 a *Heimwehr* rising in Styria was put down by armed force, Prince Starhemberg being arrested and jailed. But meantime that extraordinary clerical, Monsignor Seipel, whose dead brain, in the words of Mr. G. E. R. Gedye, still rules Austria, took the *Heimwehr* into the Government. Since Dollfuss became Chancellor the rise of the *Heimwehr* has been rapid. The socialists wrote their own doom by temporizing. They failed to declare a general strike, out of desire to avoid bloodshed, when they were strong ; manoeuvred into a hopeless position when weak, time and again they offered Dollfuss co-operation, and were every time rebuffed. The socialists wanted peace, but the *Heimwehr* wanted war. The climax approached last winter. Let verbatim extracts from the chronology of the *Bulletin of International News** tell the final details of the story :

January 31. The *Heimwehr* leaders presented the Governor of the Tyrol with six demands which, if carried out, amounted to the establishment of semi-military rule in the Province under the Governor, Dr. Stumpf. This move followed the mobilization of

* Published by the Royal Institute of International Affairs.

The February "Revolution"

8,000 Heimwehr on January 30 to avert the disorders threatened by the Nazis.

February 4. At a Heimwehr meeting at Innsbruck, Prince Starhemberg and Dr. Steidle stated that the Heimwehr only wished to carry out the Chancellor's programme, but he would have to rid himself of Marxist influences. . . . They demanded the establishment of semi-military authoritarian rule in the Tyrol.

February 6. The leaders of the Upper Austrian Heimwehr, supported by the Patriotic Front, were understood to be making the same demands as those in the Tyrol, and detachments of them occupied some of the public buildings at Linz, the provincial capital.

February 7. The Heimwehr leaders in Styria and the Burgenland submitted to the provincial Governors at Graz and Eisenstadt demands for a more authoritative government and a semi-military administration. Herr Dollfuss in Budapest.

February 8. The police raided the offices of the *Arbeiter Zeitung*. . . . This was a sequel to the seizure a few days previously of arms and explosives in buildings to which the socialists had access at Schwechat.

February 9. The Heimwehr leaders in Salzburg presented authoritarian demands to the provincial Governor. The Governor of Lower Austria was understood to have refused to see the local Heimwehr leaders, on the ground that their demands were unconstitutional. Following on reports that the Heimwehr were demanding of the Government the banning of the Socialist party and the occupation of the Vienna City Hall, the Socialist headquarters intimated that any such action would be the signal for a general strike. Herr Dollfuss returned from Budapest and received the Heimwehr leaders.

February 10. The Vice-Chancellor deprived the Mayor of Vienna (a Social Democrat) and other city officials of the authority to supervise matters of public safety. . . . Writing in the *Reichspost*, the Chancellor said that parliamentarism such as had been established by the party system was finished, and that an authoritative guild system would take its place.

February 11. Speaking at a Heimwehr parade, attended by the Minister of War, Major Fey (the Vice-Chancellor) said, "In the last two days I have made certain that Herr Dollfuss is with us. To-morrow we are going to clean up Austria."

Major Fey was as good as his word. On February 12 the fighting began.

Fascism in Austria

II. DOLLFUSS AND THE NAZIS

MOST people thought in February that the net result of the rising would be to let the Nazis in. This seemed a reasonable supposition. The two parties pledged to keep the Nazis out, the Social Democrats and the Dollfussers, had slaughtered each other. Many socialists, it was supposed, would turn Nazi, because in their first bitterness they hated Starhemberg and Fey, who had attacked them with machine guns, worse than they hated Hitler, who had used only fire-crackers, and from whom they thought they might get something; the Nazis were the only powerful opposition group left. Dollfuss was known to have been in negotiation with Germany. The Heimwehr was unpleasantly corrupted by Nazi intrigue. For these and other reasons, it was feared everywhere—so deeply that Great Britain, France and Italy jointly issued their statement of February 17 underlining the international desirability of Austrian independence—that a Nazi *Putsch* in Austria was imminent.

Not only has no *Putsch* occurred; Herr Habicht, Hitler's inspector for Austria, has been muzzled, and the Nazis have been quiet as mice ever since. Why is this? There appear to be several reasons. First, beyond doubt the show of force put on by the Austro-fascists impressed and frightened Hitler. There is no point in attacking your enemy when he is particularly strong; the Nazis, who have always sought to reach power by "legal" means, had no taste for going into the streets while Fey's artillery was still warm. The second reason is that the Germans have every reason for playing a waiting game. Dollfuss has, in effect, rendered them a great service by destroying their chief enemy, the working class movement, which they themselves would have had to destroy on taking power. The Nazis are watching a house being built on which they have a mortgage; when the house is finished, they can move in.

The New Constitution

Above all, there is the influence of Mussolini. The Italian Government and the Vatican stand squarely behind Dollfuss and the Heimwehr, a fact which is by all odds the greatest factor in their favour. Just before the February shooting Mussolini gave Hitler what was interpreted as final warning to get out of Austria and stay out; just after the shooting, Mussolini, Dollfuss, and Gömbös (the Hungarian Premier) signed their triple alliance, and made Hitler swallow it. So long as the present international situation remains what it is, the Dollfuss régime seems to be fairly safe from Nazi attack.

Dollfuss has other reasons for being grateful to his enemy, Hitler. For one thing, the German terror last year was incomparably more savage than the present Austrian semi-terror. As a result Dollfuss has not been excommunicated by world opinion to the extent that Hitler was. The Austrian reaction is bad enough: its decadent parochialism in some respects is more depressing than the youthful fervours and excesses of the Hitler régime; but because the Hitler revolution was so much more overtly brutal—and because the Nazis aroused world opinion by their attack on Jewry, which the Austrian fascists have warily let more or less alone—the Austrian Government gets off comparatively lightly. Again, Dollfuss is still the man who keeps Hitler out of Austria; he is the better of two bad alternatives. There are men who would be glad to roast Dollfuss on a spit and throw his carcass to the dogs; but they have to admit, when pressed, that he is better for them than Hitler.

III. THE NEW CONSTITUTION

THE Dollfuss Government, then, relieved for the moment from the pressure of German attack, faced spring and summer with tolerably high hopes, and with much serious work to do. First of all there was the

Fascism in Austria

problem of internal consolidation. Dollfuss was in an extraordinary position among dictators in that he had no private army of his own, and the institution of the private army is an essential adjunct to modern dictatorship. The Heimwehr is not Dollfuss's army. It is the army of someone else—Prince Starhemberg.

A confusing and subtle period of inner rivalries and struggles for power began, concurrently between Dollfuss and Starhemberg for control of the country and between Starhemberg and Fey for control of the Heimwehr, and then between Fey on the one side and Dollfuss and Starhemberg as allies, it seemed, on the other. This struggle was adjusted, as almost everything is in Austria, by a compromise. Dollfuss took Starhemberg into the Government as Vice-Chancellor, thus stripping him of his vaunted political independence; Fey was retained as Minister of Public Security, but with diminished prestige. Dollfuss may—or may not—be a tool, as his enemies allege, in the hands of these military chieftains; outwardly he appears to have won a signal victory over them.

But he took no chances, and immediately after the February bloodshed he began a double campaign, first to reduce the independent position and strength of the Heimwehr, second to make use of a rival military force, the Ostmarkische Sturmscharen, the private army of the powerful Minister of Justice, Dr. Schuschnigg, as an offset to the Heimwehr. The Heimwehr went down in prestige and importance; the Sturmscharen went up. Heimwehr men are seen less and less in Vienna. They have been almost 80 per cent. demobilized. The reason is not only Dollfuss's nimbleness, but the generally accepted belief that Italy, who had helped to finance the Heimwehr in its early days, began to withdraw this essential monetary support. Whatever the reason, the Heimwehr, having done its job (part of which was to bear the brunt of the provocation to the socialists), is being got rid of; and as a result the rank and file of Heimwehr men are thoroughly

The New Constitution

sore. Dollfuss has had to exert every bit of his celebrated agility to avert an explosion. He had to tread with special care for fear that the Heimwehr, if discontented enough, might go Nazi. The present situation is another compromise. The Heimwehr and Sturmscharen are apparently to be united as the military branch of the Dollfuss patriotic movement, the Fatherland Front, with Dollfuss in supreme command and Starhemberg as his first lieutenant.

The Government, meanwhile, did its "best" to conciliate the socialists. Social Democracy itself is dead as Cheops in Austria; socialists are confronted with the necessity of joining either the fast-growing communist party or the Nazis; Dollfuss hopes to seduce them with a third alternative, his Fatherland Front. The best bribe the Government could offer would be a general amnesty, especially as socialist fighters were promised amnesty if they surrendered by noon on February 15; many thousands did, of whom many hundreds are still in jail—an almost inexplicable act of bad faith. The only plausible explanation is that the Heimwehr has used its remaining influence to prevent clemency. There are still about 2,000 socialists in prison or concentration camps. Most of those given regular trials got fairly light sentences, but the important folk, like Dr. Renner, the first President of the republic, and Dr. Seitz, mayor of Vienna for 15 years, are being held without trial. The Government fears both to try these men and to let them go; obviously the high treason charges against them are absurd; but from the government point of view their release without punishment is out of the question. Meantime, Dollfuss makes promises. He has abolished the workers' trade unions and confiscated their funds; yet he hypocritically announces that the new Government is devoted utterly to the workers' interests. Extreme pressure is being put on workers to join the Fatherland Front. The relief fund organized for the many thousands of destitute socialist families was administered

Fascism in Austria

with political strings attached ; it seemed almost as if the Government was seeking to starve the workers into submission. The best thing that can be said for the "conciliation" policy is the negative fact that no socialist families have been evicted from their tenements—doubtless because such eviction would at once tear up the policy by the roots.

The new constitution is a complicated instrument, the full text of which is not yet available at the moment of writing. Its aim is to install a government based on the authoritarian principle and on vocational representation ; the *Stände*, or guilds, are to be organized as the fundamental source of authority in the State. The guilds will be represented in the Fatherland Front also ; it is the Chancellor's hope that this organization will become a sort of national super-political party like the Fascists in Italy or the National Socialists in Germany, with a resultant parallelism between party positions and state offices. Dollfuss, for instance, is both Chancellor and head of the Fatherland Front ; Starhemberg is Vice-Chancellor and deputy head of the Fatherland Front.

Four councils, according to the constitution, together form a federal Advisory Chamber : the state council of 40 or 50 members appointed by the President, more or less as elder statesmen ; the cultural council, consisting of 30 or 40 representatives of the Church, the universities, and the free professions ; the economic council, containing 70 to 80 men chosen from the various guilds or corporations ; and the provincial council, containing 18 delegates from the federal provinces, Styria, Salzburg, Carinthia, etc. This Advisory Chamber is to meet in secret. It neither introduces nor passes laws ; its only function is to *discuss* legislation, and the Government is not obliged to accept its recommendations. Laws then go to the Legislative Chamber, composed of 59 members drawn from the Advisory Chamber ; this Legislative Chamber may not discuss laws, but must accept or reject them, without

The New Constitution

debate, *in toto*. If the Legislative Chamber rejects a law, the Government may carry the issue to the country in a plebiscite; but it is not obliged to do so. The only vestige of free suffrage remaining is the provision that one-half of the 70 to 80 members of the economic council of the Advisory Chamber, which contributes 20 of the 59 men who comprise the Legislative Chamber, are to be elected—not by the people at large, but by the guilds. All other deputies are appointed by the Government. How the guilds are to be formed is not yet known.

Supreme power in the country is vested in the person of the President. He appoints and dismisses the Chancellor, and the Chancellor is responsible only to him. The President is elected by all the mayors of all the towns and communes in Austria from three nominees chosen by the four advisory councils meeting together as a Federal Assembly. The Heimwehr bitterly opposed this scheme, because they know full well that nine-tenths of the local mayors are Dollfuss henchmen. Governors of provinces are chosen by the President from three candidates nominated by each provincial diet, and the President has powers subsequently to dismiss them. Mayors are to be elected by the town councils, but must be approved by the provincial Governor, who also has power to remove them. The whole system is absolutism of the most complicated—but nevertheless absolute—kind.

This is the executive and legislative ribbing of the new constitution; the incidental embellishments, so far as they are known at the moment of writing, are even more interesting. All political parties are to be abolished so that they may be absorbed by the Fatherland Front. God is mentioned as the spiritual overseer of the State. Vienna is deprived of its special position as a federal province, although it contains one-third of the population of the country. Vienna is 60 per cent. socialist; therefore its privileges are curtailed. Finally, the famous Hapsburg exclusion laws are to be modified—not indeed rescinded,

Fascism in Austria

but shorn of their former constitutional validity, so that they may be repealed in future by simple government decree; and the word "republic" is omitted from the official designation of the country.

IV. A HAPSBURG RESTORATION ?

THE Hapsburg question is near the surface of actuality. Ex-Empress Zita, the widow of the last Hapsburg Emperor of Austro-Hungary, and her 21-year-old son Prince Otto, exiles in Stenockerzeel, have a better chance of regaining the Austrian throne than at any time in years past. They are dropping their Hungarian claims for the moment, and are concentrating on Austria, because in Austria the circumstances are so propitious. If the exclusion laws are repealed, the return of the Hapsburgs to Austria this summer—as private citizens—may be anticipated.

The whole temper and trend of the present Austrian Government is monarchist. The régime not only revives the mediæval *Stände*; it stands for all the things the Hapsburgs stood for: centralization of authority, sentimental mysticism and superstition, "benevolent" despotism, rigid suppression of free press and free speech, above all for the Church. Moreover, hints are constantly uttered that the present constitutional fabric, however elaborate, is transitory; much leeway is given to the President as head of the State; it is not difficult to bridge the gap to an "elected" king. Chancellor Dollfuss, it is true, although a monarchist at heart, is not an active legitimist. But almost all the important members of his entourage are legitimists of the most emphatic kind: Prince Starhemberg, Prince Schönburg-Hartenstein (the Minister of War), Dr. Schuschnigg (Minister of Justice and Education), and the new mayor of Vienna and Minister of Social Welfare, Dr. Schmitz. Monarchist mass meetings

A Hapsburg Restoration ?

have been frequently attended by members of the Government, and young Prince Otto, be it noted, has publicly avowed his sympathy with the "just, manly, and truly Austrian" Dollfuss régime.

The legal obstacles to restoration in Austria, in contrast to those in Hungary, are very slight. There is no mention of the Hapsburgs—oddly enough—in the Treaty of St. Germain. The Treaty of Rapallo in 1920 between Italy and Yugoslavia pledged the signatories to oppose a restoration, and so did the Treaty of Lána between Austria and Czecho-Slovakia in 1921; but both these instruments have long since lapsed. Austria is apparently not bound by the famous declaration of the Conference of Ambassadors of November 10, 1921, forbidding a Hapsburg restoration in Hungary. The countries of the Little Entente are committed to preventing a restoration in Hungary, but Austria—so at least the legitimists assume—is quite a different matter. The legitimist leaders say that if the exclusion law is repealed, Otto and Zita can catch the next Vienna train.

Nevertheless a return of the royal family, even as private citizens, would provoke an international storm, as Chancellor Dollfuss well knows, and even if Czecho-Slovakia and Yugoslavia could not legally consider this a *casus belli*, it would promote an awkward and dangerous period of tension. This—and financial considerations—are the chief bars to restoration at present. One thing might induce Dollfuss to change his mind and align himself frankly with the overt legitimists: a recrudescence of the Nazi attack on Austria on a serious scale. Potentially Otto is the Government's supreme measure of defence against Hitler; a restoration, in the last analysis, would be the only final alternative to Anschluss. Perhaps it is with this in mind that the Government so obviously opens the path to restoration, but delays restoration itself except as a last resort.

Fascism in Austria

V. AUSTRIA AND THE POWERS

EVERYTHING that happens in Austria is an international question. This is the hard lot of the country. Austria cannot be considered as an independent organism. Its problems impinge not only on its immediate neighbours, but on France, Italy, Germany, and even Great Britain.

Austria is a cockpit, and in her pie all the continental Powers have prehensile fingers. Three great countries at least are in effect combatants in the Austrian arena. Germany, of course, backs the Nazis; Italy is the chief force behind Dollfuss and the Heimwehr; while the Little Entente (especially Czecho-Slovakia), supported by France, was until February the advocate of a democratic Austria, and still favours the idea of a Danube federation as the best solution of the Austrian problem. Austria herself would like to be let alone. But she stands athwart the Danube at the heart of Europe; the Powers cannot ignore her. She herself commits the sin of wanting nothing; there is no serious Austrian irridentism. Her rapacious neighbours find this a grievous burden on their consciences.

The Germans want, of course, Anschluss, even though they try to conceal their inner aim nowadays by using the more modest term *Gleichschaltung*. The bulk of the people of Austria wanted Anschluss too—until Hitler came to power and disillusioned them with the terror. Anschluss is so important to Germany for a variety of reasons. Hitler himself is an Austrian; he views the Austrian "defection" as a bitter personal repudiation. The acquisition of Austria would be the first great breach in the whole peace treaty structure and would open a path for German expansionism in Mittel-Europa and the east. Nazism is based on the tenet of renascent pan-Germanism or nothing, a tenet seriously compromised so long as 6,500,000 German Austrians on the German border snigger at the swastika instead of worshipping it.

Austria and the Powers

Gleichschaltung between Germany and Austria would mean practically the encirclement of Czecho-Slovakia, which moreover contains a minority of 3,500,000 Germans. It would be Hitler's first great victory in active foreign policy, and it would dangerously inflame domestic German nationalism and militarism. It would upset the delicate equilibrium of the Danubian—indeed the European—*status quo*, and would drastically alter the political situation in Hungary and even in Rumania and Jugoslavia. Most important of all, it would bring strong Germany, instead of weak Austria, as a neighbour of Italy on the Brenner pass and the hinterland of Trieste.

This contingency Italy could not possibly endure. Italy, one might say, is the friend both of Germany and of Austria and thus may be a bridge, a mediator, between them. Italy may be bought off. But the plain fact remains that Italy, having gone to war to help destroy an empire of 52 million people on her flanks, is not going to allow the creation now of an infinitely more powerful Teutonic neighbour of 75 millions. Moreover, there are some 280,000 Germans in the south Tyrol who are Italian subjects, and the further Hitler is away from them, the better Mussolini is pleased.

This explains the Italian support of the Dollfuss régime. The Italians were not necessarily in love with Dollfuss. They did not particularly enjoy spending the money that the Heimwehr cost them. But Dollfuss and the Heimwehr were crucially necessary as their best defence in Austria against the Nazis. Dollfuss has been in such a strong position *vis-à-vis* Mussolini because he could always threaten, if he chose, to drop the fight and let Austria go Nazi, or indeed turn Austria over to the Nazis, if Mussolini did not continue his co-operation and support.

The Italians, being the great Power most endangered by Anschluss or *Gleichschaltung*, pulled Czecho-Slovak and French chestnuts out of the fire by their Austrian policy. Italy, France and Czecho-Slovakia found them-

Fascism in Austria

selves, almost for the first time since the war, unanimously devoted to the same alignment on an important international issue. The net result of the Austrian situation has been to throw Italy—more or less—into the arms of France. This may change if the Hapsburg question becomes acute; for France and Italy might come to accept Otto as a final alternative to Hitler; it is doubtful if Czecho-Slovakia could. France could support legitimist aims only at the risk of losing the Little Entente.

There have always been three conventional solutions to the Austrian "problem": union with Germany, rapprochement with Hungary under the Italian wing, and a general Danubian confederation. The first and third are out of the picture at present. For a long time Dollfuss liked to think and hope that Austria could forswear all three solutions, and live alone, a sort of embryo Switzerland, self-sufficient, self-supporting, incorruptibly neutral and independent. Events were too strong for him. He was fighting not only the Nazis but also the economic strictures of the peace treaties. Austria began to starve, at the same time as she was subjected to ruthless German attack. So, perhaps not altogether reluctantly, Dollfuss turned to the second solution, and has committed himself to the creation of his corporative state under the encouragement of Hungary, the sponsorship of the Vatican, and the protection of Mussolini—and with a Hapsburg restoration perhaps not far beyond the horizon.

CHINA AND THE WORLD DEPRESSION

CHINA has had a curious economic record in the four and a half years of the present world depression. During the first two years, 1930 and 1931, she was practically exempt from the consequences of increasing world impoverishment. She continued, of course, to suffer from the deep-rooted troubles that had long afflicted her, but in this first period of general distress her own economic position showed, not further deterioration, but some actual improvement. By her own modest standards she enjoyed a time of comparative prosperity. From about the beginning of 1932, however, this happy immunity ended. Since then, economic deterioration that is clearly associated with external conditions has been apparent. And now that there are signs of recovery in other countries, the economic movement in China, in spite of certain hopeful elements, is still on the whole a downward one.

An enquiry into the character and causes of this curious phenomenon may perhaps be of interest for several reasons. Even if no external reactions were involved, the fate of some four hundred millions is no small part of the general happiness or misery of the world. Moreover, if it were possible for these millions to increase their standard of living through a fruitful exchange with the products of other countries, the whole economy of the world would obviously benefit. Most of those who have searched, in a general retrospect of the growth of modern capitalism, for more than recent causes of our recent disasters have been struck with one outstanding fact. The great progress of the last century was associated with the rapid expansion

China and the World Depression

of undeveloped countries. The natural growth of the capitalist system as we have known it seems to need the stimulus and opportunity of such external outlets. Without them, perhaps not inevitably but certainly very usually, the whole system becomes clogged and congested. The opportunities for such expansion have now become more restricted. Nothing would seem so likely to jog the general economic machine out of its present rut as the stimulus of a great new market. And *prima facie* China, which comprises one-fifth of the world's population, but which only accounts for about one-fiftieth of its external trade, and whose people are at present, with the exception of a very small fraction, on the barest level of subsistence, seems to present a greater opportunity of this kind than any other region of the world. We shall consider later some of the very serious limiting factors and conditions that need to be considered before we hastily proceed to estimates of the progress that is practicable. But, when every qualification is made, it remains true that China might, under certain conditions, not only greatly improve her own lot, but in doing so substantially benefit the rest of the world also.

I. THE CHINESE BACKGROUND

WE shall be mainly concerned in what follows to trace the course and consequences of certain economic and financial events of the last few years. It is the more necessary, in doing so, to have a clear conception of the main framework, both of political conditions and of the permanent economic structure of the country, within which these events have taken place.

For many purposes, though not for all, China, even more than the United States, must be thought of more as a continent than as a country. Her population is about equal to that of Europe. Her distances, great in themselves, are for all political and economic purposes made

The Chinese Background

much greater by the paucity of communications. Chinese loyalties are distributed very differently from those to which we are accustomed in the West. They are mainly absorbed within the family, past, present and prospective; what is left over rarely extends, for the bulk of the population, beyond the province; little remains, except at times of special provocation, or among more than a group of the exceptionally educated, for the nation as a whole. A man thinks of himself as of Canton or Shantung rather than of China. He is usually, in his thoughts and loyalties, about as much "Chinese" as a Frenchman or a German is a "European." Both the physical facts and the traditional habits of thought of the Chinese thus preclude the possibility of China's being a national centralized state on the model of European countries. The bulk of the life, and the main centre of gravity in government, must, of course, be local and at most provincial. This does not preclude "unity" in a real, though restricted, sense. It is important, however, to remember these fundamental data either in measuring the present achievement or in estimating the practicable progress of the national government.

Economically, it is equally important to remember, as a fundamental fact, that China, while capable of progress on her own lines, is not a developing region like Canada or Australia or South America, where the population is still small in relation to natural resources. China is essentially an over-populated country. There is a congestion of population in her cultivated areas which is perhaps unequalled in any other agricultural country. Some regions not now developed can be brought into cultivation, but only slowly and with great difficulty as regards both the capital requirements and the political conditions. Congestion in all fertile areas, a small average farm holding, and consequently a limited margin over the food needs of the producer's own family, are likely to remain permanent and inescapable factors in China's economy.

China and the World Depression

II. THE POLITICAL SITUATION

NEVERTHELESS, to one who re-visits China now after three years' absence, certain notable changes are visible, side by side with these more permanent features.

In external politics the new element is, of course, the one introduced by the conflict with Japan. At the present moment the movement seems to be towards a *modus vivendi*, carrying with it not formal recognition of Manchukuo or a permanent renunciation of Chinese rights, but a cessation or suspension of active opposition. Chinese in Manchuria, who benefit from conditions that are now becoming more stable, and especially from a more reliable currency, are unlikely to maintain active opposition. Elsewhere the more responsible circles are aware that without external support—which has not been given and is not to be expected—China is militarily too weak for effective resistance.

The relations between Japan and Russia have introduced a new element. The chances of an immediate conflict seem less than they were a few months ago. The ultimate issue depends mainly upon a few persons in Tokyo, who keep their counsel; but the tension is somewhat relaxed. The indications given by troop movements and similar activities seem to be against the likelihood of conflict, at least during this summer, though for the late autumn or winter the prospect seems more doubtful. There are, however, few or none of the risks of the kind of war that happens through exasperation and because passions get out of control. If war comes, it will be one of cool calculation—and cool calculation during the next few months may well decide against war. If war should come, the reaction upon China is uncertain. There are doubtless those who would urge that China's opportunity had come; if Japan was convinced that they would prevail, the

The Political Situation

temptation to secure herself by seizing the maritime ports would be great. Again, however, it is perhaps more likely that the more cautious policy would prevail in China and that in that case Japan would prefer to concentrate her efforts on the struggle with Russia, without the further complications likely to result from more aggression in China. All this is, of course, highly speculative. For the time, it seems probable that China will enjoy a somewhat uneasy, but still effective, peace and will reach an informal but practical *modus vivendi* with Japan. This situation is not substantially changed by the declarations about Japanese policy in April, which probably came as more of a surprise to the Western Powers than to China.

Meantime, it is curious how the questions between China and the Western Powers—extraterritoriality, the status of Shanghai, and so on—have for the moment disappeared from the forefront of the scene. Perhaps it is for the time only. There is a good deal of anti-western feeling among the student classes and the intellectuals, easily capable of spreading in a kind of wave to other classes. Nevertheless, it remains true that most present or probable members of the Government have experienced the advantages of a place of refuge both for themselves and for their money, and are likely therefore to be more moderate in action than in speech. The special régime, which had its origin and has continued to find its justification in the anarchy of China, could scarcely remain permanently at the gate of a stabilised and effectively governed China. But though some progress is being made it is evident—to Chinese leaders as well as others—that a stable government is still far from being permanently assured. Gradual modification of special privileges is more probable than a dramatic demand and surrender to Chinese nationalism—and it has been growing more likely that the ultimate loss by the westerners of their privileges will come rather from Japanese than from Chinese pressure.

On the whole, then, the external political situation of

China and the World Depression

China is, for the time being, quieter as regards Japan than it was a year and a half ago, and as regards the Western Powers than it was four years ago.

In the internal political position there has been a notable evolution towards more stable and effective government, based, however, less upon civilian influence and organisation and more upon direct military authority. The Kuomintang has for years been losing prestige and effectiveness. Power rests more exclusively and more obviously with those who directly control the larger military forces, and among those the position of Chiang Kai-shek has been substantially strengthened. The character of the internal struggle has changed, and the area of actual conflict has been restricted. During the greater part of the Republic's lifetime most of the provinces have been ravaged by the conflicts of rival war lords. This stage is over, except in Szechuen and the north-west. Elsewhere each province now has a government fairly firmly in the saddle. The central government's effective authority extends over seven provinces. Those who exercise control elsewhere govern their own areas without serious internal faction; they do not aspire to the conquest of other provinces or aim at the overthrow of the national government. Nor do they aim at complete separation; they recognise generally the need for some form of central government and are prepared to admit some kind of suzerainty by Nanking.

Disputes and the dangers of conflict now turn rather on the degree and extent of provincial autonomy. There are growing apprehensions in the minds of a number of provincial governments that Nanking is aiming at a greater extension of the powers of central government than they are prepared to accept. In particular, they fear a military dictatorship by Chiang Kai-shek; and the personal feeling against him on the part of numerous provincial authorities has been growing with his general prestige and power in the country generally, and with the dwindling of the civilian influence of the Kuomintang. The relative military

power of Chiang Kai-shek has grown considerably. He enjoys the advantage, decisive in the long run, of control over the revenues from the maritime customs, and he has been increasing the efficiency of the army that he commands.

His dominance in the national government has been growing. Indeed the real centre of government attends his person. For the greater part of the last three years he has been, not at Nanking, but at Nanchang, his headquarters for the communist campaign in Kiangsi. He has, attached to his army and responsible to himself, a highly organized and ably served staff engaged in studying and planning civilian and economic questions as well as those directly connected with military policy; and it is from here, rather than from the ministerial organization at Nanking, that the main principles of policy, as distinct from their detailed application, emerge. In the meantime, those who fear his dictatorship allege that he is considerably influenced by German Nazi officers on his staff and by Nazi ideals, and is encouraging the growth of a "blue shirt" organization.

The military, as opposed to the civilian, character of the government has, moreover, been emphasised by the departure from its ranks of its greatest civilian Minister, Mr. T. V. Soong, who left his position as Minister of Finance in October, 1933, after a breach with his brother-in-law. The quarrel resulted from a number of reasons—some personal jealousy, differences of opinion with regard to Japan, and a certain divergence upon budgetary and financial policy. In January, however, a reconciliation was effected. T. V. Soong remains in practical control of the National Economic Council, whose work is being made a reality by the definite allocation, with Chiang Kai-shek's consent, of a substantial portion of the proceeds of last year's wheat and cotton loan from the United States. There is one factor that will greatly help this Council to do effective work. One of the most notable facts in China at this moment is the universal desire to stop civil war and con-

China and the World Depression

concentrate upon economic reconstruction. This is not only the general attitude of the people; it extends to the military authorities of the provinces, who are actively engaged in tasks of economic reconstruction of one kind or another; and Chiang himself clearly recognises its necessity. It has been impressed upon him particularly by his long campaign against the communists of Kiangsi. Here, over more than half of the province, there is a real communist state. In three years, in spite of his superior military equipment, he has made little headway, and he recognises, as every observer does, that the so-called communist problem cannot find a solution without an improvement in the economic position of the peasant.

The communist question is, of course, one of great interest and importance in China. Since the departure of Borodin and the Russians, the active communist movement has been suppressed in other provinces and is now concentrated in Kiangsi. Here a handful of convinced and devoted communists, led by a man of some military genius, operating in a situation of general economic distress and enforcing a rigorous discipline, have resisted all efforts at suppression for several years. The real "communists," who are sincere believers in Marxian or Soviet principles, have never been very numerous, though in personal qualities they probably include some of the best elements in China. Their followers are peasants driven to desperation by economic distress.

The communist movement as a whole is in essence an agrarian revolution, such as China has known periodically for many centuries. The slaughter of these years has been a great tragedy, both in the misery it has inflicted on the mass of desperate peasants and in the waste of those who, under happier conditions, would be among the best elements in the government and public service of the country. The Chinese peasant asks little of government. He wants to be left free to cultivate his patch of ground and earn his pittance of food, without intolerable exactions

The Political Situation

in rent or taxation or requisitions. But to him government has meant all these impositions, much more than the blessings that government can give in protection and the provision of transport and a stable money. When, in addition, depression brings low prices without diminution of taxes, intolerable distress leads to desperation; and whether the result is called communism, or banditry, or agrarian revolt matters little. If the peasant's economic position can be improved the root will be cut from communist growth. If it cannot, what does it matter that a communist state should be allowed to try its hand in one part of one province? The cessation of active fighting would leave more resources and more attention available for economic reform and reconstruction elsewhere.

In summary, we may say that while stability has not yet been attained, and while the dangers of such a revolt as has occurred in Fukien remain, there are now the elements of possible stability. There is not the same widespread faction and conflict as existed a few years ago. There is a much deeper desire for peace. There is greater willingness to recognise the suzerainty of the national government. A few years ago, no statesman at the centre could have built a structure of stable government; for with spasmodic disorder and faction throughout the country, the bricks of which such a structure needs to be built were themselves crumbling. Now the bricks at least are there. If the prestige and power acquired by Chiang Kai-shek could now be used, not to enforce a dictated subordination, but to negotiate a reasonable compromise between a limited central direction and substantial provincial autonomy over the greater part of the sphere of administration; and if the effort of government were devoted to removing the causes of communism by improving the lot of the peasant instead of merely killing communists—there is perhaps a better chance now than at any moment since the 1911 revolution of establishing peace and stability in China.

China and the World Depression

III. ECONOMIC TROUBLES

THE need is urgent ; for if China's internal political position has on balance improved in the last few years, her economic condition has certainly deteriorated. A few figures will suffice to indicate this deterioration.

China's exports have fallen in five years by almost two-thirds in value, and by about one-half in volume.

1929	\$1,523 million	1932	\$739 million
1931	\$1,331 "	1933	\$611 "

Her adverse balance of visible trade has more than doubled in about the same period, rising from \$307 million in 1928 to \$734 million in 1933. This in itself would not necessarily be serious ; for about half the increase is due to the loss of Manchuria, the one region of China that sold more than it bought, and China has normally had an adverse balance in visible trade, which has been more than compensated by large invisible items (overseas remittances, foreign expenditure in China and a net inflow of foreign capital). But in the last few years these invisible items have fallen off and China has had a seriously adverse balance of foreign payments, amounting to \$100-150 million a year. This has been reflected in the outflow of precious metals. Normally, China, while neither buying nor selling much gold, is a large importer of silver. From 1928 to 1930, for example, there was an average net import of \$140 million a year. Since then the import of silver has stopped and there has been an export of gold amounting probably (if the large quantities that are smuggled out are taken into account) to about \$150 million a year. Gold cannot well continue to be available for export on this scale, and it is to be expected that the adverse balance will be reflected in future in a larger export of silver. This is likely to lead to a shortage of currency and to further deflation, with a corresponding depression of prices.

Economic Troubles

Unhappily the effect of this external drain is enhanced by another phenomenon arising from internal causes. The general sense of insecurity has led to a serious drain of silver from the interior to the unproductive security of the bank deposit vaults of Shanghai. In December 1931 the silver stocks in Shanghai amounted to \$250 million; in December 1933 they had risen to \$503 million, that is, they had doubled in two years; and this drain of metal currency into the vaults was only partially compensated by a smaller increase in the amount of notes in circulation.

The movement of prices during the same period is equally significant. The index of wholesale prices in Shanghai changed as follows:—

1929	..	104.5	1932	..	112.4
1931	..	129.2	1933	..	98.4

Practically every economic criterion tells the same tale. China was, by her own modest standards, relatively prosperous in 1930 and 1931; she fell into a deepening depression in 1932 and 1933. The turning point was in the winter of 1931-1932.

We must now enquire into the causes of this change of fortune, so different in its timing from the experience of the rest of the world. One preliminary warning, however, is necessary. A fall in prices and in external trade profoundly affects the fortunes of the trading communities of the coastal towns, and penetrates into those parts of the interior which depend in substantial measure upon the export of their produce; it affects also, though less seriously, those who sell a large proportion of their produce even for consumption within China. But a very large part of the population of the interior of China is exempt from the effects of world depression or even falling prices. A tenant food-producer, when he pays his rent in kind and when, as is not always the case, the landlord pays all taxes, is very little affected indeed. He consumes, with his family, perhaps half of his produce. He pays a fixed proportion which may well amount to two-fifths of his

China and the World Depression

produce. In such a case he has only one-tenth of his produce to sell, and is injured by a fall of prices only as regards this one-tenth, and then only so far as food prices may have fallen more than the prices of the goods he wants to buy. The variations in his fortunes depend not upon price movements or economic booms and depressions, but upon whether he can cultivate his patch of ground undisturbed by flood or famine or the ravages of civil war. The owner-cultivator is, of course, more affected by prices because he has to pay taxes in cash, and those who have to sell their produce to buy food—for example, those who depend on silk or tea—may have their standards of living seriously changed by external conditions. But we must bear in mind that, for China as a whole, the penetrating effect of general economic causes is much less than in countries of a different type.

Subject to this reservation, it is evident that China has suffered seriously in the last two years from a change in the relation of her currency to those of other countries. In 1930 and 1931 China was completely saved from the effect of currency deflation upon her internal enterprise and activities by the fact that silver was depreciating in terms of gold faster than gold was appreciating in terms of commodities. Her internal prices therefore tended to rise while remaining nevertheless on a favourable competitive basis in terms of gold for external trade.

The situation changed completely when the pound, the yen and the rupee left gold in the latter part of 1931. Since then the Chinese currency has been rising in terms of three of the four currencies that mainly concern her. Now that the United States dollar has gone too, currency deflation is depressing China's internal prices and dislocating her internal, as well as her external, trade, as it has done in other countries. Unhappily, other causes also have contributed to the same result. The loss of Manchuria has affected the balance of payments, for it is the only considerable area in China that exports more than it imports. And the other adverse

Economic Troubles

effects on China's economic situation of her conflict with Japan, not only in Manchuria, but in Shanghai in 1932 and in Jehol in 1933, were also of great importance. It involved heavy military expenditure, and it contributed substantially to the increased loss of confidence and to the sense of insecurity which have led to hoarding, to a drain of silver from the interior, and to a general falling-off of enterprise. In addition, there has also been the strain, diminished but still severe, of the indecisive and protracted struggle with the communists in Kiangsi, the disorder in Szechuen and the north-west, and more recently the revolt—happily soon terminated—of Fukien.

These special troubles of the last few years have been the more serious because they have come on the top of others which for many years have been weakening the whole economic system of the country. A general survey of the last quarter of a century, since the revolution of 1911, leads irresistibly to the conclusion that, in spite of fluctuations from year to year and of a few encouraging developments, successive disasters suffered by China have been sapping the strength of her general economic system. The series of struggles among rival war lords, ravaging many provinces and usually accompanied by large issues of inconvertible and depreciating paper money; abnormal floods, external war, and civil war between the central government and revolting provinces, have been successive catastrophes following quickly one after the other. The interval after each new blow has been too short for any recovery of strength to meet the next. Each has left the economic life on a lower level—farms denuded of their livestock, an increased burden of indebtedness and higher rates of taxation. There has been, in particular, a great increase since 1927 in the burden of provincial land taxation, which is made more onerous by a wasteful and corrupt system of collection, and is now further aggravated by the low prices and depressed condition of agriculture.

Direct observation confirms the impression given by

China and the World Depression

statistical records of the gravity of the recent deterioration. In some areas small ownership has been giving place to tenancy. In many areas where tenancy prevails the normal functioning of the landlord system has broken down; the landlord flees with what rent he can get to the security of the coastal towns and ceases to serve any useful economic function. There has been an abnormal fall in the value of land. Distress has compelled a restriction in the use of fertilisers. Trade and the transport of goods are falling in all districts. Indeed in many areas the actual mechanism of trade is breaking down. Links in the chain of minor merchanting concerns are snapping. A merchant who has bought stocks at higher values is bankrupted or, at the best, ceases to buy except just when and as he can immediately sell, so that the even flow of trade is arrested.

IV. OPPORTUNITIES OF THE FUTURE

THERE are happily some important considerations on the other side of the account. The internal political situation has substantially improved. Throughout the country there is a much more determined desire to have done with civil war and turn to economic restoration. Most of the provincial governments, as well as the national government itself, are actively engaged in various forms of reconstruction. There has been much road-building; erection of lighting and power plants; elaborate schemes for assisting the peasant to form co-operatives, to improve his yield by better seed selection and so on. Often, indeed, these efforts have been ill-judged and too expensive. Many of the roads bear little traffic, for example, because they have been designed to meet military rather than economic needs, and duplicate existing railway or canal transport rather than act as feeders to it. But experience is teaching wisdom, and the new direction of the country's efforts will bring its fruits. The record of the railways shows clearly

Opportunities of the Future

that with political stability and further improvement in management—there has already been some—they can be both remunerative and an instrument of considerable economic development. In one direction there has been real progress in spite of all the adverse factors of recent years. Light industries—operating in small units and covering a wide range of specialised products, plumbing and metal work, electrical and wireless apparatus, furniture and a great variety of other articles—have been steadily developing even during the recent depression. For the most part, these articles require skilled manual work, not merely simple mechanical equipment. It is a development of real promise.

We must, moreover, view any deterioration in the general economic situation in the perspective of China's more permanent possibilities. The people's industry, traditional skill and capacity to live and work under conditions of bare existence, combined with the natural resources of the country, are the foundations on which a considerably greater structure of national wealth can be built than has yet been achieved. In spite of congestion of population, India, for example, with fewer natural advantages, has attained a standard of living perhaps twice as high as that of China. It is not an impracticable ambition that China, granted peace and order and wise direction, should attain that standard within a reasonably short period. It remains true, in spite of immediate troubles, that if only the fundamental conditions required to encourage the flow of capital to productive enterprise can be secured, there is an opportunity for substantial economic development, perhaps a greater opportunity for the beneficial employment of world capital resources than is to be found in any other great country.

Along what lines should this progress be expected? A short summary must suffice. Several conclusions follow from the basic fact of China's economy, the congestion of her population in her cultivable areas. It is useless to

China and the World Deprivation

think of agricultural mechanisation as it is known in Canada or the Argentine, for that increases the yield per unit of man-power, not per unit of land ; in China there is a superfluity of men and a scarcity of land. Intensive cultivation, with an increase of yields through better seed selection, use of fertilisers, etc., is the only line of progress. The basis of all substantial development must be the increase in the margin of food production over the food producer's own needs. Except to the limited extent to which China's industrial products can compete successfully in world markets, the purchasing power created by such an increased margin must constitute the market for any new Chinese industries.

It cannot be too strongly emphasised that in China industrialisation is not the alternative to an improvement in agriculture ; on the contrary, the increase in the food producer's margin is the indispensable condition of any substantial and successful industrial progress. If progress is not to be precarious, industrialisation must proceed gradually, and mainly on the basis of the domestic market. It should be built up in close relation to China's agricultural production—flour mills using Chinese wheat, cotton works using Chinese cotton and so on ; and should look for its markets mainly to the home consumer and to the industries so established (rails and railway sleepers, for example, finding their custom in an extended system of railways). Industries requiring much labour and relatively little capital equipment, and producing articles which do not greatly benefit from large-scale manufacture and a highly advanced industrial and financial system, are obviously to be preferred.

Such general principles naturally need some qualification and exception, but they serve to indicate the general line of desirable development. In this progress foreign capital and international co-operation are both required. China, as we have seen, needing capital for development more than almost any other country, is now being decapitalised rather

Opportunities of the Future

than capitalised. Even the modest savings produced in the interior are being drained into Shanghai or abroad ; and the domestic capital now accumulated in Shanghai, though not inconsiderable, is not enough for any substantial development. The re-entry of foreign capital, of course, raises many problems : the rights of the consortium ; the attitude of Japan ; the method of association with Chinese capital ; the character of security and safeguards available to the investor and so on. These are all difficult, they are none of them insoluble. The key to their solution is to be found in the railway situation. The railways are intrinsically a good economic proposition. There is no reason why they should not earn enough to enable a reasonable settlement to be made with the existing creditors, which would open the way to the subscription of new capital for much needed expansion. Japan's attitude is of course involved, but the latest statement of her policy suggests that a scheme providing for her participation with other countries should not be impossible.

With the way thus opened, foreign capital would probably be available for participation, with Chinese capital, in various forms of promising enterprise. The foreign investor will have to realise that his main security in future will have to be found, not in external control or government guarantees, but in the interlocking of his interests with those of Chinese investors. This is likely to be both more effective as security and politically more practicable than the older system. Along this line an increase in China's standard of living, limited by the factors discussed above but nevertheless substantial, may reasonably be expected, to the great advantage both of China and those who seek in her a greater market than her present poverty permits.

THE ST. LAWRENCE WATERWAY

ON July 13, 1932, after long deliberations, the St. Lawrence waterway treaty was initialled by the representatives of Canada and the United States. On March 14, 1934, ratification was refused by the Senate, the vote being 42 against to 46 in favour, 13 votes short of the two-thirds majority required by the American constitution. Below, correspondents from the two countries explain their national viewpoints on this uninspiring defeat of what, despite all that could be said against it, was a great international project. They show that opinion in both countries was sharply divided on the issue of the treaty, so that the Senate's action delighted many Canadians, just as it offended large blocks of opinion in the United States. The most that can be said, in summing up the controversy, is that while perhaps the weight of sound argument was fairly evenly divided, the balance of prejudice undoubtedly lay against the treaty. Prejudice unmistakably won the day.

The scope and purpose of the waterway treaty are best summed up in the terms of its own preamble. The Governments of the United States and of Canada,

Recognising that the construction of a deep waterway not less than 27 feet in depth, for navigation from the interior of the continent of North America through the Great Lakes and the St. Lawrence river to the sea, with the development of the water-power incidental thereto, would result in marked and enduring benefits to the agricultural, manufacturing and commercial interests of both countries, and

Considering further that the project has been studied and found feasible by the International Joint Commission, the Joint Board of Engineers, and by national advisory boards, and

Recognising the desirability of effecting a permanent settlement of the questions raised by the diversion of waters from or into the Great Lakes system, and

Considering that important sections of the waterway have already been constructed, and

The St. Lawrence Waterway

Taking note of the declaration of the Government of Canada of its intention to provide, not later than the date of the completion of the deep waterway in the international section of the St. Lawrence river, for the completion of the new Welland ship canal, and of canals in the Soulanges and Lachine areas of the Canadian section of the St. Lawrence river, which will provide essential links in the deep waterway to the sea, and

Taking note of the declaration of the Government of the United States of its intention to provide, not later than the date of the completion of the deep waterway in the international section of the St. Lawrence river, for the completion of the works in the Great Lakes system above Lake Erie, which will provide essential links in the deep waterway to the sea,

Have decided to conclude a treaty for the purpose of ensuring the completion of the St. Lawrence waterway project, and for the other purposes aforesaid.

The Treaty provided for the construction of two navigation canals along the so-called international section of the St. Lawrence, between Lake Ontario and the town of Cornwall. The remainder of the works necessary for the completion of a 27-foot canal from Lake Erie to the ocean were to be constructed by the two countries independently. The cost of works on the international section was to be divided between the two governments, Canada receiving credit to the extent of \$128,000,000 (against a total estimated expenditure of \$543,000,000) for work already done, notably the Welland ship canal. The cost would be at least partly recouped from the hydro-electric power derived from the necessary dams.

The treaty further provided, in accordance with the decision of the United States Supreme Court, for the reduction of Chicago's diversion of water from Lake Michigan to the Mississippi system from an annual average of 8,000 cubic feet per second to 1,500 cubic feet per second. It also placed Lake Michigan, which is wholly within United States territory, under the jurisdiction of the International Joint Commission. Thus, apart from its more positive provisions, the treaty cleared a path for the settlement of a question that has vexed Canadian-American relations for many years.

The St. Lawrence Waterway

I. THE ATTITUDE OF THE UNITED STATES

THE plan for a waterway through which ocean steamships might reach the heart of the North American continent by means of the St. Lawrence river and the Great Lakes has long had a popular appeal in some sections of the United States; in other sections the proposal has been anathema. Advocacy of the project increased during the world war, when the freight congestion on the most important east-and-west railways seemed to indicate the immediate need of additional transportation facilities from the interior to the seaboard. The question eventually developed into a national economic and political issue.

Presidents Wilson, Harding and Coolidge endorsed the plan in principle. In 1924 President Coolidge appointed a St. Lawrence Commission, with Mr. Herbert Hoover, then Secretary of Commerce, as its chairman, to advise the government concerning the economic feasibility of the scheme. The Commission submitted a favorable report and also found the St. Lawrence project preferable to the alternative proposal of an all-American route by way of the New York barge canal and the Hudson river.

In 1928 Mr. Hoover, as the Republican candidate for President, advocated the construction of the St. Lawrence seaway as a means of reducing the cost of marketing the crops of the western farmers and thus helping to alleviate the depression in the corn and wheat belts. After assuming the presidency he devoted much effort to formulating an agreement with Canada for developing the new route. The negotiations proceeded slowly, however, because of the numerous technical problems that had to be solved, and the treaty was not signed until less than four months before the election which gave the country a new President.

In June, 1932, when the political parties held conventions to nominate candidates for the presidency, the negotiations with Canada were in their final stage. The Republican

The Attitude of the United States

platform stated that the treaty was then "at a favorable point," and pledged the party's "allegiance to this great project" and "its best efforts to secure its early completion." The Democratic platform made no reference to the St. Lawrence seaway, but during the campaign Mr. Roosevelt, the Democratic candidate, spoke in favor of it. In the preceding months, while Governor of New York State, he had given close attention to the treaty negotiations, mainly because of the interest of his State in the hydro-electric power developments along the St. Lawrence, which were provided for in the agreement.

Under the constitution of the United States, treaties must be ratified by the Senate with an affirmative vote of two-thirds of the members present. During the session of Congress in the "interregnum" between the election of Mr. Roosevelt in November and his inauguration in March, President Hoover submitted the treaty to the Senate and recommended its ratification. The Senate Committee on Foreign Relations conducted hearings and made a favorable report; but it delayed this action until about a week before the session was scheduled to end, and nothing further was done at that time.

Shortly after his inauguration on March 4, 1933, President Roosevelt summoned a special session of the new Congress to consider measures for checking the financial crisis which then gripped the country. On March 27 the Senate Democratic leaders decided to enlarge the Congressional program and to include, among other measures, consideration of the St. Lawrence treaty. On the same day the Senate Foreign Relations Committee again voted a favorable report. At this time, however, Congress was confronted with an elaborate program of domestic legislation advocated by the new Administration, and no further action on the treaty was taken before adjournment on June 16.

Congress reassembled in regular session on January 3, 1934. A week later, on January 10, President Roosevelt

The St. Lawrence Waterway

sent a special message to the Senate urging that it give favorable consideration to the treaty. He pointed out that there were two main considerations—navigation and power. With regard to the first, he declared that from a broad national point of view commerce and transportation would be greatly benefited, and that "fears of harm to special localities or to special interests are grossly exaggerated." With regard to the power development, he stated that it was one of four great projects that he had planned for the United States. These were: the Tennessee valley plants in the south-east, the Boulder dam on the Colorado river in the south-west, the Columbia river projects in the north-west, and the St. Lawrence development in the north-east.

The St. Lawrence situation differed from the others in that the United States could not develop power in that area without a treaty with Canada, whereas Canada could develop two great projects at the St. Lawrence rapids lying wholly within her territory. The President insisted that it was "better in every way that we should maintain the historic principle of accord with Canada in the mutual development of the two nations." He also pointed out that if Canada so desired she alone could build a seaway wholly within her control and without participation by the United States. This, he stated,

would be a reversal of the policy of co-operation which the United States and Canada have continuously maintained for generations.

Meantime, pending action by the Senate, a great battle over the St. Lawrence project was fought in the American newspapers. The ink was hardly dry on the treaty before the editorial guns began to roar. The *Duluth News-Tribune* declared that "digging should begin next spring," while the *Baltimore Sun* averred that the construction of the seaway would give the government "another large white elephant in its already overcrowded stable." Opinion in the United States was largely influenced by sectional interests and sentiment. The agricultural regions of the

The Atlantic of the United States

middle-west and the north-west and the Lake cities of Cleveland, Toledo, Detroit, Milwaukee and Duluth favoured ratification on the ground that the waterway would reduce freight rates to the seaboard, stimulate agricultural exports and generally improve local business.

In the east the treaty was opposed on the ground that the new waterway would divert traffic from the Atlantic ports. In the two largest American cities, New York and Chicago, opinion was divided, though the predominant sentiment appeared to be unfavorable. In New York, business interests, represented by the Merchants Association and the State Chamber of Commerce, were hostile, but as New York State would participate in the development of the power projects and would have control of their output there were those who favored the treaty as a means of obtaining cheaper electricity. Aligned with this group was Mayor La Guardia of New York city.

Chicago, in like manner, was divided between its desire to be a virtual seaport and its recognition that the treaty would curtail its right to the diversion of water from Lake Michigan into its drainage canal and the Illinois river. It also feared that the seaway would develop injurious competition with the Lakes-to-the-Gulf waterway, which many of its business leaders had been active in promoting.

In view of the important part played by the Lake Michigan water diversion controversy in the debate on the treaty, a brief review of this phase of the question seems desirable. Near the end of the last century, Chicago faced a difficult problem of drainage and sanitation, because of its position on low ground and its rapidly increasing population. Discovering that it would be less expensive to turn water from Lake Michigan into a drainage canal and divert sewage into the Mississippi basin than to construct sewage disposal works or filtration plants, it built a canal for such a purpose and obtained a permit from the federal government, which controls navigable waters in the United States, to withdraw water from the lake at a maximum rate of

The St. Lawrence Waterway

4,167 cubic feet a second. In 1912 it made application to increase the maximum to 10,000 cubic feet a second. This brought a strong protest from the Canadian government, which maintained that the withdrawals hampered navigation on the Great Lakes, reduced the power capacity of the hydro-electric stations at Niagara Falls, and prevented the development of other projects in the St. Lawrence area.

From that time forward, the diversion of lake water was a subject of almost constant dispute, and the case was before the federal courts continuously from 1913 to 1930. In the latter year, the Supreme Court of the United States issued a decree providing for the reduction of water diversion from Lake Michigan in successive stages, until in December, 1938, the maximum would be fixed permanently at 1,500 cubic feet a second.

This decree was incorporated in Article 8 of the treaty, and was one of its most bitterly attacked features. The Chicago authorities had cherished the hope of obtaining a modification of the court decree before the drastic reduction of water diversion that it prescribed went into effect, but the embodiment of these restrictions in an international agreement would have made their modification virtually impossible. The friends of the Lakes-to-the-Gulf waterway protested that the treaty made it impossible to maintain a nine-foot channel from Lake Michigan into the Mississippi, and strong opposition to ratification developed in Mississippi valley cities, especially in St. Louis and New Orleans. These cities, like Chicago, also opposed the development of a competing water route through Canada.

Other interests that opposed the treaty included, first, the trunk-line railways connecting the western farming areas with Atlantic seaports; second, certain heavy industries on the Atlantic seaboard, which regarded the seaway as a menace to the advantage they then enjoyed from their location at ship-side; and third, the electric power companies that would face competition from the new power installations along the St. Lawrence.

The Attitude of the United States

In the debate on the treaty in the Senate, the chief spokesman for ratification was Senator Key Pittman, of Nevada, Chairman of the Committee on Foreign Relations. The opposition was led by Senator Bennett Champ Clark, of Missouri, who voiced the prevalent opinion in the Mississippi valley. It is significant that the leaders on both sides were Democrats, for during the debate party lines were largely disregarded. The only political group presenting a united front was the progressive, or insurgent, bloc of Republicans. Being foes of the "power trust," critics of the railways, and always suspicious of eastern financial interests, they liked the treaty because of the enemies it had made, as well as for other reasons.

It is impossible to enumerate here all the points that were raised for and against ratification during the two months of debate. Only the major arguments can be presented in brief outline. On behalf of the treaty it was argued :

(1) That the seaway would reduce transportation costs, to the great benefit of the people in twenty-eight of the forty-eight states.

(2) That the project was not an experiment, but simply the completion of a public work which had been under way for many years, and which had already demonstrated its practicability and value.

(3) That the construction cost would be more than offset by the resulting savings.

(4) That the seaway would not injure the railways, because ten years would elapse before its completion, and during this period traffic would grow to a point where new facilities would be needed.

(5) That the power projects would be the most economical on the continent, and would furnish a yardstick to determine whether consumers of electricity were receiving fair treatment from privately-owned utility companies.

Critics of the treaty directed their attack along two different lines. They first opposed the St. Lawrence project in principle, and then insisted that even if the seaway were desirable, the treaty itself was faulty. They insisted :

(1) That the waterway was not needed, and that its construction would be a waste of public funds.

The St. Lawrence Waterway

(2) That even if it were needed, it would not provide satisfactory and adequate facilities for ocean commerce, since during the severe Canadian winters it would be closed to traffic, and would require at all times a special type of shipping for safe navigation.

(3) That the cost of construction had been under-estimated.

(4) That it was illogical and inconsistent to create a new competitor for the railways at a time when the government was lending hundreds of millions of dollars to save them from bankruptcy, and had also created a federal co-ordinator of transportation to assist them in solving their problems and maintaining their solvency.

(5) That the seaway would give Canadian producers a special advantage over American competitors in world markets.

(6) That it would divert business from American to Canadian ports.

In addition to these objections to the project itself, criticism was also directed toward many details of the treaty. It was criticised as :

(1) Surrendering American sovereignty over Lake Michigan, which lies wholly within the United States.

(2) Limiting diversion of water from this lake while giving Canada the right to unlimited diversion from boundary waters.

(3) Allotting an undue share of the cost of construction to the United States.

(4) Providing that American money should be spent for works in Canada, and stipulating that these should be constructed with Canadian labor and materials and become the property of the Canadian government ; and

(5) Enabling Canada to obtain four times as much electric power out of the whole waterway development as would be obtained by the United States.

The opponents of the treaty sought also to arouse nationalist sentiment in the United States by quoting articles from Canadian newspapers in support of the treaty. For example, they published throughout the country an editorial from the *Toronto Mail and Empire*, intimating that the United States had been outmanœuvred during the negotiations, and congratulating the Canadian Minister in Washington on obtaining "a treaty which placed the bulk of the cost on the United States." This particular editorial was frequently cited during the debates in the Senate, but it is impossible to say whether it actually influenced any votes. Yet the Canadian nationalist senti-

The Canadian View

ment that it reflected undoubtedly had its counterpart in the United States, and had a share in bringing about the defeat of the treaty.

When the vote came the opposition proved unexpectedly strong. It was realised that the prospects for ratification were not good, but it was expected that if the treaty were rejected it would be by a very narrow margin. Twenty-two of the 60 Democratic Senators refused to follow the Administration leaders, while 14 of the 35 Republican Senators joined 31 Democrats in voting for the treaty. Political affiliations apparently played no great part in the voting.

The defeat of the treaty with the aid of so many Democratic votes was not, however, regarded as a serious political reversal for the President. Mr. Roosevelt did not consider the pact negotiated by his predecessor as an essential part of the New Deal, and therefore did not throw all the political resources at his command behind it. He was apparently holding some of his forces in reserve for the impending battle over his request for power to revise the tariff. He indicated that he would bring the treaty up again, but it was generally believed in Washington that he would first endeavor to obtain revisions to meet some of the objections of its opponents.

II. THE CANADIAN VIEW

THE St. Lawrence waterway treaty evoked little discussion in Canada in the months preceding the final debate in the United States Senate. Canadians understand very well the rôle played by the Senate in the consideration of treaties, and discussion in Canada was felt to be useless until the decision in Washington was recorded. The treaty, if ratified, would have been brought before Parliament in Ottawa, and would then have become once more an issue of national importance and keen debate in the Dominion,

The St. Lawrence Waterway

While the difficulty of obtaining the two-thirds vote of the Senate necessary for ratification was fully appreciated, so crushing a defeat was not generally expected in Canada. The project had been strongly supported by President Hoover. Its advocates had carried on a persistent campaign of education for over a decade, and through the highly organised efforts of the Great Lakes-St. Lawrence Tide-water Association they appeared to have mobilised more than sufficient support. Above all, the agreement was known to have President Roosevelt's unqualified approval; and while it was recognised that opposition to his policy was in general increasing, it was also felt that the strong pressure that he was said to be exerting privately as well as publicly might be a decisive factor at the last moment.

Canadian newspapers gave little space to the discussion in the Senate, a notable exception being the *Toronto Star*, which sent a special representative to Washington and reported the debates in detail. While some serious speeches both *pro* and *con* were made, it was undoubtedly a disappointment to Canadians that at times the debate was brought by certain opponents of the treaty to a level so low as to be grotesque. Senator Huey Long, the Louisiana "Kingfish," declared that "Canada hasn't any business taking water from New Orleans," and on another occasion he was reported to "wonder, if this thing goes through, if they couldn't give them (the perfidious Albions) a piece of Louisiana." "If a part, why not the whole?" queried Senator Lewis of Illinois, and went on to propound the theory that the British Government wanted the treaty so that it might find a naval base in Lake Michigan, for use as a half-way house in case of war between Japan and the United States. This may appear to some senators to be good comic opera, but it is regrettable that the most important question that has arisen between the two countries in many years should have been discussed even in part in so unworthy a manner. While it is realised by Canadians that the real forces of opposition to the project

The Canadian View

ly in sectional and economic rivalries over transportation and power, debate such as this will do little to allay the traditional feeling in Canada that prejudice is likely to have more influence than justice in determining American policy with regard to matters of mutual concern to the two countries.

The defeat of the treaty was discussed by the press throughout the Dominion in editorials that reflected the same differences of opinion as had been revealed in the earlier discussions of the project.* The maritime provinces have in general been lukewarm and they view the Senate's decision without great regret. The *St. John Telegraph-Journal* expressed relief that a "highly controversial" question had been cleared out of the way. The maritime provinces, it observed, could see in the project a prospect of great expense but of no advantage to themselves and of only doubtful advantage to the Dominion as a whole.

The most determined opposition has always emanated from the province of Quebec, where the legislature, led by Premier Taschereau, the companies concerned in the development of hydro-electric power by private ownership, and those interested in rail and lake shipping have united in a campaign of unqualified disapproval. The only exception to this attitude was the Montreal Harbour Commission, which at various times went on record as favouring the proposal. The *Montreal Gazette* greeted the defeat of the treaty with unqualified satisfaction, as marking the end of "this fantastic seaway dream," and reiterated its arguments that the agreement did not adequately protect provincial rights, that the United States would have reaped the chief advantages of the power development, to the prejudice of Canadian industries, and that the cost would have added a great and unwarranted burden to the public debt. The treaty would have been a constitutional as well as an economic blunder, in the opinion of the *Gazette*.

* See THE ROUND TABLE, No. 89, December, 1932, p. 188.

The St. Lawrence Waterway

and although advocates of the scheme felt that the *Gazette's* arguments were not a fair indictment there is no question that they exerted a powerful influence.

Ontario had more to gain from the project than any other province, but its support has never been unanimous or aggressive. Papers such as the *Toronto Globe* and *Star*, which have consistently supported the scheme, expressed keen disappointment. Nevertheless the feeling is widespread that there is no urgent necessity for the waterway from the point of view either of power or of transportation. The papers of the prairie provinces and British Columbia mostly adopted the same attitude. The *Winnipeg Free Press*, which has been a consistent advocate, observed that the project was desirable, but not one "upon which the fate of either country or both countries rested";

and they will doubtless rub along, now that it has been blocked, for the time being and perhaps for a considerable period of time. What has happened is in line with what is continually happening in both countries: the larger public interest has been defeated by the political resourcefulness of selfish and strongly organised minority interests.

The *Regina Leader-Post* expressed an apparently common view when it stated that there was no marked enthusiasm for the proposal, adding that "if the St. Lawrence seaway is in the national interest let us have it as soon as possible." It would seem that the West, including British Columbia, was open to persuasion; the same was true to a lesser degree even in the maritime provinces. One may perhaps conclude, therefore, that had the treaty been ratified in Washington, Mr. Bennett, who was a strong advocate of the agreement, would have been able to mobilise sufficient support for its acceptance in Ottawa, especially as Mr. King was also on record as favouring the project.

There is little probability, in the near future at least, that Canada will, as President Roosevelt suggested, undertake to carry on the work herself. The present surplus of hydro-electric power, the financial difficulties of the railways,

The Canadian View

coupled with their capacity to meet the present demands of traffic, the uncertainty as to the future of wheat exports to foreign markets, the burden of the national debt, all combine to remove any urgent necessity for completing the project. Relief for unemployment is almost the only argument in favour of immediate action.

In a long-range view, however, the decision of the Senate may have more serious results. Canada has already put many millions into works that would form an integral part of the scheme: the enlarged Welland canal is now in use; the deepening of the channel below Montreal is well advanced; and the Beauharnois power development, which is under way, will complete much of the work necessary also for navigation in that section. Beyond these, the only important stretches still untouched between tidewater and Lake Erie are the Lachine rapids section, just above Montreal, and the international rapids section, just above Cornwall and shared by Ontario and the State of New York. It seems inconceivable that with so much accomplished the project should not at some time be carried to completion. It would be unreasonable, moreover, if the improvement of navigation did not accompany the development of power. The development of power in the international rapids section is the next obvious step when more power is needed, and that will require an international agreement and a scheme of co-operation between Ontario and New York at least.

The completion of the project by a piecemeal process, therefore, seems likely in the long run, unless some general settlement is made such as was embodied in the rejected agreement. Canada stands to gain little from the piecemeal process and may have real cause to regret the defeat of the treaty. She is not likely to obtain a more favourable one if another attempt is made. The division of costs was fair to both countries, but it gave Canada full credit for money already expended and left to the United States much the larger share of the remaining burden. The vexed

The St. Lawrence Waterway.

question of the diversion of water at Chicago would have been settled to Canada's satisfaction, and Lake Michigan would have been internationalised. The diversion has been decreased ; but Chicago shows no spirit of repentance, and with the support of the Mississippi valley she may again put forward her pretensions in defiance of the judgment of the Supreme Court at Washington and of Canada's rights, however just they may be. The Mississippi river and the New York State canals are being improved and will undoubtedly become more serious competitors of the St. Lawrence route.

The defeat of the treaty after so long and careful an organisation of the forces supporting it will make the framing of a general agreement in the future more difficult rather than less. Such an agreement depends on the coincidence of so many favourable factors both political and economic in the two countries that the problem becomes extremely complicated. Canada could probably have had a treaty during the Hoover régime had she desired it. She will perhaps find, if she wishes a treaty in the future, that the United States will not consent to reopen the question.

Finally, the rejection of the treaty is unfortunate as marking the defeat of a really notable effort in international co-operation. In his statement to the Canadian House of Commons, Mr. Bennett referred to this point in the following words, which may well be quoted in conclusion :

I regret the action of the Senate for many reasons ; not the least being that I have looked upon the development of the St. Lawrence seaway as the manifestation of the will and the capacity of the two sane and peace-loving countries to join fairly and freely in an enterprise of profit to them both. At this time in the world's affairs, when good neighbourliness is so important a factor in the great international adjustments that are taking place throughout the world, I had felt that the example of mutual trust and confidence set by these two great countries might have proved an impulse and a guide to better international relations on other continents.

INDIA : SWARAJ THE PHOENIX

I. THE PASSING OF CIVIL DISOBEDIENCE

MUCH the most important Indian political event of the quarter—or, for that matter, of the past several years—has been the decision of certain Congress leaders, over the Easter week-end, in favour of entry into the Councils, and their approach to Mr. Gandhi for his approval. This was forthcoming in no measured terms; for the Mahatma had “no hesitation in welcoming the revival of the Swaraj party and the decision of the Delhi meeting to take part in the forthcoming election to the Assembly.” He thought it not only the right but the duty of Congressmen who did not desire to take part in civil disobedience, and who had faith in entry into the legislatures, to seek such entry. Mr. Gandhi further stressed this attitude by declaring that civil disobedience should be left to him alone to pursue, as the person “most versed in its science.” He will, he says, “be at the disposal of the party at all times and render such assistance as it is in his power to give.” In the words of the *Tribune*, the Swarajists have now obtained their “charter.”

Few political announcements in India can have been generally welcomed over so wide and diversified a range of opinion. “The revival of the Swarajya party with the Mahatma’s blessing heralds the dawn of a new day in Indian politics,” says the *Tribune* (Lahore). “No other event in our contemporary history has indeed caused such widespread rejoicing.” The statement describing the result of the conference with Mr. Gandhi “will be received with supreme satisfaction in the country,” according to

India : Swaraj the Phoenix

the *Hindu* (Madras). "Nothing could be better," remarks the *Leader* (Allahabad). Even the *Amrita Bazar Patrika* (Calcutta) welcomes the preservation of Congress unity, although, as usual, it strikes a slightly different note from the chorus, seeing "no reason to go into ecstasies" over the formation of the Swaraj party. It finds anything better than the tying of Congressmen to a policy that the great majority are unable or unwilling to follow. The European press welcomes the departure as betokening the approach of constructive work in a spirit of realism. One of the few hostile voices comes from *Justice*, the Madras non-Brahman organ, which scoffs at the hopes aroused and points to the fact that a decade ago a similar movement ended in comparative fiasco.

It is important to realise that this breakaway is no isolated phenomenon appearing without warning in the Indian political firmament. A lightning flash is an indication that an electric storm has gathered and been discharged, and just as the flash lowers the electric tension so this Congress decision to re-enter the legislatures provides the long-sought relief to a tension that was becoming unbearable. It is the sense of relief that stands out most clearly from the comments, oral or written. Previous articles in the *ROUND TABLE** have recorded the growth among Congressmen of a keen awareness of the magnitude of the issues looming up for decision, and of resentment against the outworn creed that fettered their attack on these issues.

Civil disobedience is as nearly dead as is possible without actual expiry. It has long been moribund, but a variety of reasons and complexes prevented an admission of the fact by Congress authorities. Thus on March 6 a Bombay paper remarked that "civil disobedience, whether mass or individual, is dead and gone," while for months past several influential Congress papers have rejected the idea that any loss of prestige would attend the public abandonment of a policy that had failed. The *Tribune*, which has been in

* See, for instance, *THE ROUND TABLE*, No. 94, March 1934, p. 344.

The Passing of Civil Disobedience

the forefront of this campaign, summed up its attitude thus on April 2: "Congress has never identified its being or its soul with the pursuit of civil disobedience. It was never more than a means to an end." This outlook is essentially realist, and its motto might be described as *reculer pour mieux sauter*; for it would be a grave error to read into this condemnation of means any mitigation of ends.

Mr. Gandhi has been careful to avoid actual abandonment of civil disobedience; he is, indeed, too closely attached to his favourite "science" ever to contemplate that extreme step. The weapon may be laid by, but only in the armoury, and the Mahatma will maintain its temper. However, he has told his disciples and associates that they are not to use it during his lifetime save under his direction, a characteristically subtle step which leaves the ultimate discretion with himself. This attitude has not passed unnoticed, and one or two Congressmen have declared that decisions on the use of civil disobedience are for Congress, not for any individual, however eminent. In the general tide of relief, however, this correct and logical position is apt to be submerged.

The Delhi decision was precipitated by the widely credited report* that the life of the present Assembly, which is due to expire this autumn, will not be extended, and that in consequence there will be an election in the coming cold weather. The realists in the Congress camp—and they are many more than is generally believed—could not tolerate the prospect of such elections uncontested by the Congress party. It may be said confidently that even if Mr. Gandhi had refused his approval Congressmen in considerable numbers would have contested them. Mr. Gandhi nevertheless declares that his decision was not prompted in the slightest degree by the Delhi conversations and their outcome. "The decision had come to me vaguely some days before it was finally taken, when I knew nothing of the Delhi proposals."

* Now confirmed by official announcement.—*Editor.*

India : Swaraj the Phoenix

The Mahatma's ear is close to the Congress ground. Leaders must be prepared sometimes to follow, and it is a wise leader who can recognise the moment when he must follow his intransigent flock if he is not to be publicly deserted. A Bombay Congress paper declared on March 13 that "if Congress endeavoured to enforce boycott (of entry into the legislatures) against reason and under the personal influence of anyone, no matter how great, it would probably lead to a definite break-up of Congress unity." The threat implied is clear. Not even Mr. Gandhi's position would be secure if he opposed the inevitable. Similar expressions could be taken from papers all over the country.

It was fairly well known that the Madras and Bombay representatives at the meeting of Congress leaders, in the words of a Delhi commentator, "provided the real drive." Here we may perhaps see the outcome of the formation, last October, of new parties in those provinces.* They had been criticised for their inactivity, as representing yet another ineffectual gesture, but their efforts were probably devoted to bringing about harmoniously the departure in Congress policy over which India is now so pleased. It is not unlikely that the Delhi consultants had been in touch with Mr. Gandhi before their meeting and knew in advance at least the general tenor of his reply to their formal approach. The Mahatma has once again demonstrated his political astuteness.

Congressmen claim that with the cessation of civil disobedience the Government ought to withdraw their ban on the meeting of the working committees of Congress so as to permit the fullest scope to the new party. They are exhorted also to secure the withdrawal of all restrictive legislation and the release of all political prisoners. Such demands assume that Government's condition, namely, the abandonment of civil disobedience, has been fulfilled. In strict fact, it has not ; for although the weapon may

* See THE ROUND TABLE, No. 94, March 1934, p. 345.

The Swaraj Party and the Reforms

have been sheathed, and the decision whether to draw it in the future given to one man, that does not constitute abandonment. Mr. Gandhi has thus presented Government with a difficult problem. Their answer was given in the Home Member's pronouncement in the Assembly on April 16 that Government propose to raise no obstacle to a meeting of the Congress committee or of the Congress itself, "for the purpose of ratifying the statement of policy recently made by Mr. Gandhi calling off civil disobedience." If such a meeting is held and Government are satisfied that as a result civil disobedience has been called off, they will then review their policy towards the various Congress organisations. If civil disobedience is effectively called off the present policy of releasing political prisoners will be expedited. Thus in effect Government have refused to accept Mr. Gandhi's voice as the voice of Congress. The statement has been on the whole well received, and the probabilities are that Congress will formally call off the movement, making it clear at the same time that present abandonment is in no sense a promise never to employ it again.

II. THE SWARAJ PARTY AND THE REFORMS.

THE real difficulties of the resuscitated Swaraj party will begin with the drawing up of their programme. It may be taken as certain that the maximum effort will be put into election contests and that, in Pandit Malaviya's phrase, the Swarajists will seek to capture "every seat they can, and fill them with strong-souled and incorruptible Congressmen or Nationalists who can put their hearts into the fight." Mr. Aney describes the position as an acceptance by the Congress of the Government's challenge to demonstrate its control over the classes and masses of India. Some of the present members of the Assembly, who broke from the Congress in 1930 on the issue of

India : Swaraj the Phoenix

boycotting the Councils, have put out feelers suggesting that since they have in effect been proved right, and since they kept the Congress flag flying in the legislatures during these four years, their seats should be respected. It is doubtful whether much attention will be paid to such hopes, and in more than one quarter the offensive term "blackleg" has been applied to these sitters on the fence. It is true that the present decision justifies their action four years ago, but it is one of the less estimable qualities of human nature not to like those who have acted more wisely than ourselves and have profited thereby.

Contesting elections is one thing; drawing up a plan of campaign in relation to the White Paper, His Majesty's Government, Parliament and India is quite another. There is at present little sign of any profound constructive approach. The meetings of the All-India Congress Committee and Swarajist conference in early May at Ranchi should provide some enlightenment.*

In particular, one asks, what will be the attitude of Assembly Congressmen towards the White Paper and any proposals based on it? Press and public utterances continue to swell the chorus of condemnation, and no change in this attitude need be looked for in the immediate future. An important part of Congress effort is held to be "the education and organisation of public opinion in effective opposition to any unacceptable constitution which the Government may seek to impose on India." The decision to re-enter the legislatures in no way indicates a disposition to look more kindly on the White Paper or its authors, His Majesty's Government. It would, in fact, be better described as intended to facilitate opposition.

* The programme adopted by the conference included the repeal of special anti-terrorist legislation, the release of political prisoners, the enforcement of economy, opposition to any form of imperial preference, social justice for all classes of workers and peasants, and the removal of untouchability. The White Paper was condemned as calculated to perpetuate the political subjection and the economic exploitation of the people of India.—*Editor*.

The Swaraj Party and the Reforms

Whether the Swarajist attitude will remain purely negative remains to be seen. Much depends on the events of the next few weeks, and still more on whether the party can throw up a leader of personality like the late C. R. Das. So far there are no signs of such a succession; for Dr. Ansari could never fill that bill and no other name suggested comes near the standard of acceptability and power desiderated. Yet there is nothing India needs more at this juncture than someone who will guide dissatisfaction into action. Unless such a lead eventuates the outcome may be merely faction, a peril never far off in India. The *Leader*, in a pungent review of Mr. Gandhi's "14 years of experimenting with truth at the expense of the country he has treated as a spiritual laboratory for his mystical researches," declares him and Pandit Malaviya to be "the only men whose leadership can survive the failure of their policies." It is because the need for a leader with an all-India as distinct from a regional appeal is realised that the Mahatma's leadership thus survives failures and resentment.

The appearance of the White Paper in March, 1933, inaugurated the period of uneasiness and questioning in Congress circles. The appearance of the Joint Select Committee's report will be the next precipitating influence, and it is unlikely that any decisions regarding future activities will be taken till that report has appeared.

Whatever scorn may be professed by Congress or its associates for the position of His Majesty's Government and Parliament in regard to the affairs of India, no Indian political decision is made without close reflection upon the political position in the United Kingdom as a whole as well as in relation to Indian affairs. Thus there are clear indications that a considerable body of Hindu opinion would welcome a deferment of the White Paper scheme, not from conservatism, but from a deliberate conviction that sufficient postponement of any India Bill based on the White Paper would produce a much more advanced scheme of reform. The National Government cannot

India : Swaraj the Phoenix

be in power more than five years without seeking re-election; that is, there must be an election in the United Kingdom by the close of 1936, and probably earlier. The Labour party is regarded as likely to come into power then, and as certain at any rate to have a much larger representation. It would, therefore, be preferable to have the India Bill passed by the next Parliament rather than by this, and if that is so then one object of Indian advanced opinion should be to prevent the passage by the present Parliament of an India Bill based on the White Paper. More than one prominent Indian has said publicly that he would prefer no reforms at all to a constitution based on the White Paper, but what was in their minds was probably something of the nature just suggested.

If delay is in itself an advantage from this point of view, then all methods likely to secure it must be investigated. Thus there emerges the surprising alliance of the British Die-hards with the Indian extremists. The more vocal and obstructive the Die-hards at home are, the more they play into the hands of those out here who deliberately seek delay, and who desire, therefore, the maximum obstruction and intransigence in Britain. It is too easily assumed that blank condemnation and absence of constructive suggestion are merely a form of nihilistic negation popular in India. Actually, they may be an illustration of profound psychological appreciation. The more frequent and unequivocal these condemnations, the more the British Die-hards are likely to react in opposition to the present National Government and its India proposals, with the consequence that the passage of the India Act in the present Parliament becomes less and less probable. Much, or even most, of the rather wearisome condemnation appearing regularly in the Indian press could be attributed to the "N.C.O. spirit" rather than to any excogitated policy, but the longer heads have almost certainly concluded that it is worth while to try for an India Bill passed by the successor to this Parliament.

The Swaraj Party and the Reforms

These reflections are illustrated by the course of a debate in the Assembly on a motion of Raja Bahadur Krishnamachariar urging the necessity of expediting the reforms. This motion was opposed by Bhai Parmanand, the Hindu Mahasabha leader, on the ground that so long as the communal decision holds the field the White Paper scheme is unacceptable.

It is not suggested that the actual elements of a desiderated constitution have even yet been thought out ; indeed it is unlikely that they will be reduced to any hard and fast terms if that can be avoided. Political speculation in that direction in India will always be largely opportunist, taking as its starting-point political conditions in the United Kingdom. According to the *Hitavada* of Nagpur, the new Swarajists will fight elections on two issues : the withdrawal of all repressive legislation and the rejection of the White Paper in favour of Mr. Gandhi's demands at the second Round Table Conference. The same paper, however, goes on to suggest the joint memorandum of the Indian delegates to the Joint Parliamentary Committee as a more suitable basis. This memorandum proposed a modification of the White Paper scheme in several directions, all designed to strengthen the element of Indian control and diminish that of the Secretary of State or the Governor-General's discretion, with particular stress on defence, finance, commercial discrimination and control of the services. For the present nothing more specific need be expected than the *Tribune's* demand that

the very basis of the White Paper be altered . . . not to be satisfied with anything short of complete national freedom . . . would accept no safeguards except those which are demonstrably in India's interests and terminable at her will.

India : Swaraj the Phoenix

III. THE COMMUNAL ISSUE

A GOOD deal of interest has been aroused by the deliberations of the Muslim League and the pronouncements of Mr. Jinnah, an interest not confined to Muslim India. The communal issue is the one that most disturbs Hindu thought; to it, indeed, nearly all constitutional speculation inevitably returns. According to the *Amrita Bazar Patrika*, the White Paper "is based on the communal award." Hopes were raised that Mr. Jinnah's presidency of the Muslim League would produce at last some indication of a common ground for accommodation between Muslim and Hindu views on the White Paper and allied problems. The Hindu press, therefore, was correspondingly disappointed by the resolution of the League

to accept the communal award in so far as it goes and on that basis expresses readiness to co-operate with other communities to secure such a constitution for India as will be acceptable to the country.

A certain virulence in comment is perhaps the measure of the disappointment. This resolution, declared the *Amrita Bazar Patrika*, "is not only meaningless but absolutely ludicrous." Other papers and individuals condemn the insistence by even the League Muslims on the one point that Hindus could not accept, and attribute to the Mahommedans the fault ascribed in a well-known rhyme to the Dutch. One paper finds in Mr. Jinnah "a double personality" and remarks that the triumph of the reactionary element in him is indeed a "most painful tragedy." This slightly equivocal character continues to puzzle and irritate the critics in the old familiar way. According to a Bombay writer, his failure to produce any genuine Hindu-Muslim accommodation suggests either that he is a "captive in the camp of the reactionaries or that he has paid too high

The Communal Issue

a price for the leadership of his community." A more subtle view finds in Mr. Jinnah one who likes always to be, or appear to be, an arbiter, one who cannot go with the crowd, the political cat that walks alone. There is a good deal in this, and it seems unlikely that he will ever command the entire confidence of anyone. Muslims of the orthodox school watch him with vigilance, if not suspicion, and are unlikely ever to enter any chariot that he drives.

Mr. Jinnah's actions may not commend themselves to the bulk of his community, but in his condemnation of federation he perhaps comes nearer to speaking for them than in any other direction. Muslims as a whole are keen on provincial autonomy; for they expect to obtain control in four provinces. Anything that tends to delay the advent of this Muslim self-realisation is suspected and opposed. On the other hand, federation holds comparatively little appeal; for the orthodox Muslim political view sees in it nothing but Hindu predominance. It may be hazarded that, provided the transitional stage contemplated by proposal 202 of the White Paper left a reasonable amount of discretion in Indian hands, Muslim opinion would not be greatly moved by its indefinite continuance. Hindu opinion, on the other hand, tends to fear provincial autonomy because of the Muslim dominance in the four provinces, while at the same time it would rather avoid federation in the hope of securing something better. Probably most Hindu opinion—certainly its advanced element—would prefer a federation of British India alone to one on White Paper lines.

Since the communal decision was taken in August, 1932, it has occupied the top line of the political bill. Even if such important new items as the White Paper seemed temporarily to replace it, the lapse of time has always brought it back to the leading position. The general political situation, and the whole future of India, in fact depend on the solution of the communal issue; but all the negotiations and recriminations of past years have not

India : Swarnj the Phoenix

succeeded in producing any recognisable alternative to the third-party decision of His Majesty's Government. The case seems to be an example of the irresistible force and the immovable obstacle ; Hindu dislike of separate electorates is genuine, but Muslim distrust of joint electorates is equally so. European critics are too apt to condemn this communal difficulty as merely an illustration of Indian contumacy and lack of political capacity. Actually it is a social and political problem of dimensions considerably greater than the French-Canadian issue in Canada, which cannot be said to have been altogether solved, or the Dutch-English problem in South Africa, which has scarcely been solved at all. Most actions of the British Government extract sooner or later from the Hindu press a wide range of condemnation, but none can ever have been so successful in this respect as the communal decision, which has been visited by a wealth of vituperation possible only in this country. Yet the vehemence of the criticism is merely a recognition of the magnitude of the problem, and in a way a tacit admission that, failing agreement by the two contestants, a third-party decision was the only recourse.

With each side so jealous, and prospects of accommodation so slight, the conclusion seems to emerge that the authors of the decision should avoid anything that might arouse false hopes. What is essential is that something should be accepted by both sides on which a political structure can be raised. If in future years the communities wish to alter this foundation or erect some new building altogether, they will have their opportunity. There is little indication at present of any such mutual accommodation ; and if the content of the decision were to come again under official discussion it is difficult to foresee any consequences but delay and renewed recrimination. Despite Hindu and Sikh threats and outpourings of wrath, there seems to be a fairly general impression that His Majesty's Government have said their last word and that finality

The Communal Issue

is the one satisfactory feature of the situation. Any sign that this attitude was weakening would in all probability lead to outbursts of further intransigence on the Sikh and Hindu side and sullen resentment on the Muslim, involving not only no benefit to the constitutional prospects of India but actually an appreciable degeneration.

The same considerations apply to the Poona pact, which is in effect a part of the communal decision. It is impossible to pretend that this pact is satisfactory. Further, as has been suggested in these pages,* the pact is unlikely to work as its authors, or at least its Depressed Class authors, seem to have hoped. The chances are that the caste Hindus will succeed in controlling elections to the Depressed Class seats; and Muslim fears that the Depressed Class members would be little more than a reinforcement of the caste Hindus will be fulfilled. Nevertheless, for any British authority to start tinkering with the pact now would be to let loose on India a flood of controversy and allegation enough to overwhelm any hope of settled or accepted policy for months, if not for years. The communal decision and the pact fulfil the function of the solid matter that assists so greatly the condensation of vapour. If they are removed, the chances of such condensation of vapours into tangible realities will be greatly reduced.

The decision and the pact are alike alterable by mutual consent of the communities concerned. No serious move towards such compromise is likely to be attempted until the Joint Select Committee has reported and possibly not even then. If the report were to suggest modifications in either document, the dissatisfied communities would at once, and naturally, seek to use such opinions in support of their claims for revision. Mere adverse criticisms in the report, even if unaccompanied by positive suggestions for amendment, would be used to this end; demands would be made that the decision and pact be suitably

* See THE ROUND TABLE, No. 92, September 1933, p. 817.

India : Swaraj the Phoenix

modified before the communities could be expected to declare their attitude towards the general constitutional proposals. If the report is silent on the subject, a last effort will be made during the Bill stage to procure an expression of opinion by Parliament. In other words, not until the very last moment are the communities likely to consider serious use of the procedure suggested for an alteration of either arrangement by consent. In some respects the position is undoubtedly artificial, but it is by no means the only feature in Indian politics to which a similar criticism might be applied.

IV. THE ASSEMBLY—ECONOMIC ISSUES

PERHAPS the chief differentiating feature of this winter's session of the Assembly has been the relative importance of economic as against political issues. Here again India is responding, in spite of herself, to world forces. However large Swaraj, communalism and other political issues may loom to those obsessed with them, the force of the world circumstances that affect the livelihood and happiness of 350 million people is irresistible. The increasing attention devoted to economic affairs is to the interest of India, for nothing will help more to produce genuine political parties than the emergence of real and realised economic issues.

An interesting illustration of the importance of the Assembly in India's economic life was afforded by the crowded galleries during debates on such measures as the sugar excise and textile protection Bills. Individuals and bodies who publicly affect to scorn the Assembly, or even boycott it, were strongly represented in its lobbies and galleries, and, as one speaker pungently remarked, in the ante-rooms of members of His Excellency's Council. The hollowness of the Congress boycott when material interests are involved was very apparent.

The Assembly—Economic Issues

For some years past the Assembly has been looked on as the protectionist's haven, but of late the still small voice of the consumer has been heard, notably in the debates on the two Bills just mentioned. In regard to the latter especially, outspoken complaint was forthcoming that India's fiscal system should not be made a tool to guarantee profits to undeserving manufacturing and capitalist interests.

The debates on the sugar excise Bill were of particular interest. This measure proposed an excise duty of Rs.1 as.5 per cwt. on all sugar produced in factories in British India or used in such factories in the manufacture of other commodities. Indian sugar interests, who worked strenuously to defeat the Bill, complained bitterly that it was an unjustified attack on an infant industry. The press generally supported this attitude. Proposals for circulation or delay were defeated, however, and the Bill went to Select Committee, being finally passed by the Assembly on April 18 with the original rate of Rs.1 as.5 restored.

A wider interest attaches to these excise discussions than is contained in their specific provisions. By committing herself to protection on a drastic scale India incurred the inevitable penalty of a heavy fall in customs revenue. Either expenditure had to be correspondingly reduced or the lost customs revenue made up elsewhere. Are Indian manufacturing interests prepared to accept excises as the natural counterpart of customs duties that effectively protect and therefore yield little revenue? In fact, are they prepared to give as well as take? The answer to this question is of interest beyond India. Observers might deduce from the fact that an Indian legislative body has now accepted the principle of excises that there will be in the future a comparable readiness to balance expenditure by self-taxation. The adoption of excise duties now may go some way towards meeting the misgivings regarding the viability of the finance system set out in the White Paper and the fears of unbalanced budgets and irresponsible finance generally under the new constitution.

India : Swathing the Phoenix

The White Paper Assemblies, it may be argued, will be very different from the present Assembly. Caution in prophecy is indeed necessary, but the indications are that the lowered franchises will strengthen the consumer's voice in the legislatures and that there will be no reluctance to mulct the tariff-sheltered manufacturer, who may one day, writhing under the fiscal scorpions of the future, come to sigh for the whips that he now finds so harsh.

India.

April, 1934.

LEGAL REVOLUTION IN THE IRISH FREE STATE

I. OUR "NEW DEAL"

IN a message broadcast to America on St. Patrick's day, Mr. de Valera said that his Government's work had sometimes been compared with that of President Roosevelt ; but he modestly added that, whereas the President's task had been that of a major surgical operation, theirs was more that of the physician patiently restoring a much weakened, but otherwise healthy, body to full life and vigour. This message gives an interesting indication of what Mr. de Valera believes to be the scope and purpose of his "new deal." Referring to the situation, as he saw it, when his party took office in 1931, he asserted that having been governed for centuries in the interests of another country we had then no manufacturing industries to speak of. The one industry left us was agriculture, and that was mainly pastoral. We paid Great Britain for her manufactured goods, of which we took relatively more than any other country, mainly by the export of livestock and animal products. These we had to sell on the British market in keen competition with similar produce from other countries. In such conditions fewer and fewer people could be supported on our land. The bullock replaced the human being, and the country was being depopulated. For generations we had been rearing our children for export. To cap all, the world slump in agricultural prices ruined our British market. In addition we were paying to Great Britain an annual sum which, relatively to our resources,

Legal Revolution in the Irish Free State

imposed a burden upon us greater than that placed on Germany for war reparations by the Young plan—a burden ten times as great, on the same comparison, as that of Great Britain's debt to America. Unemployment was growing apace, and, to make matters worse, the outlet of emigration to the United States was stopped. Economically our country seemed doomed.

To meet this alarming situation, his Government proposed a policy of national self-sufficiency. This meant protecting our secondary industries so that they might be developed to supply our needs in manufactured goods. The industrial workers thus employed would expand the home market for the produce of our farms. The Government also proposed to protect completely our agricultural industry. Summarising their achievements, he said that in two years the imports of animal products had ceased, and that the home market was now entirely reserved for our own farmers. Our wheat area had been quadrupled. Our flour mills were now working at full capacity, and the import of flour would soon completely cease. Three new beet sugar factories, when completed, would be able to meet at least four-fifths of our sugar requirements. Peat would gradually be substituted for foreign coal. A forestry scheme, providing for the planting of half a million acres of forest over a period of fifteen to twenty years, would provide rural employment, and take from us the reproach of being the most tree-denuded country in Europe. By a scheme of bounties his Government had eased the blow of the hostile British tariffs at our cattle industry. They had given the farmer considerable relief by reducing his overhead charges, by halving the land annuities, and by relieving agricultural rates with government grants. As regards manufacturing industries, progress had been made in the manufacture of apparel, which was formerly a large item in our import list. Production in the woollen and worsted industries had also been greatly increased. In conclusion, Mr. de Valera claimed that we were moving

steadily forward towards such an organisation of our social and economic life as would make all our resources and potentialities, human and material, available to the greatest extent for the welfare of every member of the community.

Of course, there is another side to the picture, which Mr. de Valera, naturally enough, completely ignores. His predecessors in office, and his present opponents, might point out with equal justice that many of his projects are but developments or amplifications of their own plans. They had initiated and carried out a policy of protection for home industries that differed from his only in degree and method, and they had also started, in spite of criticism from Mr. de Valera's party, the manufacture of beet sugar, the exploitation of our water power for electrical use, and the development of our agricultural industry on efficient lines. In short, they might say that his "new deal" was only the old deal camouflaged, and that all—indeed more than all—the benefits accruing from their policy had been lost owing to the senseless quarrel he had provoked with Great Britain over the land annuities and the oath of allegiance. This quarrel had crippled our principal industry, agriculture, and destroyed our cattle trade, the loss of which can never be made good by any possible increase in our home market for agricultural produce. Pursuing Mr. de Valera's surgical simile, they might add that, whereas President Roosevelt had performed a major operation to save a patient *in extremis*, Mr. de Valera had performed an experimental operation on a perfectly healthy patient, and left him almost *in extremis*. There certainly can be little doubt that Mr. de Valera's "economic" war has already cost the country in taxation and loss of capital more than did the civil war. His policy will, of course, benefit the small manufacturers, who are springing up like mushrooms in the night behind the new tariffs, but it will ruin the large farmers who have to employ labour and who depend on the cattle trade, for which they require an export market. The small farmer who can live on a

Legal Revolution in the Irish Free State

subsistence economy basis, and who can rely on the sweated labour of his family, may continue to exist on crops of wheat, oats, sugar beet and tobacco, which the government will purchase at fixed prices at enormous cost to the taxpayer. The ultimate result of Mr. de Valera's deal will probably be a country of small farmers eking out a miserable existence in order to support the small manufacturers. But since these manufacturers cannot hope to develop an export trade, or to compete with the mass production of larger countries, their development on any large scale is impossible, and the belief that they will provide considerable employment for our increasing population, and fresh home consumers for our agricultural produce, seems completely to lack foundation. On balance, our agricultural production must certainly be diminished by at least a third of its present value.

The Government have recently introduced a Bill, taking power to establish a quota system, so as to be in a position to bargain with foreign countries; but the fact remains that we must find a purchaser for our agricultural surplus, and while the number of possible purchasers outside Great Britain is negligible, the competing sellers are very numerous and very keen. The market for industrial products, that we can offer in exchange, is small in any event, and has now been drastically restricted by our own policy, except for the products of countries like India, which has little use for our agricultural goods. In pursuit of this bartering process, negotiations have already begun with India, and no doubt other such bargains will be attempted. But the trade statistics show that Great Britain and Northern Ireland continue to be far the biggest traders with the Free State. In the first two months of this year they took 92 per cent. of our exports, and from them we obtained 70 per cent. of our imports.

Our adverse balance of trade has risen from 16 to 33 per cent. of the total volume of external trade since 1931-32. During the same period our export trade has been reduced

Our "New Deal"

by almost one-half, to which loss must be added the money spent on bounties, subsidies, grants to the farmers, doles, and relief work of various kinds ; for the cost of all this has to be borne by the community. During the year 1933, bounties and subsidies alone amounted to almost two million pounds, and this year they will be more. Such a drain cannot continue indefinitely, and the Government is already trying to reduce them. But some bounties, such as that payable to wheat-growers, which this year is seven shillings a barrel, they cannot end or dispense with if their policy is to succeed. A bounty of another and more disastrous kind is created by the Government's decision to encourage the slaughter of 200,000 calves yearly, and to destroy old and diseased cows, in order to reduce the cattle stocks of the country. Ten shillings is to be paid for every calf skin exported, and £3 for each cow destroyed.

In spite of these events, Mr. Lemass, the Minister for Industry and Commerce, recently assured the Cork Chamber of Commerce, who were inclined to be sceptical, that there was no need for pessimism, but every reason for optimism, in the economic circumstances of the country. The British markets, he said, would never again be available for the free and unrestricted entry of agricultural produce, and the worst service anybody could perform for the Irish farmer was to mislead him into believing otherwise. Great Britain's agricultural policy was not likely to change. An increased consumption of agricultural goods at home, through expanding industrial employment, must be their main objective, while they must also take advantage of any source of profitable external trade. It was true, he said, that people engaged in shipping and foreign trade would be glad to see more goods passing between nations, but it was undesirable that the ideas of a special trade interest should determine the policy of the country.

Mr. de Valera's newspaper never loses an opportunity of pointing out that the new agricultural policy of the British Government is directed to preserving the home market for

Legal Revolution in the Irish Free State

the British farmer, and that they have even rebuffed the recent overtures of New Zealand for freer trade between Great Britain and that Dominion. The English cattle quota restrictions have indeed made the situation in our cattle trade nearly impossible. As Dr. Ryan, the Minister for Agriculture, has recently admitted, we have too many cattle. We want all the cows we have, but we do not want all the cattle we have. We could not afford to reduce our cows by more than 25 per cent., but we can only consume about 15 per cent. of our cattle. It is this situation which has forced him to become a kind of "bovine Herod." The reduction of livestock, however, will involve a reduction of tillage also, because wheat can only be grown in rotation with roots, and roots can only be fed to stock. The Labour party leaders suggest that the problem should be solved by licensing butchers throughout the country to buy stock with the aid of a government subsidy of £2 15s. per head, and to sell the meat to persons in receipt of unemployment benefit or home assistance at from 2d. to 3d. a pound—a scheme which, they maintain, would absorb 50,000 fat cattle annually and which, it may be added, would be an excellent vote-catching proposition. In any event another little subsidy will hardly do us any more harm.

II. THE BLUE SHIRTS

IF Mr. de Valera continues to play the principal rôle in our economic drama, General O'Duffy certainly occupies the centre of the political stage, and his Blue Shirts are making history. At a convention of the United Ireland party, held in Dublin early in February, he was enthusiastically acclaimed by some 1,600 delegates, principally young men and women, from all parts of the country. In a long speech he outlined the policy of his party, claiming that it was truly democratic, and that it was founded on the conception of an independent and

The Blue Shirts

undivided Ireland, the traditional aim of Irish nationalism. It was the reality of independence that mattered, not the mere form of government, which was a matter to be decided by the people themselves from time to time as changing circumstances might require or permit. They took their stand on the fundamental sovereign right of the Irish people to withdraw from partnership in the British Commonwealth whenever they believed that considerations of honour or interest made it desirable. The alternatives before the people at present were the reunion of Ireland on the basis of the Free State's existing status, or the declaration of a twenty-six county republic. The people were free to choose either, but United Ireland called on them to achieve unity among themselves in support of the only sound policy, as an essential preliminary to the reunion of the whole country. The United Ireland party would make an honourable and satisfactory settlement of the dispute with Great Britain, and would try to place the agricultural industry on a solid basis of prosperity.

The exact nature of the settlement of the economic dispute that General O'Duffy has in mind is not very clear, for in a subsequent speech at Monaghan, on February 17, he said they recognised the possibility that the land annuities might not be paid in the future, when his party had been placed in power; but their position was that in negotiating with England they must recognise an honourable agreement come to by the Cosgrave Government. He believed that England would do for this country what she expected America would do for her. They hoped to obtain a moratorium for a number of years, but whatever agreement they came to they would stand by honourably. They would say to Great Britain: "We will take your heavy industrial products, which we cannot produce here, in preference to those of any other country, if, in exchange, you will take our surplus home products to the exclusion of those of other countries." All of which sounds too good and too simple to be true.

Legal Revolution in the Irish Free State

If, however, the gallant General's orations are long-winded and uninspiring, he has certainly done more to infuse life and vigour into the Opposition than all his more eloquent colleagues put together. In this he has been ably seconded by Mr. Ernest Blythe, the former Minister for Finance in the Cosgrave Government, who has recently been elected to the Senate, and who is undoubtedly the strongest and most determined man in the United Ireland party. It may be assumed that he and some of the other far-seeing members of that party, like Professor Tierney and Professor Hogan, are responsible for the idea of a corporative State, which General O'Duffy indicates as the ultimate aim of the party's policy. In accordance with the declaration of the present Pope that "the primary duty of the State, and of all good citizens, is to abolish conflict between classes with divergent interests, and thus to foster and promote harmony between the various ranks of society," and that "the aim of social legislation must be the re-establishment of vocational groups," the United Ireland party has put in the forefront of its social programme "the planning of our national economic life with a view to increased industrial efficiency and harmony by the organisation of agricultural and industrial corporations with statutory powers, assisted by industrial courts and functioning under the guidance of a National Economic Council." It claims to stand unequivocally for the principles of democracy, majority rule, and the absolute authority of Parliament, but it maintains that political equality is not more important than equal consideration, based on humanity and service, for all economic ranks in the community, in the framing of a national policy. Only by the interposition of vocational corporations between the State and the individual, it claims, can such satisfaction be guaranteed.

General O'Duffy admits that the establishment of a complete system of self-governing corporations to organise and regulate our economic life will occupy a considerable period of time, and that we cannot adopt unchanged even

The Blue Shirts

the most successful measures that have been applied elsewhere. He believes, however, that such a system would offer a practical alternative to the extremes of both socialism and capitalism, and would terminate class conflict. Economic democracy would not replace political democracy, but would complete it. Ireland, he claims, will move towards the corporative social order by the path of democracy and not by that of dictatorship. His opponents, naturally, reply that he is only attempting to copy Mussolini, and the I.R.A. accuse him of trying to establish a fascist imperialist capitalist régime. He retorts that the present Government is using the Public Safety Act as a stepping-stone to a dictatorship.

The application of that Act to himself was recently the subject of an important decision by the High Court. It will be remembered that General O'Duffy, last December, challenged the legal right of the Military Tribunal to try him on certain charges, and obtained a conditional order from the High Court directing the Tribunal to show cause why it should not be prohibited from hearing these charges against him.* The High Court, by a majority judgment, later decided to make absolute the conditional order in respect of the charges of sedition and incitement to murder, but they held that the charges of membership of an illegal organisation fell within the jurisdiction of the Military Tribunal, and could be tried by that body. They also decided that the Tribunal was a Court of limited jurisdiction, and that the Act did not protect the Tribunal from prohibition. This decision is of the utmost importance, because it lays down the rule that drastic measures for the protection of the public against unlawful acts, when placed in the hands of the military arm, still belong to the field of civil law. That being so, their exercise by military tribunals so-called should be governed by the same fundamental principles of constitutional right as apply when the powers of the State are exercised without

* See THE ROUND TABLE, No. 94, March 1934, p. 378.

Legal Revolution in the Irish Free State

the employment of these armed forces; furthermore, martial law as such can only be enforced when a state of war or armed rebellion actually exists. By this decision the Court has undoubtedly protected individual liberty. General O'Duffy has now appealed to the Supreme Court against that portion of the judgment which permits the Military Tribunal to try him on the charge of being a member of an illegal organisation, and the Government have so far taken no steps to bring him before the ordinary criminal courts on the other charges.

The Government sustained another legal reverse in connection with the proceedings instituted by the leading members of the United Ireland party to have the League of Youth—which is the present official name of the Blue Shirt body—declared a lawful organisation.* The Attorney-General moved the High Court to strike out these proceedings as vexatious and frivolous, but Mr. Justice Johnston, before whom the motion was heard, declared that he could not decide such an important issue upon an interlocutory application, and that the action must proceed for trial. The plaintiffs, he said, alleged that the proceedings involved the question of the right of free speech in the Free State, and they relied on the very clear terms of Article 9 of the Constitution, which declares that the right of free expression of opinion, as well as of peaceable assembly, and the right to form associations or unions, are guaranteed for purposes not opposed to public morality. Was this a real guarantee or was it a mere statement of approbation such as sometimes was attached to cheap articles and clocks? In his opinion the Treaty and the Constitution contained certain fundamental doctrines that were guaranteed and could not be taken away.

Obviously annoyed by these decisions, the Government, with somewhat petulant haste, sought to cure their legal mistakes by hurried legislation devised to "restrict the wearing or carrying of uniform, badges, banners, and other

* See THE ROUND TABLE, No. 94, March 1934, p. 377.

The Blue Shirts

such articles and the use of military titles." This measure was clearly directed against the Blue Shirt organisation, whose growing strength was apparently causing Mr. de Valera considerable alarm. The Bill, which was extremely drastic, forbade the wearing of uniform or badges, or the use of military titles, in support of a political party or ancillary associations. The Civic Guard were empowered to prohibit by proclamation the wearing of any political badge or uniform. The carrying of weapons, which term included sticks and stones, at political meetings was prohibited. The Civic Guard were given powers of arrest on suspicion and without warrant, as well as powers to seize badges and uniforms illegally worn. Heavy penalties were imposed for offences against the Act, varying from large fines to imprisonment for six months, and all offenders were to be tried before the District Court, from whose decisions there was to be no appeal, even to the High Court. This last provision was designed, no doubt, to save the Government from further legal difficulties, but if it had become law it would undoubtedly have had the opposite effect ; for it is entirely contrary to Articles 64 and 65 of the Constitution, which invest the High Court with " full original jurisdiction and power to determine all matters and questions whether of law or fact civil or criminal," and to determine the question " of the validity of any law having regard to the provisions of the Constitution." Moreover, the whole Bill was clearly *ultra vires* and contrary to Article 9 of the Constitution, which guarantees " the right of free expression of opinion as well as the right to assemble peacefully and without arms, and to form associations or unions for purposes not opposed to public morality." This Article also provides that " laws regulating the manner in which the right of forming associations and the right of free assembly may be exercised shall contain no political, religious, or class distinction."

The introduction of this measure naturally led to violent discussions in the Dail, where it intensified the display of

Legal Revolution in the Irish Free State

personal hatred and bitterness, which has been so noticeable and disgraceful of late. The Government spokesmen sought to justify the measure on the grounds that the wearing of blue shirts was provoking disorder throughout the country, and that the Blue Shirt organisation was a semi-military body arrogating to itself the right to usurp the duties of the police, an assumption that no Government could tolerate. In suppressing such an organisation they maintained that they were only doing what had been done in other countries. To this the Opposition replied that the Blue Shirts were brought into existence because the Government did not afford adequate protection to their opponents, whose right to free speech was in jeopardy, and that the Bill was an effort to prevent the lawful activities of a lawful political movement, merely because that movement was menacing the political life of the Fianna Fail party. Moreover, they pointed out that it made no attempt to deal with the menace of the I.R.A., who were drilling and arming with impunity, and whose organisation was tolerated. During the debate a remarkable and excited speech was made by Mr. de Valera, in which he declared that they were "up against it" and drifting towards another civil war. He suggested that if the Government could not get freedom of speech by the ordinary forces of the law they would get a joint composite force, a national force, and preserve order. What this national force was to consist of, or why it would be more effective than the existing national forces of the Civic Guard and the Army, he did not explain, and one can only conclude that he is still hankering after some arrangement that would enable him to bring the I.R.A. under his control. He declared his belief in democratic liberty, his disbelief in communism, and, finally, denied that he was of Jewish origin, entering into elaborate details concerning his birth and parentage, which were entirely irrelevant to the discussion. He said that he often wondered whether the country would not be better off if "the whole lot of them on the benches on both

The End of the Senate?

sides were taken out and put into some foreign island and made to live together"—a proposition that no sensible citizen of the Free State would dream of disputing, for it is only too clear that this country has become the prey of second-rate politicians whose personal hatreds and bitterness have poisoned our public life.

III. THE END OF THE SENATE?

AN effort was recently made by Mr. E. Rice, an optimistic county Cork solicitor and a former supporter of Mr. de Valera, to bring the leaders of the various political parties together in conference, under the chairmanship of Cardinal MacRory, with a view to settling the economic dispute with England, and to resolving their disagreements. General O'Duffy accepted it as a conference "to explore the possibility of arriving at a national policy"; but Mr. de Valera rejected it on the ground that "disagreement or questions of public policy is very natural," and that "the popular decision should be loyally accepted by all."

The Uniform Bill was finally rejected in the Senate by 30 votes to 18, on March 20, and on the same day, as a protest against the Government's management of the new volunteer force, the Senate inserted an amendment in the annual Defence Forces Bill limiting its operation to June 30 next. This conduct so infuriated Mr. de Valera that on the following day he introduced in the Dail a Bill to abolish the Senate. This, he pointed out, was part of the Government's policy at the last election. He said he had not been able to devise a solution, nor had any been offered, to the problem of creating a distinctive second chamber so constituted that one could depend upon an independent judgment on any public matters that were submitted to them. The second chamber, as at present constituted, appeared to him to be an absolute menace to this country. It had hampered the Government in

Legal Revolution in the Irish Free State

taking measures that they considered necessary for the maintenance of order; accordingly they had come to the conclusion that, whatever might be the ultimate decision regarding the desirability of a second chamber, the present chamber, anyhow, as a preliminary, had got to go. Mr. MacDermot, on behalf of the Opposition, said that the Bill was not introduced on its merits, but as an act of ill-tempered retaliation for the rebuff the Government had received from the Senate, which had acted in full accordance with its constitutional rights.

This Bill will, of course, be rejected by the Senate, and will then be suspended for eighteen months, unless in the meantime the Government are successful at a general election, in which event it will automatically become law within sixty days. Last year the Government introduced a Bill* reducing the Senate's power of delaying legislation to three months, but this measure was held up by the Senate, who passed a resolution proposing that a joint committee, consisting of five members of each House, and the chairman of each House *ex officio*, should be set up to consider what, if any, changes ought to be made in the Senate's constitution. This resolution, however, although appearing on the order papers of the Dail, has been ignored by the Government. Many people believed that the introduction of the Bill abolishing the Senate was the prelude to a general election, but this does not seem to be the case. Mr. de Valera has still four years to run, unless his Government are seriously defeated in the Dail, and in eighteen months at most he can abolish the Senate, thus removing the only real obstacle to almost absolute power. The disappearance of the Senate will release the last effective brake on his progress, and will enable him to deal with the judiciary, the army, and the civil service as he thinks fit. Before an election is held, the Government must pass their Redistribution Bill, which reduces the membership of the Dail from 153 to 136 members. They have also

* See THE ROUND TABLE, No. 92, September 1933, p. 876.

The End of the Senate ?

introduced a Bill to abolish university representation, on the ground that it is redundant and undemocratic. This Bill, which would get rid of the three independent members representing Trinity College and increase the Government's majority by two votes, is not likely to be passed by the Senate.

The Government have now decided that the long postponed local government elections are to be held on June 26, and both parties intend to fight them on the political issue. The Cosgrave Government properly discouraged the introduction of politics into local government elections, but the present Government refused to follow their example. Last year they introduced a Bill to convert the present local government register, which is limited to rated occupiers, into an adult franchise. This Bill was rejected by the Senate, and the coming election must, therefore, be fought on the restricted franchise, which ought to be of advantage to the United Ireland party. It is quite probable that if this election were to indicate a Government majority then a general election would not be long delayed. If the verdict is the opposite, Mr. de Valera is hardly likely to tempt providence by appealing to the electorate when he can attain his ends by merely remaining in office.

He has recently admitted that a general election under present conditions would lead to bloodshed and turmoil throughout the country, and the succession of outrages that are taking place every week seems to justify this view. They consist of armed raids and attacks on supporters of the United Ireland party, firing into houses, robbery from banks and postal officials, burning or otherwise destroying political halls and private property, and interfering with railway lines, roads, and electrical cables. Of course these events do not seriously affect the ordinary life of the country. The worst of these outrages took place at Dundalk on February 11, when the house of a man who had given evidence before the Military Tribunal

Legal Revolution in the Irish Free State

was blown up by a bomb, with the result that the house was wrecked, an old woman was killed, and two children, playing in the street, were seriously injured. Mr. Cosgrave afterwards stated in the Dail that a secret meeting of I.R.A. officers had, with the knowledge of the Government, been held at 44, Parnell Square, Dublin, on the day previous to this outrage, for the purpose of giving instruction to officers of the I.R.A. in the use and manufacture of a land mine to be exploded on the following day. A similar, but fortunately less successful, attempt was made to blow up the residence of a prominent supporter of General O'Duffy at Carrigtwohill, county Cork, on March 30. The systematic and identical nature of these outrages indicates clearly that they are the work of an organisation. Although some of the miscreants responsible have been caught and convicted by the Military Tribunal, the great majority escaped, and the Civic Guard seem to be either afraid or incapable of taking action against them. The Blue Shirts, who have, on the whole, observed both discipline and restraint under most trying conditions, have shown so far no inclination to take the law into their own hands by way of reprisals. The Irish Republican Army is, however, by no means a happy family. At a recent convention some leading members apparently advocated the starting of a Republican party to contest elections and enter the Dail; it is now announced that they were "court-martialled" for not accepting the decision of the majority not to do so, and "dismissed with ignominy from the army."

The Easter holiday was availed of as usual by the I.R.A. to parade through Dublin in commemoration of the 1916 rising, and about a thousand of their organisation marched to the graves of the 1916 men in Glasnevin cemetery. On this occasion Mr. de Valera's party organised a rival demonstration at the graves in Arbour Hill barracks, which naturally enraged the I.R.A. Their so-called Army Council promulgated a statement declaring that coercion,

The End of the Senate ?

imprisonment of republicans, and suppression of republican sentiments were the order of the day in Northern and Southern Ireland, while the "British garrison" were free to preach and work against the nation. This statement also attacked the Government for forming the new volunteer force, and declared that this attempt to deplete the ranks of the Republican Army had failed. Recruiting for this new force has, however, already begun, and a few companies made their appearance at the St. Patrick's day army parade in Dublin, dressed in a grey-green uniform, which is said to be based on that worn by Roger Casement's Irish Brigade, recruited in Germany from Irish prisoners during the European War—a fact that will hardly make it appeal to anyone who has a regard for the honour of Irish soldiers. Although this force is alleged to be non-political, the Government have entrusted its organisation to twenty ex-members of the I.R.A., who have no training as military officers, and the local committees engaged in recruiting are principally composed of the Government's supporters. The regular army officers are naturally annoyed at being passed over.

Another interesting development, and indication of the Government's policy, took place when the new United States Minister to the Free State, Mr. W. McDowell (who has since died under tragic circumstances) presented his letters of credence to Mr. de Valera instead of to the Governor-General as representing the King. This new departure was apparently arranged directly with His Majesty, and the credentials were, of course, addressed to him. The Governor-General, in the Free State, has become a mere title without function or purpose, save the automatic signature of Acts of Parliament; the Viceregal Lodge in Phoenix Park is to be converted into a museum of science and art. Mr. Sean T. O'Kelly, the Vice-President of the Executive Council, discussing the ceremony of the United States Minister's reception, said that one by one they were cutting the ropes and chains that England wound

Legal Revolution in the Irish Free State

around them. They would use every effort to re-establish a republic for the thirty-two counties of Ireland. That was their aim, and if the gun was necessary, the people had the Government to direct the army, and they had the volunteer force behind them again. The only comment that need be made on this wanton and provocative statement is that such declarations make any form of national reunion impossible. They are a good example of the manner in which our smaller politicians seek to pander to the worst passions of the extremists, and attempt to justify their own existence. His colleague, the Minister for Education, Mr. Derrig, has since rather unkindly stated that the suggested establishment of a thirty-two county republic by force of arms was all nonsense—which, indeed, it is.

IV. A SURPRISE BUDGET

MR. SEAN MACENTEE, our Minister for Finance, has done his best to confound his critics and emulate Mr. Chamberlain. His third budget, which he introduced in the Dail on May 9, disclosed a surplus of £1,355,000, with revenue at £30,229,182 and administrative expenditure at £28,874,298 during the past year. Having followed established practice by proposing to borrow £7,212,750 for capital and non-recurring expenditure during 1934-35, he announced a prospective surplus of no less than £1,202,750. He admitted that the magnitude of the surplus for last year was a great surprise to him and his advisers, but he claimed that it was a striking and convincing testimony of the financial and economic strength of the State and its people, and pointed out that every single tax heading showed an excess over the estimates. In the distribution of this surplus Mr. MacEntee has endeavoured to please everyone. He has set aside £250,000 to inaugurate a scheme of widows' and orphans' pensions; the unemployed are to benefit by an increase of £150,000 in the grant for

A Surprise Budget

relief works ; housing grants in the Irish-speaking districts absorb £60,000 ; a sum of £180,000 is allocated to provide pensions for members of the old Irish Republican Army, who, because of their participation in the civil war, did not share in the pension scheme of the Cosgrave Government ; the athletes are encouraged by a complete remission of the entertainment tax on all outdoor athletic sports ; growers of Irish tobacco receive an additional rebate in duty of twopence a pound ; and last, but not least, the business community are pleased by a reduction of sixpence in income tax, which brings it down to the British level, and the entire population by a reduction in the tax on tea (our most popular beverage) by fourpence a pound. These last two concessions to the taxpayer will cost £560,000, leaving Mr. MacEntee next March with the extremely modest estimated surplus of £2,750.

On the taxation side, he has increased some present customs duties, and imposed new ones. The duty on imported newspapers is increased from two-fifths of a penny per copy to two-thirds of a penny per copy as from May 28. Forty per cent. of the total tax revenue last year came from customs duties. The sums to be met by borrowing include two-thirds (£1,500,000) of the amount needed for bounties and subsidies, and £300,000 in respect of funded land annuity arrears.

Discussing the debt position, the Minister claimed that the Fianna Fail Government had reduced the net public debt of the Free State by a sum of £5,460,000 in two years. But he admitted that this did not include half the cost of all land purchase transactions carried out under the Land Acts passed by the Free State Government since 1923, which will eventually amount to £17,000,000. Enumerating the sums expended by his Government on relief works, industrial development, social services, and relief of rates, which totalled £15,579,000, he pointed out that to achieve all this they had only raised one loan of £6,000,000, of which £5,350,000 remained in the Exchequer at the close of the

Legal Revolution in the Irish Free State

financial year. It sounded almost unbelievable, he said, but it was true. The figures were incontrovertible. The State, and therefore the community as a whole, was financially sounder and stronger than when they took over.

It may be doubted, however, whether the community, individually, and particularly its agricultural members, would endorse this optimistic statement.

The Irish Free State.

May 1934.

GREAT BRITAIN : THE SLIPPERY SLOPE

I. THE BUDGET AND THE UNEMPLOYED

ON April 17 Mr. Neville Chamberlain opened his third budget in this Parliament, armed with a surplus of £34,452,000 on the previous year's accounts.* Even in a year of fairly general though laborious economic recovery, a surplus of that size on a budget of roughly £800,000,000 (including self-balancing revenue and expenditure) must be reckoned no mean achievement. The cuts and the taxation imposed in 1931† have meant a real tightening of the belt. The rentier, who as a rule gets little sympathy, has suffered under the treble burden of income tax at 5s. in the £, the conversion of government and other debt to lower rates of interest, and losses of income through defaults or reduced dividends. The salaried and professional classes have felt the pinch through reduced and more precarious incomes, through higher taxation, and through the reduction in the scale of income tax allowances. The latter measure has struck very heavily at married people with moderate incomes. Apart from his greater economic insecurity, the wage-earner in employment has probably been as well off as ever he was before, but beneath him again the unemployed have had an extremely hard time. True, the cost of living had fallen by a percentage at least commensurate with the cuts

* Before allowing for "token payments" of £3.3 million (assumed to be on capital account) to the United States.

† See THE ROUND TABLE, No. 85, December 1931, p. 118.

Great Britain : The Slippery Slope

in unemployment benefit; but the latter was never intended to be a sufficient maintenance for those out of work over a long period of time, and protracted depression has gravely increased the numbers of the unemployed who have been without a job for weeks and even months together. In these circumstances, reserves become exhausted, little bits of property are pawned without hope of redemption, and the need of repairs to boots, clothing and furniture becomes ever more pressing. What, therefore, was adequate even in 1931 for the typical unemployed man has become inadequate to-day.

It was no wonder that among all parties the first claim on any budgetary surplus was widely felt to be the restoration of the cuts made in unemployment benefit two and a half years ago. Mr. Chamberlain's announcement that this would be done was greeted with prolonged cheers. In order to spread the reliefs as widely and equitably as the sacrifices had been spread, Mr. Chamberlain next reduced the standard rate of income tax from 5s. to 4s. 6d. in the £. He was unable to make any alteration in the scale of personal and family allowances. For the rest, he proposed to restore one-half of the cuts that had been made in the wages and salaries of public servants. These concessions reduced his prospective surplus to the nominal amount of £800,000, with expenditure at £705·7 million (against £690·1 million last year*), and revenue at £706·5 million (against £724·6 million). No provision was made for war debt instalments.

The budget caused fairly general satisfaction and was greeted with applause in financial circles. Nevertheless, a number of criticisms have been vigorously voiced both in the House of Commons and outside. The first is that the Chancellor has taken a falsely and perhaps damagingly cautious view of his prospects for 1934-35. Expert financial commentators had predicted a prospective surplus of the order of £50,000,000, on the basis of existing taxation and

* Excluding payments to the United States Government.

The Budget and the Unemployed

rates of expenditure, whereas Mr. Chamberlain put it no higher than £29,000,000. The discrepancy is accounted for by differences in the estimates of the yield of income tax and surtax. The yield of income tax in 1933-34 was £229,000,000, to which must be added £12,000,000, a non-recurring loss of revenue suffered last year through an alteration in dates of payment. Instead of improving on this total of £241,000,000 in accordance with rising prosperity, Mr. Chamberlain actually lowered his estimate to £240,000,000. He explained that profits were still falling during the first half of the previous financial year, on which tax assessments for 1934-35 would be based. The Treasury, of course, is in a far better position than any outside authority to judge what is likely to be the total of assessable income on which tax will be due; nevertheless it is widely felt that in this item, as throughout his revenue estimates, Mr. Chamberlain has erred deliberately on the side of caution.

If this is true, there are two possible explanations. A budget yielding a large surplus is deflationary in its direct consequences, since the reduction that it effects in public purchasing power by means of taxation exceeds the amount that it replaces in the shape of public salaries and other expenditures. The Treasury may be calculating, therefore, on such a revival of capital investment as will absorb both current saving of the ordinary kind and the compulsory saving imposed on the community by governmental finance. It may also be their view that industrial recovery, delicate as it is, needs the continuous tonic of observing public revenue to be more buoyant than was anticipated.

The other explanation that may be offered for this presumed budgeting for a surplus is that the Chancellor wishes to have as much as possible in hand to distribute in 1935. Next year's budget may well be Mr. Chamberlain's last before the Government faces a general election, and the Opposition parties are making no secret of their belief that political foresight has inspired the conservatism

Great Britain : The Slippery Slope

of the estimates. There is still a third possibility that has not been so freely alluded to, though it has been present to many minds. The failure of the Disarmament Conference to secure any immediate progress towards a genuine reduction of world armaments, and the increased provision being made for defence not only by Germany but also by naval Powers, have forced us to consider whether for safety's sake we shall not have to spend more on our defence forces within the next year or two. The Government may be considering this eventuality when they adjust their finances so as to have a margin available should the necessity arise.

The second main line of criticism of the budget is partly dependent upon the soundness of the first. Not only the Opposition but also sections of Conservative opinion hold that the Government ought to have done more for the lowest income stratum of the community. The direct cost to the Exchequer of restoring unemployment benefit to the 1931 rates is only £3,600,000 in the current financial year; for the burden of higher rates of benefit to claimants still possessing insurance rights—£4,800,000 in the current year—is to fall upon the unemployment insurance fund.* Against this £3,600,000, it is pointed out, the Chancellor has given £20,500,000 in relief to income tax payers.

The principle of the Unemployment Bill† (which is still before Parliament) is that the unemployment insurance fund should be autonomous and self-supporting. Accordingly the Government could not give direct relief to the insurance beneficiaries, except by increasing the rate of Exchequer contribution per employed worker. But of course by an amendment of the Bill they could relieve the fund of part or the whole of its outstanding debt, the service on which is approximately equal to the cost of restoring the benefits to their 1931 level. Pressure was vainly brought to bear upon the Government at least

* See THE ROUND TABLE, No. 93, December 1933, p. 121.

† *Loc. cit.*, and THE ROUND TABLE, No. 94, March 1934, p. 354.

The Budget and the Unemployed

to use the actual surplus of £34,000,000 for the reduction of the unemployment fund's indebtedness, instead of for general debt redemption. The desire to do more for the unemployed is based on a sense of political realities as well as on an appreciation of the fact that small increases or reductions of income mean infinitely more, in terms of human comfort or distress, when the recipient is near the subsistence level than when he has some reserve of unnecessary expenditure on which to economise.

The real concern felt for the unemployed in all parties and sections of the community is portrayed by the fact that on February 20 the Government's majority fell to the lowest point it has yet reached on a proposal to raise the unemployment assistance allowance for a dependent child from 2s. to 3s. a week. It was disturbing for a Government backed by such overwhelming numbers to find its majority reduced to no more than 52 on a vote of 302 members, out of a house of 615. Some 70 members who normally support the Government went into the Opposition lobby, and obviously a great many others deliberately abstained.

Some embarrassment was recently caused to all parties by the organisation of a great march of the unemployed on London from every part of the country. The Labour party and the Trades Union Council officially repudiated the march, but many individual members and local organisations of the party gave to the marchers both encouragement and assistance. The Government refused to allow their spokesmen to appear at the bar of the House, and the immediate fruits of their demonstration must have been disappointing to the participants. Nevertheless, the discipline and organisation that were displayed, and the peacefulness of the demonstrations both en route and in London, probably enhanced the public sympathy for the unemployed, which more violent expostulation might well have lessened.

Great Britain : The Slippery Slope

II. THE GOVERNMENT'S FUTURE

THERE is some evidence that the tide of fortune in the constituencies is no longer flowing quite so strongly against the Government as during the first two years of its life. There have been five by-elections in the last quarter—North Portsmouth, the Scottish Universities, Lowestoft, Basingstoke and North Hammersmith. In only one of these, the last, where a Conservative was displaced by a Labour candidate, was there any change in the party representation, and in that case it meant merely a return to the state of affairs before 1931. If we omit the Scottish Universities election, in which there was no Government candidate, and if we divide the 1929 Liberal vote in North Portsmouth proportionately between Conservative and Labour (there having been no Liberal candidate in the by-election), we find that the ratio of Conservative to Labour votes is now almost exactly the same as it was five years ago. The Liberal poll has fallen by a considerable percentage, but it is fair to add that at Lowestoft the "independent" Liberal candidate, who forfeited his deposit, had no official party backing. In by-elections, of course, a great deal depends on transitory circumstances and on the personalities of the candidates. In so far, however, as these latest results are any guide, if a general election were held now the House of Commons would return to approximately the same complexion as it had during the office of the last Labour Administration. The Government's popularity has been enhanced by the steady fall in unemployment, which is recorded on another page,* and this has also meant a certain slackening of the agitation against the "means test." The attacks of the Opposition in the press and in the country are directed mainly against the Government's alleged apathy over housing†—a subject on

* See p. 611.

† See THE ROUND TABLE, No. 94, March 1934, p. 349.

The Government's Future

which the nation's conscience has undoubtedly been aroused—and the probability of higher prices for food as a result of Mr. Elliot's agricultural marketing schemes.

It is noteworthy that the only by-election of the five in which the Opposition achieved a positive success was in a London constituency; for their last outstanding success of the kind was also in the metropolis, at East Fulham,* and one of the most interesting events of the quarter has been the triennial elections for the London County Council, which have given Labour a majority for the first time. In these elections the housing issue and the administration of public assistance to the unemployed played a dominating part. A large section of the Conservative press tried to direct the electors' attention to the question of the grant of public contracts to co-operative societies, which virtually form part of the Labour movement. Their campaign, however, seems to have been rather a boomerang, as it gave an enormous free advertisement to the co-operatives. At any rate, a socialist administration is now installed at County Hall, under the able leadership of Mr. Herbert Morrison, who was Minister of Transport in the last Labour Government, and who is Sir Stafford Cripps' principal rival as heir-apparent to the leadership of the Labour party.

Mr. Lloyd George, who has otherwise kept mainly in retirement of late, while he has been writing his memoirs, addressed a striking letter to an anonymous Liberal in the North Hammersmith division, urging him to vote for the Labour candidate. The latter, he wrote,

may go farther in some directions than you would care to travel. But the point he wishes ultimately to reach is a long way off. Meanwhile he is on the right road and walking steadily our way. . . The collapse of liberty on the continent of Europe is in every case attributable to the failure of men of progressive ideals to cohere and co-operate on the only issues of immediate moment. . . Put liberty and human progress first and choose the man who comes nearest to representing your ideals.

* See *THE ROUND TABLE*, No. 93, December 1933, p. 149.

Great Britain : The Slippery Slope

A great many former Liberal voters have doubtless been acting, or at any rate thinking, as Mr. Lloyd George advises without the necessity of his intervention. The transfer of Liberal votes to the Labour party, involving the gradual fading away of Liberal representation in Parliament, is a far more probable way by which the forces of opposition to the Government will be unified than any overt scheme for alliance between Liberals and Labour. The Labour party, encouraged by recent electoral successes, and taught by the experience of its previous terms of office, is in no mood to contemplate such an entente. The idea has just been explicitly repudiated by a Liberal party conference. It may even be that certain Liberal leaders of the Left will actually transfer their allegiance to Labour.

Strangely enough, Mr. Lloyd George's plea for union against the forces of dictatorial reaction has been repeated as an argument in support of the National Government itself. Sir Thomas Inskip, the Attorney-General, shocked a great many Conservatives by saying on April 24 that they ought not to be afraid to face the permanent constitution of a National party merely because in 1931 they thought it was only a temporary arrangement for an emergency.

There are large numbers of electors who call themselves neither Liberal, Labour nor Conservative who would not be attracted very strongly by an appeal from the Conservative party as such. . . . Our political liberties are really put in jeopardy. We shall certainly want at the next election a party strong enough to receive the support of all men of goodwill, strenuously opposed to socialism on the one hand or fascism on the other. We shall be making a profound mistake if we think we are so secure against these dangers as to be able to split into different parties. . . . What we want is an association of men not agreed on minor points, but on those great principles which will preserve to us our individual liberties, and our political liberty, free from any assaults of any dictatorships.

This is the most definite evidence yet of the Government's supposed intention to fight the next general election on a "National" ticket, with a joint organisation including the National Liberal and National Labour

Conservatives and India

parties. That probability is causing great apprehension in those powerful Conservative circles which are anxious to fight on a party platform and with a purely Conservative policy. A co-ordinating committee for the National Government, consisting of two members of each of its supporting parties, has been formed largely in order to promote a "National" organisation in the constituencies. There have been rumours that the committee's plans included the allocation of a number of seats at present held by Conservatives to National Liberal or National Labour candidates, and also an arrangement whereby seats now held by Opposition Liberals would be opposed at the general election not by Conservatives but by members of the other two Government parties.

These suggestions have been greeted with a storm of objection in Conservative quarters. Some local Conservative associations, who have complete liberty under the party constitution to choose their candidates for themselves (though as a rule the central office is able to use considerable pressure), have even revolted against implementing Mr. Baldwin's promise in 1932 that National Liberal and National Labour members who supported the Ottawa Agreements Bill would not be opposed by Conservatives. In three constituencies at present held by National Labour members (Tottenham South, Lichfield and South Nottingham) the associations propose to put up Conservative candidates. These difficulties will undoubtedly be increased when the issue of Indian self-government is brought to a head.

III. CONSERVATIVES AND INDIA

A STIFLED fire burns in the midst of the Conservative party, breaking forth every now and again into threatening flames. The necessary protraction of the work of the India Joint Select Committee has given time for the Die-hards to advance their campaign against the White

Great Britain : The Slippery Slope

Paper policy, and on the whole they seem to have had some success, at any rate in the country. This was, perhaps, inevitable, quite apart from the merits or the personalities of the case; for while decisive action, however dubious its wisdom, soon comes to be tacitly accepted even by former opponents, prolonged inaction, however well justified by necessary deliberation, gives rein to prejudice and doubt even among former adherents.

At a meeting of the Central Council of the National Union of Conservative Associations on March 28, a motion to the effect that no further resolutions on the subject of the Indian constitution should be considered by the organisation until the Joint Select Committee should have reported was carried by 419 votes to 314. This was, of course, a victory for the Government attitude that the issue should not be prejudged while still before the Select Committee; but in view of the fact that nine months previously a motion accepting that attitude had been passed in the Central Council by the much larger margin of 838 votes to 356, the supporters of Mr. Churchill were swift to claim a success for their cause. There is a good deal to be said, however, on the other side. While suspicion has grown among the Conservative rank and file, members of Parliament have undoubtedly been more and more impressed by the evident lack of support for the Die-hard policy in any responsible quarters in India itself, except perhaps among extreme Mahomedans and a few of the Princes.

Thus the fire has smouldered on, sending out a tongue of flame at each by-election, each meeting of Conservative organisations, or similar political occasion. Mr. Churchill brought the bellows to it when he moved in the House of Commons, on April 16, for the reference of certain charges against Sir Samuel Hoare and Lord Derby to the Committee of Privileges. He alleged that they had used their position as members of the Government to influence the Manchester Chamber of Commerce to amend its written

Conservatives and India

evidence before the Joint Select Committee in a sense more favourable to the White Paper plan. The Secretary of State, while expressing his complete willingness to have the charges investigated, replied that he had done nothing that was not open for any member of the Joint Select Committee to do, and that his endeavours were confined to preventing the ruin of the India-Lancashire cotton negotiations.

The report of the Committee of Privileges has not yet been published, but in any case Mr. Churchill has probably lost support in the House by turning a political difference of opinion into a personal attack. Nevertheless, the incident must have aroused some uneasiness among wavering Conservatives in the country, and it has certainly intensified the bitterness that has grown up between the two factions.

Nothing is more exasperating than the sense of being gagged, which the opponents of the Government's policy have undoubtedly experienced, though with little justification. On the other hand, the tempers of Sir Samuel Hoare and other protagonists of the White Paper policy have equally been frayed by the objectors' guerilla warfare. Whatever may be the immediate repercussions of Mr. Churchill's accusation, and whatever may prove to be the terms of the Select Committee's report, this breach in the Conservative party will not be soon or easily healed. Upon the India issue, it is not too much to say, hangs the fate of "government of national concentration." Conservatives like Mr. Baldwin, who believe in the continuance of the present party amalgam, may soon be forced to choose between their faith in the "national" principle and their loyalty to their party. If events were to present such a bare choice, most of them would probably feel drawn first towards their party. On the other hand, many of the grumblers, when put to the test, would refuse to carry their dissent to the point of breaking up the Government or of revealing an open gulf within the ranks of the Conservative party.

Great Britain : The Slippery Slope

These being, in brief, the political data, some prophets have predicted that when the Select Committee has reported the Government will amend its proposals in the direction of the Die-hards' views, possibly to the extent of reserving the administration of law and order. These alterations of the White Paper plan would be sufficient, if this prediction is well founded, to turn the Die-hard opposition from a serious menace into a comparatively negligible "cave"; while they would not be too much for the Left supporters of the National Government to stomach. This, of course, is no more than a rumour, but the very fact that it receives credence is significant. Its truth, however, is rendered the more dubious by the personal bitterness already referred to, which must have hardened the hearts of supporters of the White Paper policy against any such compromise.

IV. ECONOMIC RECOVERY

ON April 26 Mr. Runciman enunciated before a Cardiff audience seventeen "reasons for believing that the achievements of the British people were without parallel up to April, 1934." Regarded as "seventeen points which had been successfully accomplished by the National Government," the bag was rather mixed, ranging, as it did, from the rise in industrial securities and the reappearance of industrial dividends to the Government's success in "lowering tariffs in foreign markets by negotiation, a matter which had not been accomplished since the days of Cobden." Making all allowance for ministerial enthusiasm, Mr. Runciman had good grounds for his cheerfulness, although it is a moot point how far the movement towards economic recovery is to be traced to the peculiar virtues of the British people and its Government. The upward movement has probably gone too far now to be reversed. Its pace may falter (as it did in February), but the pro-

Economic Recovery

abilities follow the healthy trend of all the economic curves.

Although the domestic picture contains so much that is hopeful, distrust keeps breaking through, and there is recognition even in the most unlikely places of the truth that in the main the recovery is limited to internal conditions, and that while it is paralleled in most industrial countries, it is not being accompanied by a corresponding increase in international trade.

Within these limits, nevertheless, the British figures are highly satisfactory, though there are still 2,148,000 registered unemployed, and large tracts of the country have not yet seen much revival. The fall in unemployment continues; the rise in the indices of business activity is maintained (the index of production in the March quarter was the best for a first quarter since 1930); retail sales have improved, and show greater popular consumption not only in London and the South, but also in the North and in Scotland. Building is at a high level of activity (though there are still 146,000 unemployed in the industry). The iron and steel industry is working at 80 per cent. of capacity; Mr. Runciman said he had been amazed to find how many steel works were operating at 100 per cent. of capacity. Engineering is much improved; shipbuilding shows twice as much tonnage under construction as last year, even apart from the resumption of work on the Cunarder; but the volume is still extremely low. Most other industries—cotton excepted—show more activity. The improvement in railway traffic receipts continues, and so does the progressive increase in provincial bank clearings. The volume of retained imports (especially raw materials) has grown—more rapidly, however, than exports.

The April unemployment figures were less uniformly encouraging than those for March. The decrease on the month (53,000) would have been 30,000 greater had it not been for the flood of school-leavers turned out at the

Great Britain : The Slippery Slope

end of the Easter term who had not quickly found jobs. The seasonal decline began in coal-mining, and the three textile industries of woollen and worsted, cotton and hosiery showed a slight increase of unemployment. The total volume of registered unemployment in Great Britain at April 23 was 549,000 less than it had been a year before, and the numbers employed had risen during that period by 638,000.

The condition of the cotton industry remains pretty desperate, and has led the Government into an active and hazardous adventure in imperial policy. The discussions between representatives of the Japanese and British cotton and rayon industries collapsed in March after four abortive conferences. Conflict arose on the fundamental question of the scope of any agreement that might be reached on the division of markets ; the British asked for a quota agreement to cover world markets ; the Japanese insisted that only crown colony markets could be considered. There had apparently been a change of opinion in Japan ; feeling against any limitation of exports had grown after the conclusion of the Indo-Japanese agreement with its barter provisions. Mr. Runciman was equally unsuccessful when he took the negotiations over personally ; for the Japanese Government proved no more helpful than the Osaka industrialists. On May 7 Mr. Runciman announced that the Government's hands could be tied no longer. Crown colonies were being asked to apply, as from that date, a system of quotas on imports of cotton and rayon piece-goods. British silk and rayon duties were to be immediately reviewed by the Import Duties Advisory Committee. Tariff action in the case of other Japanese imports into colonial markets would be considered.

The quotas for foreign countries are to be fixed on the basis of 1927-31—the years before the big depreciation of the yen. This allows an expansion of trade for Holland and Italy, and cuts down Japan's exports to the crown colonies by two-thirds. East Africa and Hong Kong are

Industrial Reorganisation and Wages

excepted from the quota scheme, and in West Africa Japanese competition will be dealt with by tariffs. Although Japan may find that no more than from 5 to 7½ per cent. of the total volume of her exports is affected, that is enough to be embarrassing. Whether Lancashire can make cotton and rayon goods cheap enough for the impoverished colonial populations to buy, whether the colonies will readily accept the cutting off of cheap supplies at the dictation of Whitehall, and whether this is the most effective means of fighting Japan are questions that still await an answer.

V. INDUSTRIAL REORGANISATION AND WAGES

LARGE-SCALE industrial reorganisation still falters. After 22 months of discussion, the iron and steel industry has taken the first step towards the reorganisation that was held to be so imperative that the grant of tariff protection was made conditional upon it. On April 19 the industry accepted by 90 votes to 24 a draft constitution for the new central body that is to direct the industry. This admittedly "provides only the methods and machinery of organisation," but it apparently satisfies the conditions of the Import Duties Advisory Committee. Compared, however, with the kind of reorganisation that everybody had in mind two years ago, the present scheme is rather a pale shadow. The National Federation of Iron and Steel Manufacturers has been transformed into a chartered body, the British Iron and Steel Federation, with an elaborate constitution, a council of at least 70, and an executive, representing autonomous sectional organisations. The executive and council have now to begin a study of the means "to promote the maximum of manufacturing and commercial efficiency throughout the industry" and concurrently "to expand the export trade in iron and steel products," which the resolution of April 19 laid down for it.

The delay in framing a scheme acceptable to a majority

Great Britain : The Slippery Slope

reflected the deep conflict between the different interests within this by no means homogeneous industry. The earlier draft schemes proposed a central corporation to control the work of a dozen separate trade associations ; each of these would represent a group of iron and steel products, and would have as its objects the promotion of amalgamations and re-equipment, the elimination of redundancy, and so on. These positive objects have rather faded into the background, and so has the subsequent scheme for output quotas and price-fixing and the centralisation of export sales. How far these plans will re-emerge depends on the spirit in which the new governing body performs its task. The danger is that the present revival of the industry may lead to a neglect of its long-run interests, and that concentration on price-fixing and quotas may divert energies from the elimination of high-cost producers and the concentration of production that the industry needs.

In the coal industry there is a little progress to record, but not on the side of structural reorganisation. After waiting two years for the owners to agree on plans for correcting some of the more flagrant defects in the Coal Mines Act of 1930, the Government produced their own Bill. Its main feature was the removal of output control from coal destined for export, though price regulation was to be maintained. The Government had not much enthusiasm for their Bill, but it served a useful purpose ; for, moved by the threat, the owners hastened to provide a voluntary alternative (in the shape of an export pool), and the Government agreed to apply this by Order and to withdraw the Bill. It is hardly creditable that it should have taken two years to reach this point, and many serious abuses under the 1930 Act still remain to be corrected. It is only fair to note, however, that the spirit of constructive criticism is developing among the owners. A reform like the nationalisation of royalties, for example, is now advocated by men to whom a few years ago it would have been anathema.

Industrial Reorganisation and Wages

Another development of importance is the revival of attempts to reach a marketing agreement between the British and Polish coal industries. The outlook is unpromising. Since the last negotiations, which took place in the autumn of 1931, the rôles have been reversed; sterling depreciation and the quota provisions of the Scandinavian agreements have made Great Britain, not Poland, the more aggressive competitor.

In the cotton industry, reorganisation is held up once again by apparently interminable talk. The Federation of Master Cotton Spinners' Associations has prepared a scheme for a compulsory cartel, with transferable quotas for all yarn producers, combined with a levy for the purchase of redundant plant. Internal differences, however, have caused a postponement of its submission to the general body of members. Another census of plant has been taken which shows that in the last three years the physical contraction of the industry has been extremely rapid. But however cruelly beneficial the process of "healthy bankruptcy" may have been, it has not proceeded quickly enough to overtake shrinking demand. The price-fixing arrangements introduced last year for spinners are still in force, but they are precarious, and in any case they offer no permanent solution of the problem of redundant plant.

One effect of the budget will be to stimulate the movement for wage increases in industry. The way had been led by the local authorities, many of whom had already restored the cuts made in their employees' pay, while several of the industrial councils of public employees had taken the same course. Now, under the budget, the teachers, the police, and the civil servants have benefited, and it is not surprising that trade union branches in many industries have begun to press their officials to put in wage claims. Nevertheless, it will be some time before the unions act with much confidence or determination.

The railwaymen have been among the first to try to seize an advantage from improving trade. Although it was

Great Britain : The Slippery Slope

only in the middle of 1933 that the railway traffic receipts began to improve sharply from their low level, the unions have already made their claim for a restoration of the wage reductions of 1931. The companies are reluctant to concede anything, but how far the unions will push their demands remains doubtful. It is only 17 months since the unenforced award of the chairman of the National Wages Board in favour of a further reduction of wages, and in its inception the unions' present claim had something of the nature of a defensive move. A complicating fact is that the industry's negotiating machinery is at the moment out of action. The companies' notice to withdraw from the conciliation machinery set up under the Railways Act, 1921, has now run out. The proffered substitute—a narrowing of the field of the final tribunal, and the conversion of the large joint board with a neutral element into a small body of three, endowed with some powers of compulsory arbitration—has been rejected by the unions.

The coal industry has ceased, for the time being at least, to exercise any wide influence on the temper of industrial relations. This summer will not see a repetition of the annual crisis in the fixation of wages and hours. Scotland and Lancashire have concluded new district agreements, the former containing a slight concession to surface workers. South Wales has reached a deadlock over the method of appointing arbitrators to hear a claim for an increase of wages, but neither there nor in other districts are the owners seeking any lowering of conditions. Moreover, wages have become a less frequent cause of local pit disputes than non-unionism.

These are all indications of the kind of change in the spirit of labour that one would expect to accompany trade improvement. The total effect is so far slight, but the autumn may see more trade union activity. Agriculture is one of the industries in which some gains have already been recorded—a dozen or so counties have advanced their minimum rates a little.

Industrial Reorganisation and Wages

In textiles the situation is quite different, revealing a new phase of state intervention in industry. An earlier article* described the breakdown of collective agreements in the weaving section of the cotton industry, and the appeals of the organised employers and the trade unions to the Government for the statutory enforcement of wage rates. Since then the undermining of wage standards has gone on steadily; there has been no recovery in trade or return of profits; the pressure of competition from wage-cutting employers has forced the hands of many who would have preferred to adhere to the agreed rates. The Cabinet, however, was reluctant to act on the industry's appeal; it was by no means sure of the attitude of employers and unions in the other great industries towards government intervention to keep up wages. But eventually their resistance gave way, partly perhaps because of the desperation of the case, and partly because employers in some other industries, having become alarmed at the progress of undercutting among themselves, were more disposed to see an experiment in enforcement in the cotton trade. (The student of historical parallels will find from the pages of Mr. and Mrs. Hammond's *The Skilled Labourer* that the employers' arguments of to-day were anticipated by their predecessors in 1819 and 1826 when they asked for legislation for the enactment of a minimum wage to stop undercutting.)

The Government Bill is a severely restricted measure. It applies only to cotton-weaving factories in a carefully limited area—Lancashire and parts of the adjoining counties—and it runs for only three years. The Minister of Labour is not to enforce all existing agreements, but only such as he may be requested to enforce on the joint appeal of employers and unions. He further safeguards himself against accusations of partiality by having an advisory body of three members. He takes no responsibility for enforcement (as the State does under the

* See THE ROUND TABLE, No. 92, September 1933, pp. 832-5.

Great Britain: The Slippery Slope

Trade Board and Agricultural Wages Acts). Offending employers can be sued by aggrieved operatives in the civil court for withheld wages, or can be prosecuted in the police court and fined, in which case, presumably, the initiative would have been taken by the employers' association or the union. The Bill is simple enough, but that is only half the battle. What agreement is to be declared enforceable? Obviously if the industry is in a state of confusion with employers paying widely differing rates, it is impracticable to go back to the old complicated price list that has been discarded over the larger part of the trade. Before the Minister can act under the Bill, therefore, a new and simplified list will have to be negotiated, possibly making drastic changes in the methods of wage payment, not all to the operatives' advantage. And if the parties fail to make a new agreement—as may well happen, for the cotton trade does not take kindly to new or logical solutions—then the Act will be a dead letter. There will be no prospect open but another period of drift and, in the end, a trade board.

The influence of the Bill will not, however, be confined to cotton; for now that the Government has once conceded the principle of statutory enforcement of collective agreements other trades are likely to ask for its application to them. The woollen and worsted industry may come to this position, although it seems more ready to fulfil the conditions required for a trade board. It differs from cotton in the relative prosperity to which tariffs have restored it, but its wages standards are even more chaotic. Disorganisation has gone far; agreements have collapsed and although the Ministry of Labour has rejected the union demand for a trade board, and has prevailed on the employers to meet the unions, the old tradition of collective bargaining through an industrial council is dead. The employers will not go further than stabilising 1931 rates (which would mean reductions to many workers) and discouraging overtime; the unions ask for a new agreement.

Industrial Reorganisation and Wages

the restoration of half the cuts of 1931, and joint regulation of overtime. Now the ball has been tossed back to the Government again.

The movement for a 40-hour week has dropped somewhat into the background with the recovery in employment and the interest in wage claims. The engineering and ship-building unions continue to press it on their employers, without receiving any satisfaction. A few firms, notably Messrs. Boots at their Nottingham works, have adopted the shorter week, and the principle commands an increasing amount of theoretical assent. The Government having announced its complete hostility, British opposition to the draft convention to be discussed by the International Labour Conference is assured. Mr. Elliot has apparently been less successful in spreading his ideas of the "Leisure State" among his Cabinet colleagues than his ideas of national self-sufficiency.

ECONOMIC EXPERIMENT IN CANADA

I. THE CENTRAL BANK

ON February 22 a Bill was brought down to the House of Commons to incorporate "the Bank of Canada." Sponsored by the Government, it was introduced by the Minister of Finance, the Hon. E. N. Rhodes, and supported by the Prime Minister. The introduction of the Bill was immediately followed by some debate, and objections to the form of the Bill were raised by members of the Third party.* It was, however, passed through its two first readings in a few days, and was then sent on to the Select Standing Committee on Banking and Finance. The Minister of Finance, in introducing the Bill, spoke of the establishment of the Royal Commission to consider the creation of a central bank. He quoted the terms of reference of the Commission as follows :—

That, without limiting the general scope of their inquiry into the operation of the banking and monetary systems of Canada, the said Commissioners shall, in particular, examine the provisions and working of the Bank Act, the Dominion Notes Act, the Finance Act and the Currency Act, and the advisability of establishing a Central Banking Institution ; and

That the said Commissioners shall report their recommendations for revising or supplementing the above-mentioned Acts and for the adoption of such other measures as they may deem desirable to promote the revival of trade and enterprise and to facilitate intra-Imperial and international co-operation for the purpose of raising

* At the present time this is almost synonymous with the Co-operative Commonwealth Federation, but in the past it has been known successively as Progressive and Independent. It has contained also some small local parties. For purposes of simplicity, in this article the term "Third party" is used throughout.

The Central Bank

the level of commodity prices and for the purpose of ensuring increased domestic employment and the stability of the economic, financial and social institutions of this country.*

The Minister of Finance also quoted at considerable length from the report of the Royal Commission, which had recommended the establishment of a central bank. The Prime Minister, in supporting the Bill, gave explicit assurances that every opportunity would be given by the Government for the consideration by the Select Committee of all points of view in regard to the new bank, and set out shortly the general outline suggested for it. He was followed by the Leader of the Opposition, who congratulated the Government on bringing in the Bill, and expressed general sympathy with its objects, reserving, of course, the right to raise objections to details. Members of the Third party took a more critical view, and made some effort to have the Bill altered before it went before the Committee. Objections to the form of the Bill at this stage were ruled out of order, and the debate closed.

An interesting history lies behind the present Bank of Canada Bill. Shortly after the end of the war a central bank was discussed by members of the Coalition Government, and rejected on the ground that at that particular stage, when finance and politics were disordered, it would be inconvenient and disadvantageous to have a new authority introduced into the situation without any particular experience or prestige. It was thought that such an institution would hamper the Government in its action in regard to the finance of the country, and the proposal was dropped. Even before the war many members of the Third party, particularly western members, had felt very strongly that some new character should be given to the

* *Report of the Royal Commission on Banking and Currency in Canada*, 1933. Ottawa, King's Printer, 1933. Pp. 5-6. The Commission consisted of the Right Hon. Lord Macmillan, P.C., K.C.; Sir Charles Stewart Addis, K.C.M.G.; the Right Hon. Sir William Thomas White, P.C., K.C.M.G.; the Hon. John Edward Brownlee, K.C., M.L.A.; and Beaudry Leman, Esq., B.Sc., C.E.

Economic Experiment in Canada

banking system of the country. What they asked for was a nationalisation of the banks—that is, the complete direct control of their credit-granting and other functions that affected the public. For some time this opinion grew, but at the decennial revision of the Bank Act in 1923 it became clear to its advocates that no such action was feasible, at all events at that moment. It was at about the same time that the suggestion of a central bank was brought forward and became the subject of discussion among widely scattered groups of people, chiefly in the western provinces. They began to feel that a central bank might be endowed with powers that would enable it to exercise the direct control that they had wished the Government to possess over the policies of the chartered banks. This meant, of course, the setting up of a bank not only with immense powers, but being itself to all intents and purposes a department of government.

In more recent years the direct proposal for the establishment of a central bank has been made by all three political parties, that is to say, by the Third party, the Liberals and the Conservatives. In general one might say that the earliest initiative in the matter came from the first group. The Liberal party, who adopted the idea somewhat later, probably regarded it not only as desirable in itself, but also as a useful political move. Recognising that the members of the Third party took a far more radical view of the matter than they themselves could accept, they hoped that when in power they might introduce a Bill more in accordance with their own ideas, but doing something to placate the indignation of the Third party against the financial order of the day. The Liberal party have not been in power since this policy was adopted by them, and it has fallen to the Conservative party this year actually to introduce the Bill to establish a central bank. The impulse that moved the Government in this direction was probably twofold: a gradually formed conviction that such an institution would be valuable, and a desire to meet public

about the Central Bank

opinion. Be that as it may, the policy is one on which the Conservative party is united, and every effort will be made to put through a Bill that expresses their views of what a central bank in Canada should be. They have undertaken to pay every possible respect to suggestions made by the Select Committee. What the net result will be is difficult to say, but it is probable that some compromises will be accepted, and that an Act embodying the general views of the majority of the country will ultimately be passed and the bank established.

The Committee have not yet reached the discussion of a central bank, but have been occupied in the consideration of the policies of the chartered banks and the Bill for the decennial revision of the Canadian Bank Act. There is a good deal of hostility on the part of members of all parties towards some of the policies of the chartered banks, and there again the results of the Committee's discussions are at present uncertain. In the House of Commons on March 8 and 9 there was a full dress debate on the whole question, the time being mostly taken up with rather long speeches by members of the Third party, who were strongly opposed to certain features of the central bank Bill, considering that it directly negatived the most important of the proposals that they had been making for some time. Emphasis was laid especially on three points: first, the ownership of the shares in the central bank; second, the control of its policy; third, the powers granted under its charter. They urged that the entire stock be permanently owned by the government. They also strongly objected to the suggestion that, after the term of office of the first appointees, successors should be appointed by the shareholders, who would be members of the public. They expressed, too, a decided feeling that the powers of action conferred on the bank were inadequate. One interesting passage occurred between a member of the Third party and the Minister of Finance. The Minister was asked, when some important question of policy arose and there was a

Economic Experiment in Canada

difference of opinion between the Government and the management, who would prevail. The Minister replied quite definitely that certainly the management of the bank would have the last word. This was, of course, very definite, perhaps more definite than the Minister intended; but it defines the very essence of the discussion between the two sections in the House in regard to the bank.

The Leader of the Opposition, in speaking to the motion for the reading of the Bill a second time, expressed the policy of his party as being to offer no opposition to the second reading, relying on the word of the Prime Minister that sympathetic attention would be given to suggestions made in Committee; but he indicated that his party held somewhat different views from the Conservatives regarding the structure of the bank, which they would express fully in due time. Mr. Coote, a Third party member, quoted from the report of the (Macmillan) Royal Commission these words: "That the State must ultimately retain sovereignty in matters affecting currency." He then coupled currency and credit, and claimed that the control of the two functions could not legitimately be placed in the hands of "private enterprise." Various quotations were also made from a speech by Mr. M'Kenna, of the Midland Bank, in which he suggested that even in the case of the Bank of England the ultimate underlying control must and did lie with the government. The discussion in the House was necessarily indeterminate, and the Bill was sent on to the Committee for further discussion.

At this point, it is well to consider the economic situation to which this Bill is to be applied. At present, the banking business of the country is in the hands of ten banks, which are governed by a Bank Act that imposes various conditions and restrictions, especially in regard to the security of note issue; but there is no power outside the banks themselves that can effectively influence their credit policy. Not many years ago the general manager of one of the banks, in his speech at an annual meeting, remarked that "we are busy

THE CENTRAL BANK

carrying on the business of the country." At that time, not only was that true, but his words evoked no criticism; in fact, the country as a whole was well satisfied with the conduct of the banks. But this was in prosperous times, when criticism is always subdued. The emergence of trouble, financial and other, has led the public in the first place to put the responsibility for present disorders upon the banks, and, secondly, to demand that changes should be made in the system so as to force the banks to adopt more sympathetic policies towards debtors.

In the public mind, then, the first duty of the central bank is to exercise such control over the policies of the banks as would ensure their being sympathetic and reasonable in their relations with debtors. They necessarily have the monopoly of money supplies, prospective debtors being unable to turn elsewhere for advances, and it is felt that their policy has not been always one that recommends itself to critical observers. One special question is that of rates of interest. It has been claimed that the difference between the interest allowed on deposits and the interest charged on loans has been continuously excessive, especially in reference to smaller loans and to operations in western Canada. Although a section of the present Bank Act speaks of a maximum of seven per cent., it does not appear to be in binding form, and in fact much higher rates have often been charged. The banks' plea that the rate of interest should be proportionate to the risk involved does not meet with entire acceptance; for the view is expressed that if the risk is so great, no loan should be granted, and that business cannot be seriously carried on where advances have to be obtained at so high a rate of interest. The whole matter was discussed in the report of the Royal Commission, and a majority of the Commission were in favour of leaving the decision regarding maximum rates to the people involved; but that view does not seem to be generally accepted, and in the new Bill there will probably be a provision definitely limiting the rate to seven per cent.

Economic Experiment in Canada

A further charge is made against the banks, to the effect that the distribution of loans is unfair, the central provinces of Canada being allowed an advantage in that they get first call on funds available for loan. This the banks deny, offering proof that the distribution is a fair one; that their directors are taken from various parts of the country, there being in many sections local directors whose advice is received and taken; and that for each district there is an officer called a supervisor, who has considerable immediate authority to grant loans without reference to head office, and who, by reason of residence in the district, is in a position to understand the needs and character of the population. The Macmillan report makes the suggestion that it would be wiser for the banks to recruit their directors more generally from different parts of the country, so that in their discussions all sections would be fairly represented and adequately served.

The Bill for the incorporation of the Bank of Canada, as it stands, is a conservative document. It grants to the management very considerable powers, including that of inspection of the chartered banks. "The business and powers of the Bank" present no particularly novel features, and probably include everything that could be wisely done by such an institution. Of necessity, detailed directions about its exercise of the function of control are not expressed. In this the management will have precedent to guide them, and they must act in accordance with the atmosphere in which they work, and the materials with which they have to deal. It has been said, and wisely, that the occupant of the governor's chair must be not only a banker but a statesman, and he must proceed slowly. The Bank's power of control and regulation must depend, in the last analysis, largely upon the prestige that it succeeds in establishing, and prestige cannot be acquired in any short time.

The capital of the Bank is to be five million dollars, subscribed by the public, subject to certain limitations.

Plan of The Central Bank

No shareholder may have more than fifty shares, and no shares may be held by or for the benefit of any chartered bank or any director, officer, clerk, or employee of any bank. If the stock should fail to be subscribed in full, the balance will be taken by the government. In regard to the reserves, 25 per cent. of the note issue and deposits is to be covered by gold. This is a slight departure from the plan suggested in the Macmillan report, which would have permitted part of the 25 per cent. to consist of foreign assets. In the Bill to be considered any foreign balance held must be over and above the gold reserve. With its head office in Ottawa and such other branches as seem necessary, the Bank will endeavour to cover the interests of the entire country. The management is a matter for the exercise of the greatest possible care. It is laid down that the governor is to be a man skilled in banking, but he must be more than that. He must, as has been already suggested, have the qualities of a statesman; for the business of reconciling the interests of the Bank of Canada with those of the chartered banks will require tact and knowledge of human nature. The staff—appointed, in the first place, by the Governor-General in Council—is to consist of the governor, the deputy governor, and seven directors. When the term of office of these functionaries comes to an end their places are to be filled by election by the shareholders, subject to the approval of the Governor-General in Council. The Bank may not own the stock of any other bank, except that of the Bank for International Settlements. It is to act as fiscal agent for the Dominion government, and possibly for the provinces. An arrangement has been made by which in the course of a few years the entire note issue of the chartered banks will have been transferred to the Bank of Canada. The Dominion legal tender notes will be replaced by those of the Bank of Canada, and on the date fixed the gold and securities now held by the government against that note issue will be transferred; all gold in the hands of the banks, except that

Economic Experiment in Canada

concerned with their foreign business, will also be transferred, and its place taken by notes of the Bank of Canada.

The deposits of the Bank of Canada will consist mainly of those of the chartered banks, who will maintain their reserves in that form, the amount required being 5 per cent. of their deposits. This will bear no interest, the Bank of Canada being forbidden either to pay interest on any deposits or to accept time deposits. For a time, at all events, the chief activity of the Bank of Canada will be the rediscounting of bills for the chartered banks. Regulations for the conduct of this business are provided in the Act.

It will depend on the wisdom of the management what success may be attained under this remarkably conservative charter. There has been a large amount of criticism of the Bill, both in the House of Commons and outside it, as a practical remedy for the defects of the chartered banks. It will be interesting to watch the line taken by the Liberal members. Provided their criticisms of the Bill are not such as to destroy its character, when passed it will have sufficient general support to place it in a strong position.

In the course of all the discussion about this Bank, it is natural that the general results of the widespread establishment of central banks should have been considered. In the main their creation has been defended, but the defence, even on the part of outstanding supporters of central banks, has been somewhat deprecatory. It is impossible to consider that the most important purpose for which these central banks were created has been fulfilled. They have not proved to be the centre of a new internationalism; they have not been beyond criticism in their dealings with the gold situation; and, lastly, they have failed to bring about the unanimity of purpose that was hoped for concerning the essentials of a peaceful united world. The Bank for International Settlements, shorn of most of its power by the abolition of reparations, remains as a comparatively small institution, acting as a centre for

Marketing Reform

discussion and a kind of club for the central banks. That, of course, is not without its importance, but it hardly justifies the existence of an institution of such portentous nominal powers. Before the war there was an immense trade, national and international, carried on successfully and without friction by the banking system as it stood, and perhaps it is hardly fair to suggest that all this elaborate additional machinery has been unable to control a situation that has probably got beyond the possibilities of financial management. In Canada the expectations cherished by the general public of what a central bank is able to do seem to many people hopelessly extravagant.

II. MARKETING REFORM

SINCE the present year began there have been, both inside and outside the Federal Parliament, important developments that may well presage a wholesale reconstruction of Canada's economic life. Before the opening of the session, Mr. Stevens, the Minister of Trade and Commerce, made a speech in Toronto in which he frankly alleged that the big buyers of natural products and manufactured goods, viz., the packing establishments and the big department and chain stores, were making an unfair and improper use of their purchasing power to force down the prices they paid to the producers. The latter were therefore obliged to pay less than living wages to their employees. His observations fluttered the doves, but were generally regarded as the mere *obiter dicta* of a restless Minister. However, he later induced the Government to appoint a special committee of nine members of the House of Commons to investigate business practices, and himself assumed the rôle of chairman.

The reference assigned to the committee was exceedingly comprehensive ; it was authorised to investigate the causes

Economic Experiment in Canada

of the wide spreads between the prices paid to the producer and those charged to the consumer, wage conditions and industrial conditions generally, the effects of mass buying and mass advertising by chain and department stores, stock watering in industrial flotations, the marketing of livestock and other farm products, and all correlated problems. The committee was not long in capturing the public attention; for the first witnesses testifying before it were a group of social workers, officials administering the provincial minimum wage laws, and labour leaders, who drew a picture of employment conditions in Ontario and Quebec which tended to confirm the charges made by the Minister. They asserted that the minimum wage laws were persistently flouted and that the penalties imposed for their violation were too trivial to be effective. Bad as conditions in the Toronto area were by their account, in the Montreal district they were worse, and instances were given of girls working in candy and clothing plants for \$3.50 per week, and of the discharge of female employees who had been paid \$7 per week to make way for boys who were only paid \$3 or \$4 per week. Several of these witnesses attributed the prevalent low scales of wages to the mass buying pressure exercised by chain and department stores, who drove unconscionable bargains with manufacturers hard-pressed for orders, and indirectly compelled the latter to cut the wages of their employees.

The favourite remedy suggested was a stiffening of the minimum wage laws and the provision of much heavier penalties for their infraction. Mr. Tom Moore, however, the president of the Trades and Labour Congress of Canada, submitted to the committee an extensive programme of industrial reform; he advocated, among other things, the drastic amendment of the British North America Act to permit federal regulation of industry, a code system on the N.R.A. plan, applicable to every industry, and the establishment of a federal industrial council armed with broad powers of supervision. The press comment upon

Marketing Reform

the disturbing revelations about low wages was generally caustic, and the *Ottawa Citizen*, one of the leading Liberal papers, was moved to declare that the evidence revealed a disturbing survival of the dark ages of industrial barbarism in Canada of the twentieth century.

This exposé of unsatisfactory labour conditions was followed by a sustained indictment of the business practices of the chain and department stores by spokesmen of different associations of retail merchants. It was alleged that by means of mass buying, deceptive mass advertising, and secret trade discounts wrested from manufacturers they squeezed out local competitors and deprived hundreds of honest hard-working people of their livelihoods; that when they had the consumer at their mercy they recouped themselves out of his pocket by raising prices; and that they were responsible for a serious and widespread demoralisation of the business life of Canada. This arraignment was accompanied by various constructive suggestions for curbing their activities. Some witnesses favoured special penalising taxation; others admired the Italian plan for distribution under the corporative state; and a third contingent favoured federal regulation and a rigid code system on the N.R.A. model for the enforcement of higher business standards.

Undoubtedly a very strong case was presented by the small retail merchants, but the large distributors do not propose to let it go by default. It is understood that they are now ready to submit to the committee briefs in rebuttal, depicting themselves as foully slandered benefactors of the public, who by their efficient organisation and superior business methods have kept down the cost of living at a time when all incomes were seriously curtailed, and have saved consumers millions of dollars.

The Stevens committee was given special instructions to investigate the prevalent system of livestock marketing, which has been a subject of continuous criticism by the farming community. For nearly three weeks its sessions

Economic Experiment in Canada

have been almost wholly devoted to this problem. A series of indignant cattle-raisers have given evidence against the business practices of a small ring of powerful packing companies, whom they accuse of fixing prices day by day through secret trade arrangements. They allege that the farmers are completely at the mercy of this ring, and that until its power is broken cattle-raising cannot become profitable. Their allegations have been supported by cattle-dealers, wholesale butchers and officials of stockyard companies. Critics of the packing companies have expressed a concerted demand that a national marketing scheme for livestock should be established and that all stockyards should be brought under government ownership and operation.

The Stevens committee, as it is now popularly called, has been the target of considerable criticism; its activities are naturally unpopular with the business interests that are the victims of its inquisition, and even so strongly Conservative a paper as the *Ottawa Journal* holds that a parliamentary committee is not the proper body to conduct such a comprehensive investigation and that it will seriously disturb business without the compensation of any tangible result. On the other hand the inquiry pleases the labour elements, who think that it is bound to result in a marked improvement in labour conditions through the adequate enforcement of minimum wage laws and the abolition of sweatshops. The committee, however, has been given such wide scope that after six weeks' labour it has only touched the fringe of its task, which it can scarcely hope to complete before the end of the session. A number of departmental officials are collecting data, and the committee has also enlisted the help of special investigators and accountants, who are checking up information supplied by witnesses; but even this acceleration of its work will probably only permit it to submit a few interim reports and recommendations. For the balance of its work, it may appoint special subordinate commissions, which would carry on inquiries into different problems.

Marketing Reform

What the Stevens committee has accomplished is to make it abundantly clear that minimum wage laws have been persistently disregarded in the two leading industrial provinces of Ontario and Quebec, and that there are too many easy ways of evading them. A very real problem exists in the unwillingness of Quebec to go as far as its sister province in legislation for the protection of labour, with the result that in order to meet the competition of low wages in Quebec, which are often deliberately held up as a lure to industrial entrepreneurs, employers in Ontario, with the connivance of the authorities, have felt it necessary to lower their own wage scales. The obvious remedy is uniform federal regulation of industrial conditions, and it is known that officials at Ottawa have been making an exhaustive study of the N.R.A. code system and its practical working in the United States. Moreover it is an open secret that Mr. Stevens is convinced that a similar plan of regulation for Canadian industry is imperative and that some Canadian industrial leaders share his views. The furniture industry, for example, has actually submitted to the Government a code for its own regulation, which was compiled with the help of trained economists, and has asked for its immediate enactment by law. The provisions are modelled largely upon similar American codes.

There exists, however, in the Canadian constitution, one very formidable obstacle to federal regulation of wages, or to a code system; for all questions concerning wages, hours of labour and industrial conditions generally come within the jurisdiction of the provincial authorities. The federal government at present can do little in this field beyond turning the searchlight of publicity upon malpractices, as the Stevens committee is doing. For this reason it has had to admit its inability to secure the adoption of the international eight-hour day convention, which a Canadian delegation accepted. Hence the contention of labour leaders and social reformers is that the British North America Act should be amended without delay so as to endow the federal government with authority to

Economic Experiment in Canada

regulate industry by laws applicable to the whole of Canada. Public opinion outside Quebec has been moving rapidly in favour of such amendments, which have been publicly advocated by the leaders of the Conservative party, including Mr. Bennett, Senator Meighen and Mr. Henry, the Premier of Ontario.

Mr. Bennett recently declared in the House of Commons that any scheme for the regulation of industry or the consolidation of social legislation under federal authority was impracticable without a re-arrangement of the powers now allotted to the federal and provincial governments, that the time was ripe for such a readjustment, and that, if he remained in office after another election, he proposed to tackle the problem. But this pronouncement at once brought an outcry of protest from papers in Quebec, which urged M. Taschereau, the Premier of the province, to assume his congenial rôle of champion of provincial rights. It is clear that the problem of constitutional amendment—which, incidentally, is desirable for other reasons—opens up a vista of prolonged and bitter controversy.

While the problems of industry are only at the stage of investigation, the Government have evolved in legislative form a programme for the reorganisation of agricultural and other marketing, the fruit of exhaustive studies and consultations with representatives of the interests affected. The Natural Products Marketing Bill, as it is called, embraces all natural products of the Dominion except minerals. The core of the structure is to be a Dominion marketing board, with headquarters at Ottawa; the board is to be endowed with very drastic powers, and authorised to form local boards and to co-operate with provincial marketing boards. It will have power to provide by order-in-council for the regulated marketing of any product, to control both the export and the inter-provincial marketing of any regulated product, and to regulate the importation of any product likely to compete with a Canadian regulated product. It will also have authority to fix the

Marketing Reform

quality, grade, or quantity of any regulated product, marketed by any person at any given time, and to compensate for losses incurred through its order to export or to withhold any product from the market, or through fluctuations of exchange in connection with export sales under its orders. It will be empowered to assist by grant or loan the construction or operation of facilities for preserving, storing or conditioning a regulated product, and to assist marketing research. It will be able to compel all producers to secure licences subjecting all their operations to immediate control, and to demand full information regarding the production or marketing of a natural product from all persons engaged therein, as well as periodic returns from them to be checked by an inspection of their books and premises.

The Bill thus provides an administrative framework for regulated marketing, but its utilisation will largely depend upon the willingness of different classes of producers to organise local marketing schemes. These can be initiated in the following manner. A representative group of persons engaged in the production or marketing of a natural product can petition the Government to approve a scheme for the regulation of marketing by a local board under the supervision of the Dominion board, and if both the Minister of Agriculture and the Dominion board are satisfied that the petitioners are sufficiently representative, and that the principal market for the product in question is outside the province where it is produced, then the Government, by order-in-council, can formally approve the scheme and fix the date for its application. Its rules and regulations will straightway have the force of law, applying the principle of the compulsory pool to everybody concerned with the production and marketing of the product. There is no provision, as in the British marketing legislation, for a vote of the interests affected before a scheme comes into force.

The central board is to be armed with powers to establish local boards even where no request for them is forth-

Economic Experiment in Canada

coming, either from producers or from provincial governments. Furthermore, it is authorised to appoint special committees, on which producers, distributors and consumers shall be represented, in order to investigate—

the cost of production, prices, spreads, trade practices, methods of financing, management, policies, grading, transportation and other matters in regard to the production and marketing, adaptation for sale, processing, or conversion of any natural product ;

and in the light of their reports the board is to be empowered to fix fair price spreads. Very severe penalties, running up to a fine of \$5,000 and two years' imprisonment for an individual, and to a fine of \$10,000 for a corporation, are provided for offences under the Act.

The radical character of the Bill created general surprise ; for it was not expected to go beyond a mild plan of federal supervision for marketing schemes originating under provincial authority, or to surpass similar British legislation (on which, according to Mr. Weir, the Minister of Agriculture, it was modelled) in its complexity, its rigour and its extension of governmental power.

The measure has had a varied reception throughout the country. Spokesmen of different agrarian organisations, like the United Farmers of Ontario and the fruit-growing organisations of British Columbia, have given it their cordial approval. It has received the blessing of Mr. Short, the president of the Millers Association of Canada, on the ground that it will terminate "the insensate competition now prevailing in numerous lines of economic activity." The business and financial communities, on the other hand, regard the scheme as a revolutionary adventure for a Conservative Government ; they dislike acutely the prospect of such a sweeping interference with business, and the *Montreal Gazette*, which represents their views, has turned a cold douche of criticism upon the Bill. In introducing it the Minister of Agriculture declared that its primary aim was to secure better prices for the primary producers, and as a means to that end to facilitate the orderly export marketing of Canada's products. But Conservative confidence that

Marketing Reform

it would appeal to the farming community received a rude shock at a by-election held on April 16 in the South Oxford division of Ontario; for in a constituency predominantly rural they stressed the Bill as their chief electioneering counter, only to see the former Liberal majority of 55 increased to 1,530.

This result emboldened the Liberal party to declare open war on the Bill and to intimate their intention of fighting it clause by clause. On the second reading Mr. Mackenzie King devoted a two-hour speech to an exhaustive and unsparing denunciation. He rose to great heights of indignation, declaring that it contemplated an intolerable invasion of individual rights and "set liberty at naught"; that it was a fundamentally unsound plan for enforcing scarcity; that it would involve the establishment of a cumbersome bureaucratic machinery, and open up the possibility of a continuous drain upon the public treasury; and that it would create monopolies and open the doors of favouritism and patronage. He also argued that many of the Bill's provisions were unconstitutional, and he moved an amendment to the effect that while assistance to the orderly marketing of natural products was desirable, the powers delegated in the Bill to unknown and unnamed individuals should be struck out.

The defence of the Bill was entrusted to Mr. Stevens, the Minister of Trade and Commerce, who contended that since other countries, including Great Britain, were committed to quota systems and to regulation of production and marketing, Canada must have some form of marketing regulation if she was to keep her trade bargains with other countries and do justice to her producers. If the legislation was novel and experimental, he said, "this country and its people, staggering under their loads, have been clamouring for something out of the ordinary." The Bill was supported by Mr. Woodsworth, the leader of the C.C.F. group, who welcomed the Government's adoption of socialistic principles. However strenuous the opposition of the Liberals may be, the passage of the Bill

Economic Experiment in Canada

is thus assured. Moreover, virtually all the provincial Administrations, even including the Taschereau Ministry in Quebec, have intimated their approval of the objectives of the measure, and have either passed or introduced the concurrent provincial legislation that is necessary to give the scheme a chance of successful operation.

Meanwhile in British Columbia the Liberal Administration of Mr. Pattullo, which took over a welter of financial and economic troubles from its Conservative predecessor last November, has boldly used its majority to drive through the legislature, in face of strong protests from the Opposition and from local business interests, a Special Powers Act, which clothes it with practically dictatorial powers over the finances and the whole economic activities of the province, and enables it to perform between sessions all the functions of the legislature. On the authority of this legislation there has been established a provincial "Economic Council," whose duty it is to study the economic problems of the province and to devise progressive measures of reconstruction, which, if necessary, will be enforced by a code system on the N.R.A. model.

The code idea, indeed, is becoming almost fashionable in Canada; for the legislature of Alberta has passed a law establishing a system of codes for such industries as exist in the province, and the legislature of Nova Scotia has been asked to take drastic measures for the regulation of the local system of distributing gasoline. It is interesting to note, moreover, that, while the federal Liberal party is violently opposed to such schemes of state regulation, some of these measures have been sponsored by Administrations of the Liberal stripe. The new trend of legislation indicates that the doctrines of laissez-faire are now out of favour in Canada, and that the great American experiment embodied in the N.R.A., although its success is still far from assured, has had a profound effect upon Canadian opinion about economic problems.

Canada.

April 1934.

AUSTRALIA : PROBLEMS OF FEDERALISM

I. THE CONSTITUTIONAL CONFERENCE

IN political discussions it is always useful to remember that the inconclusive is not necessarily unimportant. Judged merely by the decisions taken, the fortnight spent in Melbourne in February by the leaders of the seven governments of Australia in reviewing the working of the constitution was largely a waste of time. No agreement was found possible except on a few minor points, which could have been, and in fact were, disposed of in less than half a day. Nevertheless this was the first opportunity, since the Royal Commission on the Constitution presented its report in 1929*, for a comprehensive review of the working of Australian federalism ; most of the governments had made thorough preparations for the discussions, and there emerged one clear line of controversy of which more will be heard in Australia in the next ten years. Some fundamental issues were clearly stated.

The Conference grew out of a promise by the Prime Minister, made in the hope of averting a secessionist vote at the referendum in Western Australia last year†, to support the holding of a convention to discuss the whole federal problem. This particular proposal did not commend itself either to the Western Australian electors or to a Premiers' Conference held later in the year. Instead, it was agreed that Commonwealth and State Ministers should

* See THE ROUND TABLE, No. 78, March 1930, pp. 408-15.

† See THE ROUND TABLE, No. 91, June 1933, pp. 681-3, and No. 92, September 1933, pp. 905-7.

Australia : Problems of Federalism

themselves discuss the subject of constitutional revision. A Premiers' Conference could not indeed actually initiate constitutional amendments, any more than a convention could. The responsibility of initiating amendments rests with the Commonwealth Parliament alone. But the three less populous primary-producing States (Western Australia, South Australia and Tasmania) have been so discontented of late with their present position that some such interchange of views was clearly called for.

To have held the Conference just at this particular time, however, was rather a pity, though perhaps unavoidable. If delay had been practicable, it might have been wiser to have waited until the Commonwealth Grants Commission had completed its exhaustive enquiries into the position of the three primary-producing States, and until it was possible to discern more clearly how far present difficulties are mere temporary effects of the depression. As things turned out, the Conference opened disappointingly, with far-reaching financial demands on the part of some of the States, and with the frank statement by the Commonwealth that the time was inopportune for any general constitutional revision.

The financial relations of Commonwealth and States occupied most of the time and thought of the Conference. The State Premiers had had a conference of their own before the main proceedings, but they were by no means unanimous in their views. Led by Victoria, all the States except New South Wales agreed in putting forward, as a general proposition, the claim that the constitution should be amended so as to secure increased financial resources to the States. Some specific amendments were proposed in furtherance of this view, but none commanded the support of all five States. South Australia proposed a return to the principle that was in operation during the first ten years of federation, and to secure to the States, by constitutional amendment, one-half of the customs and excise revenue collected by the Commonwealth.

The Constitutional Conference

Allowing for payments already made to the States, this was estimated at present levels to involve the handing over of an additional £7½ million. Victoria suggested that the Commonwealth should be excluded altogether from income taxation—which at present rates would release some £9 million for the States.

In a conference where majority decisions are impossible, objections to any plan become very much more significant than its advantages, and these specific proposals were never very seriously examined. The general proposition, however, was subjected to searching criticism. As the constitution now stands, the Commonwealth's taxing powers are unlimited, save that it must not discriminate between States; and over customs and excise its powers are exclusive. The States thus have concurrent powers of direct taxation, and of indirect taxation other than duties of customs and excise. In theory the resources of the States could be increased in one of three ways: by assigning to them (as South Australia wished) some fixed share of Commonwealth revenues; by giving them an exclusive power (as Victoria wished) in some part of the present area of concurrent powers; or by giving them a concurrent power in some part of the area from which they are at present excluded. The third method was examined carefully but was found impracticable. The first and second, both of which involved restriction of the Commonwealth's taxing powers, were rejected by the Commonwealth, with the support of New South Wales.

The Commonwealth gave three main reasons for opposing constitutional amendments along any of the lines proposed. First of all, much was made of the fact that in order to assist in the restoration of industry the Commonwealth had made remissions of taxation which in a full year would amount to about £9 million, and was budgeting for a small deficit in this year and next. Accordingly, it could not make any substantial concession to the States without either increasing taxation (which it was pledged not to do)

Australia : Problems of Federalism

or else running into heavy deficits (which it would be financially unsafe to do). In any case, if the States needed more money, let them occupy the field of taxation that the Commonwealth had just evacuated. This point was raised to combat the idea that the Commonwealth still has large surplus revenues available, rather than for its intrinsic constitutional importance. But it served also to emphasise the fact that whatever State expenditure is met by the Commonwealth must, of course, be borne by the people of all Australia.

In the second place, it was contended by the Prime Minister—and the argument was ably elaborated by Mr. Stevens for New South Wales—that deficits of the magnitude now being experienced by the States were purely a phenomenon of the depression, and would disappear as conditions improved. It was unnecessary and dangerous to make, on a depression basis, permanent alterations in the financial relations of Commonwealth and States. Special consideration should certainly be given to the position of the three smaller States, but only the future course of export prices, and the ability of Australian industries to strike a balance between costs and prices generally, would show how far State difficulties were due to permanent factors. This was an effective political argument, though it deflected rather than answered the ultimate contention of its opponents that the real constitutional problem sprang from the financial dominance of the Commonwealth—a permanent factor which had its roots in the constitution itself.

In the third place, both the Commonwealth and New South Wales urged that the commitments of the Commonwealth afforded a weighty objection to any proposal for fettering Commonwealth powers. The founders even of American federation recognised the danger of fettering financially the government charged with the responsibility of meeting national emergencies. Not only is the Commonwealth responsible for defence, but it has made itself

The Constitutional Conference

responsible, under the Financial Agreement, for maintaining the financial stability and credit of the whole of Australia. The importance of these considerations was admitted, though perhaps not fully enough recognised, by the other governments.

For New South Wales, Mr. Stevens further expressed the view that (apart from the special position of the three smaller States) the whole financial problem could be solved without recourse to constitutional amendment. State difficulties would be removed if three conditions were fulfilled: first, if the Commonwealth were to shoulder some of the States' debt on soldier settlement during such period as it was being excused the payment of interest on its own war debt overseas; second, if a certain amount of overlapping in government administration were eliminated; third, if further treasury bill accommodation could be arranged to tide over the next year or two. The suggestion that the Commonwealth should take over some further portion of State debts was pressed independently by Queensland and by Western Australia, and was supported by South Australia as an alternative to her own plan. It was reported that possibilities along these lines were being investigated, but the subject appears to have been dropped altogether.

In the view of the other States, the constitutional problem of finance, properly so-called, is the growing financial dominance of the Commonwealth. This was surveyed, in the outstanding speech of the Conference, by the Victorian Attorney-General and acting Premier, Mr. R. G. Menzies. The financial provisions are generally regarded as the crux of any federal constitution, and the effect of the Commonwealth constitution in this regard was brilliantly stated, as early as 1902, by Alfred Deakin:

As the power of the purse in Great Britain established by degrees the authority of the Commons, so it will in Australia ultimately establish the authority of the Commonwealth. The rights of self-government of the States have been fondly supposed to be safe-

Australia : Problems of Federalism

guarded by the constitution. It has left them legally free, but financially bound to the chariot wheels of the Commonwealth.

Not only is the Commonwealth's taxing power in terms unlimited, but it has exclusive control of what are in fact, if not in logic, the most flexible source of revenue, customs and excise duties, covering between them most of the field of indirect taxation. For the first ten years after federation the States were provided for in the constitution, but after that the revenues raised by the Commonwealth were distributable at the sole discretion of the Commonwealth Parliament itself. (By the financial agreement of 1927, of course, the Commonwealth did effectively fetter its own discretion, so far as concerns the payments therein provided for.) It should perhaps be added that the constitution (by section 96) expressly empowers the Commonwealth to make grants to States on such terms and conditions as it may think fit.

These provisions affect all the States in the same manner, though in different degree. In their railways, their roads, their water supply systems, their problems of land settlement, of education, of housing, of unemployment, of child welfare, and of agriculture, State governments are faced in general with responsibilities that are increasing rather than diminishing. Their sources of revenue, on the other hand, are relatively inelastic. In the case of the three less populous primary-producing States (Western Australia, South Australia and Tasmania), dependence upon the Commonwealth appears to have become chronic. Students of the United States' constitution will know how far and how fast a similar position has developed there. Hitherto, the Commonwealth has used with great restraint its power of imposing conditions as the price of a grant. But many people think that such restraint is difficult to justify in principle. It would hardly be likely to survive any very radical ventures by one of the States concerned. In any case, the investigations that precede the making of a grant amount in substance to something very like Commonwealth

The Constitutional Conference

supervision. The following passage from the speech of Mr. Butler, the Premier of South Australia, will serve to illustrate the point :

South Australia should not have special investigations made into its developmental projects, nor should it be asked to define its future policy preparatory to receiving a grant. Yet that is what we have been asked to do recently. . . . Let the Parliament of South Australia . . . decide the policy of that State, and not be subject to the opinion of a special committee appointed by the Commonwealth as to whether or not it shall be furnished with the money necessary to give effect to it.

For the more populous States, the problem raised by Section 96 is still, in the main, one of the future. But in Victoria at any rate there is some fear of the extension, under easier financial conditions, of the system inaugurated before the depression in connection with housing and with main roads. The provision of funds by the Commonwealth, by way either of grant or of specially cheap loans, coupled with more or less detailed control over their expenditure, is a mode of establishing supervisory relations that it is politically very hard to resist. There is some fear, too, of the Commonwealth's dominating position in the Loan Council, and some anxiety lest in critical times there might be a tendency to establish some control of loan expenditure, as the natural corollary of the Commonwealth's assumption of responsibility for the financial credit overseas of the whole of Australia.

Mr. Menzies put his view of the alternatives open to the people of Australia in the form of a triple choice. In the first place, he said, we may decide to proceed as at present, and allow the Commonwealth's financial powers to be exercised unchecked. The result would be, in his view, that there would be greater supervision and control of the States by the Commonwealth and that the federal system of government would be reduced to a mockery. The second possibility is an admission that experience has shown that federalism is unstable, and that it would be

Australia: Problems of Federalism

better to adopt consciously and deliberately the unitary system of government. The only other possibility is to reverse present tendencies, and to confer upon the States an independent as distinct from a hierarchical financial status.

With the exception of New South Wales, the other States agreed that merely to leave existing forces to their operation would inevitably be to produce what the Premier of Queensland (Mr. Forgan Smith) called "unification by attrition." For New South Wales Mr. Stevens thought that, always providing some satisfactory permanent basis could be found for making special provision for the three less populous States, present tendencies might easily be left to their operation without endangering the federal character of the constitution. The general contention of the other five States was expressed in their pre-conference resolution that "unless unification is to be adopted as the ultimate goal, amendment of the Commonwealth constitution is necessary to put the State governments in a permanently stable position."

This controversy disclosed the ultimate issue in Australian constitutional development: are we to have a federal system based on the continued existence of strong States? Except Queensland, all the Governments represented at the Conference answered this question unhesitatingly, some almost passionately, in the affirmative. On this issue the Royal Commission in 1929 had been divided, four members adhering to the federal type and three contending that a unitary government with extensive decentralisation in administration would be the best form of government for Australia. The majority view was based on the vast area to be governed, the wide differences both economic and social between the different communities, the strength of the historic attachment to the States, the advantages of stimulating local knowledge and public spirit in government, and the importance of confining to limited areas the economic and industrial experiments to which Australian democracies are prone.

The Constitutional Conference

These considerations were not canvassed at the Conference except by Mr. Butler, the Premier of South Australia. Others contented themselves with affirming that the overwhelming majority of the people still believe in federalism, and would resist any explicit attempt to destroy it in favour of a unitary system. This is certainly true. The Australian Labour party has unification as one of the planks in its platform ; but the two Labour Premiers at the Conference (Mr. Collier of Western Australia, and Mr. Forgan Smith of Queensland) played no more than a watchful part. Mr. Collier, indeed, explained cheerfully that his whole appearance at the Conference was "without prejudice," inasmuch as the people of his State had voted decisively for secession and a great petition was being prepared praying for Imperial action to set Western Australia free from the Commonwealth. Mr. Forgan Smith did pronounce definitely in favour of a unitary form of government as the proper one for Australia, along the lines laid down by the minority Commissioners in 1929. But both he and Mr. Collier appeared to agree that unification was an impossible policy under present conditions, and that in the meantime steps should be taken to strengthen the position of the States.

Mr. Forgan Smith differed from all his colleagues in thinking that the drift towards unification was inevitable and could not in the long run be arrested. In all States, however, there is growing an anxious feeling that this may very probably be true. The growing interdependence of Australian economic life reinforces at every turn the contention that production, transport, land settlement, industry, and the whole range of trade and commerce can only be controlled, in a country like this, by one ultimate authority, and that must be the authority responsible for defence and external affairs and the tariff.

Nevertheless, if this be the trend of development, it will meet with strong resistance. The leaders of the less populous States went back to their capitals mollified, but not really satisfied, by the Commonwealth's express promise

Australia : Problems of Federalism

to put the States' disabilities grants on a more permanent footing, over and above anything that the Grants Commission may advise when it reports later in the year. They went back profoundly anxious about their future place in the federal system. They went back without any conviction that the Commonwealth Government really understood the outlook of a State whose budget stability depended on the extent to which its policy commended itself to a distant Commonwealth authority. There was much recognition, on all sides, of the fact that Australians are one people, and that to create issues between Commonwealth and States is to set men to wrestle with themselves. But there was little real approximation of points of view. Perhaps a broadly based settlement of the problem of State disabilities would go a long way towards altering the situation. But the prevailing post-conference temper in all State capitals except Sydney was one of disappointment and of criticism of the Commonwealth Government. The Sydney *Bulletin*, on the other hand, was outspoken in its denunciation of "provincialists at Melbourne."

The Conference proceeded, towards its close, to deal with some twenty detailed matters about which some need had arisen for constitutional amendment ; but very little agreement was found possible. The Commonwealth had circulated memoranda setting out the present constitutional position, and the States had come prepared to indicate their attitude one way or the other. Since in most cases the changes discussed were in the direction of more extended federal powers, the general attitude on the part of the States was one of opposition—not always, as it appeared, very well reasoned opposition, based on the merits of the proposals themselves.

The Commonwealth cannot have received much encouragement from these proceedings to repeat the experiment of consulting the States in conference as a preliminary step in the initiation of constitutional change. Naturally the fact that some States opposed a given suggestion

The Constitutional Conference

would not of itself in any sense preclude the Commonwealth from proceeding with a constitutional amendment in the ordinary way. But it was doubtless hoped that some agreement might be reached under which the States would exercise their constitutional power to "refer" some of the matters to the Commonwealth Parliament, and thus vest power in the Commonwealth Parliament without the necessity of a referendum. The Conference discussed navigation, industrial law, aviation, company law, the jurisdiction of the High Court in cases between residents of different States, the exhibition of cinematograph films, wireless broadcasting, and several other matters; but only on a proposal authorising the Commonwealth to carry out, within territorial limits, certain fisheries conventions was there complete agreement.

An interesting discussion took place on a proposal from Tasmania to remove the present restriction by virtue of which the Privy Council is precluded from entertaining appeals on matters concerning the limits of the constitutional powers of the Commonwealth and States *inter se*, except in cases where the High Court has certified that the question is one that ought to be determined by the Privy Council. The High Court has exercised this power very sparingly, and has only given a certificate on one occasion. Since most of the constitutional cases that arise in Australia fall within the category just described the result is that in substance the High Court has been the sole interpreter of the Commonwealth constitution. This was deliberately intended by the framers of the constitution, but the Tasmanian Government felt that greater continuity, greater clarity, and greater freedom from local prepossessions would be obtained by allowing appeals to go freely to Westminster. No support was forthcoming, however, for this proposal.

The opposition was based partly on the view that if in a self-governing community the judiciary is not thought to be satisfactory, the remedy is in the hands of the community

Australia : Problems of Federalism

itself ; partly on the view that in the light of Canadian experience there is no certainty of obtaining from the Privy Council greater clarity or continuity of interpretation than from the High Court of Australia ; and partly on general imperial grounds. The constitutional cases not uncommonly arouse considerable popular feeling, and if criticism of constitutional decisions is inevitable (as it seems to be), it is on the whole more satisfactory that the criticism should be directed against a local tribunal than that it should be deflected into nationalist or anti-imperial channels, as might easily happen, here as elsewhere, under the system proposed.

A good deal of thought was given during the Conference to the complex problems of inter-state trade. The ideal of the founders of the federation was embodied in the constitution (section 92) in the form of a resounding but rather vague declaration that "on the imposition of uniform duties of customs, trade, commerce and intercourse among the States . . . shall be absolutely free." A number of difficult questions has arisen under this section, and a long series of judicial decisions has left the position in a state of most embarrassing uncertainty. It is impossible to say how far the section affects the States' powers of quarantine, how far it prohibits the States from regulating, on a uniform and non-discriminatory basis, such matters as transport, or even how far it controls the Commonwealth as distinct from the States. The emergence of State marketing schemes based on the control of domestic sales in order to sustain export markets has also created new problems under the section. The Privy Council in a recent decision treated the section as restricting State powers in this regard much more drastically than the High Court had determined, and as the law stands at present compulsory marketing schemes can apparently be established only by co-operation between the Commonwealth and States, based on the assumption that the section does not operate to control the Common-

Riots at Kalgoorlie

wealth. Some States at the Conference wished to have the section amended so as to enlarge their powers to establish marketing schemes, but the matter was found too difficult for immediate decision, and has been remitted for expert consideration by a committee representing all the governments. This development may perhaps turn out to be the most fruitful single step taken by the Conference.

II. RIOTS AT KALGOORLIE

A CAMBRIDGE man who went from Kalgoorlie to the Boer war has recorded that when homesickness visited him out on the veldt, it was not to England that his heart turned but to the red plains of Kalgoorlie. There is a charm about this city in the wilderness which is undeniable, although judged by all ordinary standards it is waterless. Before the water was brought from the coast, the local salt water had to be distilled. Then the genius of man laid a pipe 350 miles long, and water is now pumped that distance, to make possible in the desert baths, gardens and the amenities of civilisation.

The population of Kalgoorlie is far from homogeneous. In the mines are to be found men of British race, working beside Jugo-Slavs and Italians. The eating-house and refreshment business is largely in the hands of Greeks. Asiatic races are not represented to any important extent, there being a law against their employment on the mines.

"Foreigners" have lived so long on the fields that the children of many of them are already adult. These children are bilingual, speaking the language of their parents as well as English. As a rule, these people naturally become segregated in different national colonies. There are Jugo-Slav areas, and Italian areas. This segregation is intensified by the fact that hotel licences are given to naturalised British subjects. Thus there are hotels where Italian is the principal language used, and Italians the principal customers.

Australia : Problems of Federalism

Mrs. Rosa Giannitti was the proprietress and licensee of the Home-from-Home hotel, and to this hotel on Saturday, January 27, 1934, at about midnight, came George Edward Jordan, a young man well known in fire brigade circles. He was refused admittance, and about this time a window was broken.

Jordan again visited the hotel on the evening of Sunday, January 28, and had an altercation with the barman, Claudio Mattaboni. Jordan received a blow in the face and went away. Later he returned to the hotel; there was another altercation and Mattaboni again struck him in the face. This was outside the hotel, and Jordan fell backwards on the hard pavement, fracturing his skull. He was removed to the hospital and died the next morning. Mattaboni was arrested and has been committed for trial.

Rumour was very busy throughout the district that fateful Monday. Jordan was fairly well known, and it was said that he was stabbed, that he was stoned, that he was kicked to death. Medical evidence at the inquest indicated that Jordan's skull was unusually thin. People say that if only Jordan had had a normal skull, the riots would not have happened. They say that if the hotel had been closed, in accordance with the Licensing Act, that Sunday, the events leading to the riot and the riot itself would have been avoided. Here we must recall that Kalgoorlie has usually decided what part of the licensing laws it will observe. The Licensing Act provides for hours of closing and so on, and particularly forbids open house on Sunday. No Kalgoorlie hotel bothered to observe these restrictions. Even when the police used powers to order the closing of hotels while there was danger of rioting, one of the principal hotels carried on as if there were no order, and the proprietor was fined by the courts.

On Monday, January 29, Jordan died in the Kalgoorlie hospital, and that night a crowd of roughs and young hoodlums gathered near the Home-from-Home hotel. Presently a stone was thrown, and the crowd became active.

Riots at Kalgoorlie

It broke windows, looted the bar, set fire to bedrooms. The fire brigade was called. The crowd interfered with the brigade, obstructing the firemen and chopping the hose with axes. Neighbouring houses, also Italian, were attacked, and then, for good measure, Greek establishments were included in the violence. The mob, gathering courage, proceeded to the neighbouring town of Boulder, where they gutted hotels and shops, in the presence of a large crowd of sightseers.

Next night, Tuesday the 30th, rioting broke out again. The mob assailed the camp of Jugo-Slavs at Boulder. The Jugo-Slavs defended themselves, using firearms. There was something in the nature of a battle near the Ivanhoe dump. One man was killed on each side. Six of the attackers were wounded. Up to this time the local police had done their best, but they were mercilessly ill-used, and there seemed to be little or no help from the citizens. By Wednesday the 31st, reinforcements of police were in possession of Kalgoorlie, and the riot was at an end.

The attitude of Kalgoorlie against "foreigners" is not easy to describe. Indeed it is full of anomalies. It is difficult to imagine the mines at Boulder without Jugo-Slavs and Italians, for these men are of wonderful physique and are great workers. Every now and again we hear of protests against the employment of "foreigners." Nevertheless, they are admitted to the unions, who have protested against the mob attacks on "foreigners" who were unionists. On the other hand, there were resolutions at meetings of miners against working with "foreigners."

Many people in Kalgoorlie believe that the "foreigners" bribe shift bosses and so secure jobs. The contention is that thus the sons of Australian miners are deprived of employment. If, however, officials are open to bribery, it is strange that the temptation only originates with foreigners.

The instant condemnation of the outbreak expressed by the Labour Ministry at present in power in Western

Australia : Problems of Federalism

Australia, and their prompt action to check it, did not win general approval from workers on the fields. Two members of the Ministry who happened to be in the neighbourhood immediately endeavoured to calm the troubled waters. Ultimately they made their influence felt in the councils of the unions, but at first they met only black looks and opposition. There is no saying what might have happened if the crisis had not been vigorously handled by the police. The intended or unintended results of the mob's action might have crippled the town, and this should have been clear to the thinking men in the unions, yet the action of the Government in sending police reinforcements from Perth to Kalgoorlie received nothing but condemnation in union utterances.

The result of the outbreak has been to strengthen the hands of the police department, which has viewed the growth of hooliganism with increasing disfavour. The Licensing Act will now be as strictly enforced on the fields as anywhere else. The proceedings taken as the result of casualties and offences have been accepted without comment. The police are greatly hampered, however, by the difficulties of getting statements ; for the victims of the outrage are so intimidated that they are unwilling to incriminate anyone.

The damage done by the riots has been variously estimated. The only figure having official support is in the neighbourhood of £60,000. Consuls of the countries affected have already opened negotiations with regard to compensation for damage to property and persons. Italy sent £100 for the assistance of her nationals who had been involved.

In Kalgoorlie one hears of "foreigners" and "Britishers," the "foreigners" being those of foreign descent or foreign origin. For instance, in common use of the expression, no difference is made between naturalised Italians, alien Italians, and native-born British subjects of Italian descent. When it comes to international action,

Riots at Kalgoorlie

these anomalies are bound to cause difficulty and perhaps hardship. That there is any continuing vendetta between the various races is open to doubt; for intermarriage occurs frequently enough not to be a novelty, and partnerships in the prospecting field cross the racial barrier fairly often. Normally, Kalgoorlie is an orderly, good-natured and easy-going community, and it may be expected to settle down to its rôle of the friendly town.

To the people of Australia in general the affair in its suddenness and magnitude gave a real shock. There had been no warnings of danger, and the outbreak appeared so much in excess of the incident from which it arose as to be rather mystifying. The press, both in its leading articles and in the letters of correspondents, was vigorous in condemnation of the riots and hearty in its sympathy with the victims. The feeling that the affair was "un-Australian" expressed at once amazement and shame.

Australia.

March, 1934.

SOUTH AFRICA: THE LION AND THE UNICORN

I. POLITICAL CHRONICLE

OUR last instalment of the chronicle of South African events ended towards the close of January, on the eve of the second session of the seventh Union Parliament. The ensuing three months have been marked by four events: Prince George's tour of southern Africa, a steady recovery of prosperity, the parliamentary session, and the often fiery debates, within and without the walls of the House of Assembly, on the Status Bill.

Of Prince George's visit it can be recorded with satisfaction that South Africans of all colours and political creeds were delighted to welcome their royal visitor, and believe that, in spite of the strenuous social duties he had to face, he enjoyed himself here. There can be no doubt about the return of prosperity. The rains that ended one of the worst droughts South Africa has ever experienced came in time to freshen up the country before Prince George saw it and to send honourable members up to Cape Town for the session in a more cheerful frame of mind than had at one time seemed possible. Conditions were and are improving daily in the countryside, where the rains are being seconded by the efforts of the taxpayer. Farmers' special relief, farmers' interest and mortgage measures, help for the Land Bank, export subsidies in great variety, are all contributing to keep the farmers on their feet. Gold-mining, our other great industry, is booming. The mines are offering more and more employment to Europeans and Bantu month by month; new areas are

Political Chronicle

being leased from the State ; new ground is being explored, old workings reopened, and even the dumps of tailings worked over ; for the world price of gold makes it worth while to crush great masses of low-grade ore and promises a marked extension of life to the industry on which the present standard of living in South Africa depends.

Thus, with agriculture recovering and gold-mining going from strength to strength, the commercial and industrial communities have plucked up courage ; there are signs of activity everywhere and unemployment has eased considerably. On the other hand, the diamond mines of Kimberley and Pretoria, for which South Africa has so long been noted, are in a condition of suspended animation, and throughout the country the effects of the strains of the past few years are still apparent. The programme for the session and the budget alike reflect past stresses, present cares, and hopes for the future.

The Earl of Clarendon opened Parliament on January 26. The first part of the session that followed was occupied largely with committee work ; it is only since the Easter recess that the results of these labours are being made known. A full statement of the work of the session must therefore stand over till the next number of THE ROUND TABLE ; here it will only be possible to discuss finance and the Status Bill, and to indicate briefly the scope and nature of the rest of the work in hand.

The Speech from the Throne noted, as usual, the "friendly and cordial" relations that subsist between the Union and "other members of the Commonwealth and foreign nations." The cordiality was emphasised by the election of our High Commissioner, Mr. Charles te Water, to the presidency of the Assembly of the League. It is, however, tempered by the fact that our trade agreements with our nearest neighbours, Mozambique and Southern Rhodesia, are both up for review, not without plain speaking on the part of the new Rhodesian Premier, Mr. Huggins, to which His Excellency tactfully refrained from referring.

South Africa: The Lion and the Unicorn

Next, and still on the plane of high politics, three Bills were promised:

to bring the Union's legislation into harmony with the present constitutional position and to regulate the King's acts as Head of the Executive of the Union and the use of Royal Seals in connection therewith.

The chiefest of these Bills is the Status Bill, which is dealt with in the next section.

Perhaps half the Speech dealt, significantly, with the troubles of the farmers. Ours is predominantly an agricultural community—overwhelmingly so if the non-Europeans be taken into account, as they ought to be—and what with drought, floods, foot-and-mouth disease, locusts, fallen world prices, the contraction of home markets, and, too often, riotous living on the *platteland* at times when silver was nothing accounted of, the farmers have been hard hit. Moreover, as a recent Economic Commission has shown, the roots of unemployment lie in the rural areas. Hence the emergency measures of agricultural relief adopted in 1933 are to be continued, including the strict limitation of the amount of interest claimable under the Farm Mortgage Interest Act of that year. There is also to be a state-aided, very nearly a state-financed, campaign against soil erosion as well as provision for assisted irrigation, land settlement, rural education (both general and agricultural), the further extension of public health services into the country districts, where it is badly needed, and an overhaul, needed equally badly, of the systems of rural co-operation and credit. At the urban end, there is to be a determined effort, accompanied perhaps by pressure, to induce municipalities, tenderers for government contracts, and other public or semi-public employers to employ more white labour, if possible on a fifty-fifty basis; the coloured folk will come in with the white as part of the civilised labour force of the country, and the redundant Bantu are to seek their livelihood on the land, whether

Political Chronicle

their own or other peoples', and in the gold mines, where, for the moment at all events, the demand for their labour is keen. Further, Mr. Hofmeyr, Minister for the Interior, has drafted a Slum Clearance Bill which should strengthen the hands of municipalities in dealing with that evil. For the rest, legislation is promised covering workmen's compensation, insolvency, liquor, criminal procedure and evidence, while General Smuts, Minister of Justice, has introduced a General Law Amendment Bill, a consolidating measure which will bring the laws of the four provinces more closely into line with one another and relieve our judges of many of their present perplexities.

Finance always comes last and unobtrusively at the end of any Speech from the Throne; but since Parliament originated in and still lives by finance, it is fitting that finance should have pride of place in any detailed account of a parliamentary session. The Union has two budgets: one for general purposes, the other for the state-owned railways and harbours. In presenting the latter, Mr. Pirow stated that the surplus on last year's working was a little under £1,000,000, to which must be added a fortuitous £300,000 arising from the sale of stock. This surplus will reduce the accumulated deficit to about £2,500,000, and has already enabled the Minister to restore most of the cuts in wages, and encouraged him to hope that in the coming year it will be possible to spend an additional £1,500,000 in wages, to restore normal working hours, to set all the shops going again at normal pressure, and to embark on a ten years' scheme for straightening and otherwise improving our main lines, at the ultimate cost of another £10,000,000. Meanwhile, the railway administration has taken over the pioneer, but bankrupt, Union Airways, Limited, thereby enabling the Minister to co-ordinate air and rail transport, and strengthening the Union government's hold on the power of the air, which is destined to play an increasingly important part in the affairs of southern Africa.

South Africa : The Lion and the Unicorn

The general budget is the most cheering that Mr. Havenga, our Treasurer, has been able to present for several long years. Thanks to the recovery of business, and above all to the large revenues that flow in from the gold mines, the revenue for 1933-34 amounted to nearly £40,000,000, which was about £3,500,000 above the estimate. Since expenditure had been kept within the limits assigned, less by rigid economy than because the amount earmarked for relief of interest on farm mortgages had been over-estimated by more than £1,000,000, the net surplus, after £1,914,000 of accumulated deficit had been extinguished, was £4,510,000. Mr. Havenga, however, prudently declined to utilise this for the remission of taxation. Rather he proposed to use it to wipe out the memory of certain desperate measures that were taken a year back. Of the amount derived from leased gold mines, £1,900,000 goes back to the account from which it was then borrowed, for our mines are after all a wasting asset ; £1,000,000 goes towards clearing off the deficit on the pensions fund ; £650,000 goes via the Land Bank to help credit and co-operative associations, and £960,000 to the humdrum redemption of public debt.

The estimated revenue for the current year is £36,796,000 and expenditure £33,988,000. The estimated surplus is therefore £2,808,000 ; but since the budget figures are based on the situation as it was some months back and revenue is still rolling in most encouragingly, it is safe to prophesy that, barring accidents, the estimate will be exceeded. Of this surplus, £287,000 is to be carried forward, but the rest is to go in remission of taxation. First, income tax payers are to receive a primary abatement of £400 instead of £300, and a rebate of 20 per cent. on what remains. The budget next gives restoration of the penny inland and Commonwealth postage, and reduction of other stamp and telegraph charges ; the abolition of quit-rents on farms ; a slight but very welcome reduction of customs duties on tea, coffee, rice and sundries ; and,

Political Chronicle

better still, the promise that though the export subsidies that weigh so heavily on most of the foodstuffs of the country are to continue in full force till June 1, 1935, thereafter they will be diminished by one-third annually and will disappear, let us hope for ever, in the middle of 1937. It is an open secret that but for the dislocation that would have been caused by the sudden cutting down of these subsidies, the Government would have gone much further and faster than it actually proposes to do. For the same reason the Government has dealt gently with the customs tariff, in which revenue and protective duties are most unscientifically interlocked. It is good to know that it is undertaking a thorough overhaul of the whole confused and burdensome system.

Behind and around the discussion of these financial and other measures, a controversy has raged upon the international status of the Union and the future relations of the parliamentary parties to one another. The two issues are intimately connected. The political situation is governed by the fact that the two great parties, the almost exclusively Afrikaner Nationalist party led by General Hertzog, and the mixed British and Afrikaner South African party led by General Smuts, are working together in a pact or coalition, and are contemplating fusion. But a strong section of the Nationalists, strongest in the Cape province, has rallied to Dr. D. F. Malan, ex-Minister of the Interior, and gives the Ministry its support only so long as it maintains "sound national principles." The programme of the projected new fusionist party will be announced towards the close of the session at the end of May. It remains to be seen how far it can be made acceptable, on the one hand, to the small "Old Unionist" wing of the South African party, and, on the other, to the much more numerous Malanite wing of the Nationalist party. Some indication of the difficulties involved has been given in the debates which have recently taken place over the Status Bill.

South Africa : The Lion and the Unicorn

II. THE STATUS BILL

THREE years have elapsed since the last full dress debate in the South African Parliament on the constitutional relations between the Union and the British Commonwealth. The occasion then was the submission of the draft of the present Statute of Westminster for the approval of Parliament, and the debate revealed considerable divergence of opinion regarding the effect that the Statute would have upon the status of the Union. The Prime Minister and his Nationalist followers were emphatic in declaring that it involved the right of secession and neutrality, while the members of the South African party were equally emphatic in maintaining that the unity of the Empire remained unimpaired. Ultimately the House of Assembly approved of the draft "on the understanding that the proposed legislation will in no way derogate from the entrenched provisions of the South Africa Act." This understanding is purely conventional, as no reference thereto is to be found in the Statute itself. General Hertzog, in accepting this amendment, which had been moved by General Smuts, was grateful "to have come to finality with regard to our constitutional freedom."*

But "finality" in South African constitutional issues, as our past history shows, is an ideal difficult of attainment. Since 1912, when the Nationalist party came into being, constitutional issues have been the main dividing line between Government and Opposition in Parliament. For the last twelve months the bitterness of party strife has been stilled by coalition, yet in the foreground of the "seven points" upon which the coalition was built stood the maintenance of the Union "as a national unit on the basis of the sovereign independence that had been guaranteed to it by the Statute of Westminster."† The

* See THE ROUND TABLE, No. 84, September 1931, pp. 913-914.

† See THE ROUND TABLE, No. 91, June 1933, p. 689.

The Status Bill

success of coalition gave rise to a movement for the permanent fusion of the two parties; but this march towards fusion has, to say the least, been gravely impeded by the attitude of Dr. Malan and his followers, who hold that fusion with a South African party that includes the "Old Unionists" would be a betrayal of Afrikaner traditions and a surrender to the forces of capitalism and imperialism. At the same time, Dr. Malan is anxious to reunite the two sections of the Nationalist party before the programme of the projected new party is drawn up finally—a desire which General Hertzog, the creator of the Nationalist party, naturally shares. It follows that, if this end is to be achieved and a future split in the Nationalist party averted, the programme of the new party must be such that the Malanites can accept.

Early in the session, these issues were raised in correspondence that passed between the Prime Minister and Mr. F. C. Erasmus, secretary of the head committee of the Nationalist party in the Cape Province, Dr. Malan's stronghold. Both agreed that room must be found for all "Afrikaners," whether English- or Afrikaans-speaking, who shared the same inner convictions; General Hertzog emphasised the point that those convictions must be the test of Afrikanerhood, and not blood and speech as so often in the stormy past. The committee then asked that sovereign independence be so described in the programme that there can be no mistaking its meaning; that the right to make republican propaganda be entrenched; that within a reasonable time steps be taken to appoint a South African as Governor-General, to abolish appeals to the Privy Council, to make nationality square with "sovereign independent status" as defined above, and, generally, to eliminate all "constitutional anomalies." Finally, they asked that their reading of the Statute of Westminster be accepted, to the effect that the Crown is divisible, and that the Union has the right of neutrality and, in the last resort, of secession.

General Hertzog replied that everyone would be free to

South Africa : The Lion and the Unicorn

advocate republicanism, monarchism, fascism or anything else ; that he was already considering the problem of nationality, and was ready also to consider the abolition of appeals as soon as certain business already in the hands of the Judicial Committee had been disposed of, and the appointment of a local citizen as Governor-General as soon as there was a popular demand for it. He stated further that though, since 1926, he himself had never doubted the reality of sovereign independence, the divisibility of the Crown, and the twin rights of neutrality and secession, he feared that any attempt to define these things would lead to confusion rather than clarification, and might even suggest that South Africans doubted their reality.

The Cape committee obviously did not relish the Premier's ranking of republican propaganda alongside so many other forms of political activity ; but they jumped at his admission that he believed in the divisibility of the Crown and the rights that arose therefrom, and also at his assurance that the measures which the Governor-General had announced at the opening of Parliament "to bring the Union's legislation in harmony with the present constitutional position" would be in accord with the idea of sovereign independent status. Meanwhile, to resolve the doubts and even alarms to which the publication of this correspondence had given rise, Generals Hertzog and Smuts exchanged letters which made it crystal clear that the Hertzog-Erasmus pour-parlers were a domestic matter, designed solely to close the breach in the ranks of the Nationalist party and in no sense to define the platform of the projected new party. The programme of that party must still be drawn up by the leaders of the two great parties and confirmed by their respective party congresses. "As to the divisibility of the Crown," wrote General Hertzog, "the right of neutrality and the right of secession, they are matters of interpretation upon which we differ."*

The publication of the Hertzog-Erasmus correspondence

* *The Cape Times*, February 17, 1934.

The Status Bill

on the eve of the introduction of the Status Bill and its two allied measures undoubtedly created a false impression of their object and nature. Rumours were soon current that the Bills would abolish British citizenship in the Union, proclaim King George as "King of South Africa," and destroy the last constitutional safeguard of the provincial system by depriving the King of his veto. Protest meetings were held in Durban, East London, Johannesburg and several lesser centres on the ground that the Status Bill was "destructive of our liberties." The omission to publish these Bills in the Gazette before their submission to Parliament, as is customary, encouraged extravagant criticism under an erroneous impression of their contents, all the more as it was not known at the time that the delay in publication was due to the necessity of consulting His Majesty.

The Status Bill was introduced in the House of Assembly on March 22. It is an instrument "to provide for the declaration of the status of the Union of South Africa, for certain amendments of the South Africa Act, 1909, incidental thereto, and for the adoption of certain parts of the Statute of Westminster." The preamble, after referring to the resolutions of the Imperial Conferences of 1926 and 1930, and more particularly to the well-known "Balfour formula" on Commonwealth relations adopted in 1926, proceeds to define the status of the Union "as a sovereign independent State as hereinbefore defined." Clause 2 declares that the Parliament of the Union is the sovereign legislative power in and over the Union and that no future Act of the Parliament of the United Kingdom shall apply to the Union "unless extended thereto by an Act of the Parliament of the Union." Clause 4 vests the executive government of the Union in its domestic or external affairs in the King, "acting on the advice of his Ministers of State for the Union"; any reference in the South Africa Act and in this Act to the King shall be deemed a reference to the King acting on such advice.

South Africa : The Lion and the Unicorn

These are the crucial clauses of the Bill. Among other provisions around which controversy raged are the abolition of reservation ; the deletion of the words " of the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland " in reference to the King's title in the oath of allegiance to be taken by members of Parliament ; and the substitution of " Union national " for " British subject " in those sections of the South Africa Act that define the qualifications of members of Parliament. The last two modifications, when divorced from their context, seem drastic enough, but it is difficult to disagree with the ministerial interpretation of their meaning and effect. The words deleted from the oath of allegiance to be taken by members of Parliament are redundant, because it is patently clear from another section that the King referred to is the King of Great Britain and Ireland as by law established. The substitution of " Union national " for " British subject " involves no real change, since every British subject who could qualify for membership of Parliament under the South Africa Act would become a Union national under the existing law of the Union. The distinction between domicile and residence is too slight to affect the issue for this purpose, and in any event the clause refers only to the qualifications necessary for membership of Parliament.

The Bill was sponsored on behalf of the Government by Mr. Oswald Pirow, Minister of Railways and Defence, the best " neutral " on the ministerial side and the only Nationalist member of the Cabinet who took part in the debate on the second reading. The case for the Government was that the Bill went no further than a declaration of the existing relations of the Union and the Commonwealth ; that it did not in one iota go beyond the resolutions of 1926 and 1930 and the Statute of Westminster ; that it did no more than " dot the i's and cross the t's," and was in no wise influenced by the Erasmus-Hertzog correspondence. General Smuts, in one of the most impressive speeches of his long career, did much to allay doubts and

The Status Bill.

suspensions in stressing this view. Sovereign independence, he asserted, meant no more in the Bill than what was implied by the "Balfour formula," the essence of which was the "equation" between Great Britain and the Dominions. He made no secret of the fact that on secession, neutrality and a republic "he stood absolutely where he stood before." No member of the Cabinet advanced the contrary view. The silence of the Prime Minister was significant.

The opposition to the Bill was led, not by a Natal member as might have been expected, but by Colonel C. F. Stallard, a South African party front-bencher and a member for a Witwatersrand constituency. In his opinion the Bill went beyond the resolutions and beyond the Statute of Westminster. It was a matter upon which the other members of the Commonwealth should have been consulted. Clause 4, he maintained, was revolutionary. It destroyed the personal prerogative of the King, it did away with the flexibility of the Constitution and upset its equilibrium. General Smuts, however, contended that the King in his executive government, by what has long been a binding constitutional usage, exercises his powers only on the advice of his Ministers, and that all that the Bill attempted to do was to bring the legal relationship into harmony with existing practice. General Smuts admitted that the King may choose a Prime Minister on his own authority and that there were plausible grounds for assuming that in certain circumstances his personal discretion might be exercised in dismissing a Ministry or even in dissolving Parliament.

In winding up the debate, Mr. Pirow announced that he would move in Committee amendments to clause 4 whereby the reference to the King as acting on the advice of his Ministers would be qualified by the words, "save where otherwise expressly stated or implied," and that the existing constitutional conventions affecting the Governor-General in his choice or dismissal of Ministers,

South Africa : The Lion and the Unicorn

and the summons, prorogation and dissolution of Parliament should remain untouched. These amendments will go far to remove the objections to the diminution of the Royal prerogative, for it is a moot point whether the personal prerogative survives in any other sphere. It is perfectly clear that the King cannot declare war or make a treaty without the co-operation of his Ministers, but it is by no means clear whether he cannot refrain from action though advised to take it. Mere inaction is not equivalent to action ; the Ministers would have the constitutional option of resignation. The standpoint of Colonel Stallard and his few supporters was that the translation of a usage into statute law was a material change, for disuse does not destroy the legal efficacy of a constitutional right. The King's personal prerogative may be dormant, but it might come into play in time of emergency, for instance if his Ministers should give him unconstitutional advice. They maintained that the ministerial amendments did not go far enough, and in Committee they pressed staunchly for the preservation of all the royal prerogatives, known and unknown. They fought to the last ditch through an all-night sitting.

As a sop to sentiment the Government restored the reference to " British subject " by specifying in the section dealing with the qualifications of members of Parliament that Union nationality may be acquired *inter alia* by domicile as a British subject.

Objection was raised in some quarters to the retention of the title of Governor-General for the representative of the King, on the ground that it savours of past subjection. These purists might well be reminded that the title of Governor is still used by the executive Heads of the American states, although a century and a half has elapsed since their secession from Great Britain. A more important issue, which does not arise directly from this Bill but is bound up with its principles, is the need for clarifying the present status of the Governor-General. As the repre-

The Status Bill

representative of the King he is empowered to exercise most of the functions of the monarch; nevertheless he is not immune from legal process in his personal or political capacity. The prestige of the office still stands high in the Union, but the strong and very natural desire that in the near future the Governor-General should be chosen from our own citizens might conceivably weaken that prestige. The example of Ireland is too patent to be ignored. It might well be considered before the break with existing usage has taken place whether the Governor-General should not be given security of tenure for a specified period and immunity from legal process during his continuance in office.

Since the Status Bill is primarily declaratory of our claim to full nationhood, the debate in the House has necessarily been confined to its effect upon our external relations. The internal aspect has received much less attention. Yet the abolition of reservation has an internal as well as an external effect. The Union constitution is flexible, yet not so fully flexible as that of Great Britain; for the South Africa Act entrenched some of its clauses by requiring for their amendment a two-thirds majority at a joint sitting of both Houses. It also attempted, by the device of reservation, to give stability to some institutions, such as the provincial Councils, and to safeguard certain principles from sudden changes, *e.g.*, the provisions relating to the House of Assembly. The practical value of reservation as a safeguard has admittedly been slight, as the royal assent has not been withheld from a reserved Bill since Union, but it has always been incumbent upon the Government to proceed warily, and so far no amending legislation affecting the provinces has been brought in without full consultation and some measure of agreement with the provincial authorities. The Government has recognised that the abolition of reservation would derogate from provincial rights, and has readily agreed to bring in an amending Bill for their better safeguarding; but it is arguable that

South Africa : The Lion and the Unicorn

many other clauses of the Act of Union that have hitherto been subject to reservation are likewise entitled to some alternative safeguard. Incidentally it may be noted that the right of appeal to the Privy Council has not been in any way impaired by the Status Bill.

Dr. Malan was unfortunately ill in hospital during the debate, but his immediate followers, several of whom are avowed republicans, spoke and voted in favour of the Bill because they professed to see in it the divisibility of the Crown and the declaration of our sovereign international status with the right of secession and neutrality. With regard to neutrality, however, the Minister of the Interior, Mr. J. H. Hofmeyr, made it perfectly plain that if neutrality is used in the sense of passive belligerency we have possessed and exercised that right since 1914 ; but that neutrality in the international sense is inconsistent with our membership of the Commonwealth.

Perhaps the most unsatisfactory feature of the debate was the diverse interpretations that were given of what the Bill involved. Was it desirable to place on the Statute Book a measure upon whose fundamental implications its supporters were at variance ? Not that the Bill was hastily or carelessly drafted.

If ever a Bill (said General Smuts) was drafted in Cabinet by the whole Cabinet, this is the Bill. Some of the most contentious clauses, some of the clauses over which controversy has raged most hotly, emanated from the members of the South African party in the Cabinet.

This latter statement is puzzling but not illuminating. In justice to the members of the South African party in the Cabinet it must be said that they did not differ among themselves upon interpretation and that they left the country in no doubt what interpretation they placed upon the contentious issues.

The Bill was given a second reading with only seven dissentients, proof not merely of the solidarity of the

The Status Bill

Cabinet but of agreement by the vast majority that the Bill will promote racial peace and bring fusion a step nearer. That fact was emphasised by prominent speakers towards the end of the debate. Dr. Bremer, leader of the Cape Nationalists in the absence of Dr. Malan, insisted that

the matter is not one of politics, but one of natural development which has to be recognised by all who are prepared to co-operate. There is in actual fact no such thing as the British Empire—it is the British Commonwealth of Nations, and together with our fellow citizens of the English race, we can be proud of that association. We recognise the advantages of belonging to the Commonwealth, but we have reached a position of independence, and I think we must seek our future in developing ourselves in such a way that we shall be of importance in the world as well as in the Commonwealth.

To which General Smuts replied :

This is the sort of solution that if . . . I were a dictator, I would dictate. . . . We have had two roots of bitterness in the past ; one root was racial and the other was constitutional. The racial root is withering. . . . Let us cut the other root too. To a large section of our people their pride is not only a national pride, but a personal pride. We shall never have peace in South Africa until we satisfy that. We must settle it. . . . Whether it is neutrality or secession or any of these things, they will be decided not by legal documents nor by the phraseology of a Bill like this, but by the ordeal of facts, of great events which might shake not only this country, but even the world. But sufficient unto the day is the evil thereof. Wise men leave these things alone.

Political opportunism was at a discount during the debates. Several members from constituencies where feeling ran high against the Bill risked their political future by voting for it. There is a strong belief that the old party feuds are dead. A significant illustration of this fact was seen during the budget debate, when one of the two Roosite members in the House joined hands with the Labour party, giving as one of his reasons that in future party alignments would run on economic and not on racial lines. This is all to the good, and by the same token

South Africa : The Lion and the Unicorn

Mr. Tielman Roos himself, the sometime leader of the Transvaal Nationalists whose return to politics at the close of 1932 did so much to push the two great parties into coalition, has since declared war on the Ministry for wasting time over status and neglecting the economic troubles of the people.

There is just time to record that Mr. F. C. Erasmus, arrayed in an orange shirt, attended a meeting of Cape Junior Nationalists in Cape Town one night in April to discuss a programme that bears many resemblances to the programmes we have learned to associate with shirts.

Meanwhile, secession and neutrality are issues that by their very nature cannot be determined on legal grounds. Good will, mutual advantages, common interests are the "silken cords" that can alone hold the Commonwealth together. Should these fail, nothing else will succeed. This is the answer to the conundrum, what would happen if the King received conflicting advice from different parts of the Empire.

III. THE LATE PRESIDENT REITZ

IT has been claimed for the Status Bill that not merely in its affirmation of South Africa's freedom, but also by virtue of its having been sponsored by British no less than Dutch political leaders, it will do much to weaken the hold that the republican ideal has upon a section of the population of the Union. Apart from that, it has often been observed of late that republicanism has been losing its appeal, and that it is no longer possible to set the veld aflame with the republican cry, as it would have been even ten years ago. A Nationalist Minister in the Coalition Government has indeed gone so far as to describe agitation for a republic as a bad joke.

It is against this background that one notes the snapping of one of the few remaining personal links with the old republican governments. With the death of President F. W. Reitz,

The Late President Reitz

the last of the South African Presidents has departed. Kruger has gone, Steyn has gone, and now Reitz, in his ninetieth year, having outlived his generation, has also gone. Of those who were members of republican Governments only Dr. Leyds in Holland and General Smuts in South Africa survive. Several of the men who came to prominence during the Boer war period still remain—but within no very lengthy term the post-war generation will be governing South Africa.

Reitz was a worthy representative of his period, a period during which South Africa was rich indeed in the greatness of its men. In history, more particularly the history of the Orange Free State, he marks a transition; moreover, he was the embodiment in his own person of two of the great conflicting tendencies in South African affairs. Like Sir Jan Brand, his predecessor as President of the smaller of the two republics, he was born a British subject, in the old Cape Colony. Like him he graduated through the law to the headship of his State. Like him his prevailing policy as President was one of friendship with the Cape Colony (also therefore with Great Britain), with a united South Africa in prospect, coupled with unwillingness to associate himself with the isolationist ideals of his fellow President, "Oom Paul" of the Transvaal. But Reitz was more of a sentimentalist than Brand, and his keen sense of the distinctiveness of the Afrikaans-speaking people in South Africa made him susceptible to the hostility that was engendered by the adoption by Great Britain of policies offending that sense. Brand's policy remained substantially unchanged by the shocks of the annexation of the diamond fields and the Shepstone adventure of 1877. Reitz was less stable in his adherence to his earlier policy. Already during his presidency he sometimes deviated from it towards closer co-operation with Kruger. Later, when ill-health had compelled his resignation, and when, after his recovery, he had become State Secretary of the Transvaal, his counsels during the critical days of 1899 were not

South Africa : The Lion and the Unicorn

counsels of peace, and there were few who felt as keenly as he did the bitterness of the struggle that followed and the manner of its conclusion.

After the Peace of Vereeniging, indeed, he refused to remain in South Africa as a British subject, and became a wanderer in other lands. Later, under the influence of time and of General Smuts, he allowed himself to be reconciled to the new order, and again played a part in South African affairs. The war had left its mark on him physically, and indifferent health was the companion of his later years—even so he filled with distinction the office of President of the Union Senate during the first ten years of Union.

With his passing, South Africa has lost one of its choicest personalities, a man kindly, courteous, and with a keen literary sense—never happier, for instance, than when translating a poem of Burns into racy Afrikaans—an historical figure, who not only made history in South Africa, but who in large measure summarised in his career the history of his time ; a fitting representative of the type of cultured South African “ Boer ” at its best, illustrating all the finer qualities and some of the defects of his people. One of the sons who survive him, a worthy son of a worthy sire, is Colonel Deney's Reitz, the author of *Commando* and *Trekking On*, and a member of the Coalition Cabinet, in which those tendencies would appear to have been brought into harmony, that fought for the mastery in the old President.

South Africa.

April 28, 1934.

NEW ZEALAND AND SOME EMPIRE PROBLEMS

I. THE TRADE IN DAIRY PRODUCTS

THE most difficult and most immediate problem that the Government has to face is what action to take with regard to the proposed quantitative restriction of imports of our dairy produce into Great Britain. When the Prime Minister and the Minister of Industries and Commerce attended the World Economic Conference of 1933, strong pressure was brought upon them by representatives of the British Government to consent to the revision of the Ottawa agreement without waiting for its expiry in November, 1935, so as to enable the British Government to impose quotas on (*inter alia*) Dominion dairy produce. Obviously no Ministry, particularly one so dependent upon the vote of the farmers, could even contemplate asking the Dairy Produce Control Board to make such a suggestion to the dairy farmers of this country. At the same time courtesy as well as self-interest put a curt refusal out of the question.

It was therefore unofficially arranged that Mr. Thomas Baxter, a past president of the National Farmers' Union, and since chairman of the new Milk Marketing Board, should come out to New Zealand, on the invitation of our Prime Minister and with the concurrence of Mr. Elliot, the British Minister of Agriculture, to place before the farmers of the Dominion the views of British farmers. Mr. Baxter interviewed farmers and the Dairy Board, gave an informal address to members of Parliament, and was

New Zealand and Some Empire Problems

cross-examined in a two hours' conference. His message was thus summed up in one of his speeches: "Our market is saturated and we do not want you to send us any more." His concrete proposal was that New Zealand dairymen should agree to a reduction of 10 per cent. in the amount of cheese exported by them, approximately 10,000 tons, this restriction to be preliminary to a restriction at a later date upon the importation of butter.

The case for the dairy farmers that was made in answer to Mr. Baxter may be thus summarised:

(a) Such a restriction on the export of cheese would penalise New Zealand only, and as the importation of cheese into the United Kingdom has been practically stationary since 1925, this factor cannot be the cause of low prices of milk.

(b) Any reduction in the export of cheese would damage the New Zealand dairy industry as a whole; for many farmers who have developed herds eminently suitable for cheese-making would be detrimentally affected by the swing-over from cheese to butter, and some factories would have to close down.

As to future restriction of butter imports, Mr. Baxter's attention was called to the fact that as the dairy industry is responsible for 45 per cent. of the Dominion's income from exports, such restriction would make it impossible for her to meet her obligations to Great Britain. By far the greater part of the land available for farming is suitable only for dairying, and much is still in process of development. Unless this development can be continued—and New Zealand's financial obligations have been undertaken on a certain basis of planned development of the country—the whole financial structure of the industry will break down and a state of financial paralysis ensue.

The whole system of quota restrictions is retarding the recovery of normal conditions in world trade. There were some who said that saturation point had been reached in butter consumption in 1926, when the consumption of butter in Great Britain was 5,500 tons per week, whereas the average consumption at the present time is 9,000 tons per week. By the development of the Dominion and the

The Trade in Dairy Products

supply of large quantities of high-class foodstuffs at reasonable prices, the cost of living in the United Kingdom has been kept down and its great industrial development aided. The restriction of output in New Zealand will endanger a large amount of British capital, the security for which is dependent upon the improvement and more profitable use of large areas of undeveloped land.

Apparently, from what Mr. Baxter said during his visit, the British Government is averse to reducing the large quantities of low-grade condensed milk and milk powders coming from foreign countries, or to restricting in any way supplies of margarine. These were possible steps suggested in New Zealand, where it is considered that restriction of imports of butter, leading to increased prices, will bring about the further development of margarine production and importation. It is maintained that practically the only advantage that dairy producers have derived from low prices is the increased consumption of butter, with a corresponding decrease in the consumption of margarine. A deadlock was therefore reached.

On the one hand, the Ottawa agreement precludes Great Britain from restricting Dominion dairy produce imports except by voluntary arrangement, while Great Britain's trade agreements with foreign countries, under which certain guarantees have been given, prevent her from acceding to the demand of the Dominions that she should first cut her foreign supplies. On the other, here we have an established industry, upon which the country is largely dependent, with specialist machinery and marketing organisation, efficiently developed in one direction and unable to direct its output into other channels without the expense of scrapping its present plant and re-equipping itself. And if that industry diminished the cheese supply and concentrated more upon butter it would find the market "thrown open to the four ends of the earth."

The unofficial envoy's mission having failed, negotiations were resumed between the Governments. Their content

New Zealand and Some Empire Problems

was eventually disclosed by the Prime Minister to a conference held at Wellington on March 13 and attended by the Prime Minister and several members of the Cabinet, together with representatives of the New Zealand Dairy Produce Control Board, the New Zealand Farmers' Union, the National Dairy Association, the South Island Dairy Association, the New Zealand Dairy Produce Exporters' Association, the New Zealand Free Marketing Association and the nine wards constituting the electorate of the Dairy Board.

The cablegrams that Mr. Forbes communicated to the Conference contained a definite declaration of British policy to regulate the United Kingdom market, in order to increase price levels and thus alleviate the position of the home producer; they also gave details of the Milk Marketing Board's scheme. The New Zealand Government asked whether the adoption of practically a free tariff, so far as British goods were concerned, would enable New Zealand to obtain the free entry of her produce to the British market. The British Government replied that tariff and quota problems were quite separate and that the British Government was already committed to a policy of regulation of imports. In addressing the meeting the Prime Minister declared that the question of regulation was out of the way for the next two years, until the expiry of the Ottawa agreement, but Mr. Coates, the present Minister of Finance, and leader of our delegation at Ottawa, called attention to the provision in the agreement that—

In the event of circumstances arising which in the judgment of either Government necessitate a variation in the terms of the agreement, the proposal to vary those terms shall form the subject of consultation between the two Governments.

He pointed out that once the British Government had embarked on a policy it did not turn back, and he urged that they should endeavour to reach a friendly agreement. He also pointed out that Great Britain would not make a

The Trade in Dairy Products

separate agreement with New Zealand and leave the other Dominions out; for the traditional policy of the United Kingdom was to discuss questions with the Dominions as a whole.

Eventually, resolutions were passed by the conference in favour of a stabilisation scheme for the local butter market, of taking steps to improve both the quality of New Zealand butter and cheese and the marketing conditions for them in the United Kingdom, of accepting the invitation of the British authorities to a round table conference to discuss the future development of the industry, and referring to the Dairy Board, in conference with the Government, the question of sending a delegation to the United Kingdom.

Various committees were then set up to report direct to the Government. They recommended, first, a subsidy to the dairy farmer of 2d. a pound on butter fat, or, alternatively, an advance of a similar amount to the industry, to be provided in the following manner. When the general average price for butter fat exceeds 10d. per pound by at least $\frac{1}{2}$ d. per pound, the Government shall collect a levy of $\frac{1}{2}$ d. per pound until the full advance has been repaid. Other recommendations were the immediate reduction of farm costs through derating, a reduction in interest rates, a reduction in tariffs, and thorough rationalisation of the industry. Finally, it was proposed that the Government should set up a Royal Commission to examine ways and means of improving the efficiency of the dairying industry.

The Conference between the Cabinet and members of the Dairy Board concluded on March 23, when the Prime Minister announced that the Board would meet as soon as possible to discuss the representations to be made to the United Kingdom authorities. The Board would submit specific plans to the Cabinet, which would then decide whether it would agree to the sending of a delegation. It had been proposed that the latter should consist of a Cabinet Minister and two representatives of the dairy industry. Mr. Forbes hoped that it would be possible to

New Zealand and Some Empire Problems

bring about such an improvement in price levels that the question of a subsidy would not arise.

II. SHIPPING SUBSIDIES

ANOTHER question that calls urgently for prompt action is the protection of Australian and New Zealand shipping in the trade between North America and New Zealand and Australia—and also between the British countries, Fiji, New Zealand and Australia—from the subsidised competition of United States vessels. This competition, which threatens the very existence of the New Zealand shipping service, cannot be overcome by unaided private enterprise.

The question has two aspects, the general imperial one, namely, the threat to British shipping generally from the highly subsidised vessels of the United States, Japan and Italy; and the more domestic one of the trade between New Zealand, Australia and Fiji. Concerted action is obviously required, but although the matter has been publicly ventilated and brought to the attention of the Governments of Great Britain, Australia and New Zealand, so far we have had to suffer “the humiliation of our abject submission to such an attack”—to quote the words of the chairman of the P. and O. company, in exhorting the executive and officers of the Union Steamship company to “keep the red ensign of Britain on the seas in the face of the worst storm that has ever threatened British shipping.”

The question is more than one of imperial prestige. The existence of the British Commonwealth depends upon a strong British mercantile marine protected by an adequate British navy. But where the interests of the Commonwealth conflict with those of the United States, we seem to be letting “‘I dare not’ wait upon ‘I would.’” Hence it is as well to set out in some detail the representations that were made to our Government on February 27 by the New Zealand Shipowners’ Federation.

Shipping Subsidies

Aid to United States Ships

Financial aid is given to the United States shipping companies by their government by means of loans for building and subsidies for running ships, as well as by statutory protection against the carrying of passengers or merchandise by foreign vessels between their own ports.

The Matson Navigation company of San Francisco, now trading between San Francisco, Fiji, New Zealand and Australia, and its subsidiary, the Oceanic Steamship company, have been granted loans for the building of three 20-knot steamers, each of about 18,000 tons gross register, the *Mariposa*, *Monterey* and *Lurline*. The last has just been finished, but owing to the depression is not yet entering upon the service. Subsidies (into which mail carriage scarcely enters) are granted to the Oceanic Steamship company for a service between San Francisco and Sydney, via Honolulu, Pago-Pago, Suva and Auckland for the *Mariposa* and *Monterey*; and also for a monthly service of cargo steamers from San Francisco and Los Angeles to Australia via New Zealand run by the Oceanic and Oriental Navigation company, which is owned jointly by the Matson Navigation company and the American-Hawaiian Steamship company.

The total annual monetary assistance given by their government to the United States vessels across the Pacific to New Zealand and Australia was stated to be as follows:—

Interest saved on loans—	£ (at par).
<i>Mariposa</i> and <i>Monterey</i>	108,189
<i>Lurline</i>	68,050
Subsidy to passenger line (four-weekly)	203,207
Additional subsidies when three-weekly service commences	62,526
Subsidy to New Zealand cargo service (now discontinued; formerly £34,879)	—
Subsidy to Australian cargo service (now via New Zealand)	43,349
Annual total	£485,321

or, omitting the *Lurline*, £354,745.

New Zealand and Some Empire Problems

The subsidies alone are more than sufficient to pay the whole of the interest at 6 per cent. upon the proportion of the capital cost that was found by the company (one-fourth), plus the interest upon the loan from the government, and to leave each year a sum sufficient to wipe out the government loan in twenty years. The company therefore acquires the ships free of all mortgages to the State at the end of twenty years, having paid originally one-fourth only of their cost and having had interest at 6 per cent. upon this one-fourth for twenty years out of the State subsidy. *In other words, the shipping company has to meet no capital charges in connection with its ships.*

Comparison with British Vessels

British vessels in the San Francisco mail service are said to be paid in subsidies per annum :

From New Zealand	£22,500
From the Tahitian government	2,080

with the following addition, if the Vancouver mail service is taken into account :

From New Zealand	£18,000
From Fiji	5,000
From Canada (\$100,000)	20,548

These subsidies, insignificant by comparison with those granted by the United States government, are given for definite services in the way of mail carriage and trade facilities. The United States government also make a discrimination in mail poundage between their own unsubsidised vessels and foreign vessels.

The object of the ship subsidy of the United States was stated by the United States Postmaster-General* to be to compensate American shipowners for three things : the much higher cost of ship construction, the higher wages of American seamen, and the subsidies of other nations.

* *New York Times*, June 7, 1931.

Shipping Subsidies

These reasons, it is contended, are not valid against New Zealand and Australian vessels. In the case of the new Matson vessels any higher cost of ship construction is far more than covered by government loans of three-quarters of the cost at nominal interest, while the Oceanic and Oriental line cargo boats were purchased from the United States government Shipping Board at the low price of \$10.25 per ton dead-weight capacity.

As regards the wages, the following comparison of the monthly rates on the American vessels with local seamen's wages was made by the Federation :—

			Wages on Matson line converted at par.	New Zealand Wages.	Australian Wages.
Oilers..	..	..	£11 6 1	£15 3 6	£14 5 9
Firemen	..	..	10 5 6	15 3 6	14 5 9
Wipers	..	..	8 4 5	13 3 6	12 9 9
Sailors	..	..	9 15 3	13 3 6	12 9 9

Moreover, New Zealand and Australian seamen receive large additions to their wages in the way of overtime and holiday payments, averaging approximately 24 per cent. extra. No holiday pay and practically no overtime are said to be paid on American vessels.

Between 1885 and 1900 the Union Steamship company of New Zealand, in conjunction with an American firm, carried on a trans-Pacific mail service between Australia, New Zealand, Hawaii and San Francisco ; but in 1900 Congress extended the United States navigation laws to Hawaii, and the Union company had then to withdraw from that trade as it was debarred from carrying either passengers or cargo between Hawaii and San Francisco. Later, a service was established between Australia, New Zealand and San Francisco via Tahiti, but the Tahiti-San Francisco traffic is trifling compared with that between Hawaii and San Francisco.

The subsidised American cargo vessels to New Zealand and Australia are free to pick up cargo at Hawaii on their

New Zealand and Some Empire Problems

return voyage, whereas British trans-Pacific cargo vessels returning to America, in addition to being debarred from any portion of this trade, are now being seriously attacked in the limited traffic that still exists between Australia and New Zealand and United States ports. Further, the Matson trans-Pacific mail liners derive a large proportion of their revenue from United States-Hawaiian traffic, from which all vessels other than those of the United States are completely barred.

Practical Proposals

The subsidised vessels of the Matson line are now competing in the domestic trade, both passenger and goods traffic, between Fiji, New Zealand and Australia. Already one passenger and cargo vessel, the *Tofua*, has been withdrawn from the service between New Zealand and Fiji. What practical suggestions are made by the New Zealand Shipowners Federation? They propose, first, that British and Dominion governments should apply to themselves the preamble to the White-Jones Act of the United States, which paraphrased would read thus:—

That it is necessary for the national defence and for the proper growth of their foreign and domestic commerce that Great Britain and the British Dominions shall have a merchant marine of the best equipped and most suitable types of vessels sufficient to carry the great portion of their commerce and serve as a naval or military auxiliary in time of war or national emergency, ultimately to be owned and operated privately by citizens of Great Britain and the British Dominions; and it is hereby declared to be the policy of Great Britain and the British Dominions to do whatever may be necessary to develop and encourage the maintenance of such a merchant marine.

Secondly, as a purely domestic action to be taken by the New Zealand government in conjunction with the government of Australia, the Federation ask that we should follow the American example and preserve our purely domestic trade for our own ships. The ships of a foreign country should be debarred from carrying pas-

Imperial Defence

passengers or goods between British ports so long as British ships are debarred from trading between the ports of the country affected. In this they put forward no new principle. The government of New Zealand has statutory power, by sections 204-206 of the Customs Law Act, 1908, to adopt by order-in-council retaliatory measures—so far as treaty obligations permit, and subject to the Imperial Merchant Shipping Act, 1894—against the ships of a foreign country that prohibits or restricts the coastwise carrying of passengers or goods or which places British ships or their cargoes and British trade and navigation generally upon a disadvantageous footing by prohibitions, restrictions, duties or preferences. The retaliation may be designed so as “justly to countervail the disadvantages” to which British ships, trade or navigation are thus subjected.

Here is an issue that raises in an acute and practical form the questions debated and shirked at the British Commonwealth Relations Conference at Toronto last year, the real unity of the Commonwealth and the ability and willingness of its members to do something more than give each other assurances of their mutual sympathy and whole-hearted support, viz., to co-operate in a practical manner in what ought to be a common cause. Or is New Zealand to be told, if her Government takes action as suggested, that it is a domestic affair of her own, which does not concern, say, Canada or South Africa, and that she must dree her own weird?

III. IMPERIAL DEFENCE

WHILE the attention of the Government and the public has been pointedly drawn to the danger that threatens the mercantile marine, even more publicity has been given by the press of New Zealand since the New Year to Great Britain's naval weakness. The warnings of experts about the declining strength of the navy, which

New Zealand and Some Empire Problems

find "strong support in the manifest uneasiness of the Dominions over the possibilities in the Far East and the safety of their trade routes," have been reproduced in some detail. Leading articles founded upon them have called attention to the fact that "one-sided disarmament defeats its own ends by weakening the security of the world's peace just as much as it weakens the British Empire." The secrecy preserved by Rear-Admiral Burges Watson on his return from the conference at Singapore has strengthened the suspicion that the present situation is critical. General approval is given to the speedy completion of the Singapore base. It is pointed out that the base has grown in importance with the trend of events in the Philippines, and that the coming independence of that country will make it vitally important to the Dutch East Indies as well as to the British Empire. It fills "the one great remediable gap" in our national communications east of Suez and the Pacific.

Captain Taprell Dorling ("Taffrail") has warned us "how dangerously disarmed we already are" :—

Our Empire to-day (he declares) is a Commonwealth of free self-governing nations linked together by the sea. The doctrine of sea-power is to secure for our ships the free passage of the sea. That free passage is the beginning and end of our safety as an Empire.

This truism would, one would have imagined, have been endorsed by every Dominion, but a New Zealand delegate to the Toronto Conference on British-Commonwealth Relations* pointed out in the *Evening Post* the following day how the ignorance of the elementary principles of sea-power had been displayed there by Canadian and South African delegates. He gave the following impression of the attitude shown by Canadians of "Left" views towards the British navy :—

A Canadian memorandum stated that all the protection their ships needed was when they were concentrated at focal ports,

* See THE ROUND TABLE, No. 93, December 1933, p. 42.

Imperial Defence

overlooking the fate that would have befallen them on the high seas or in the English Channel in the Great War had the German fleet destroyed the British. Some of the Canadians declared that they didn't need the protection of the British navy, and could have that of the American navy, if necessary; others that, if they did have the protection of the British navy, they were under no obligation to Great Britain, because if Canada didn't exist the United Kingdom would not diminish her fleet by a single ship, or, in the alternative, that the United Kingdom, for her own sake, was bound to protect the sea routes and the cargoes of food ships she required, whether they came from Canada or the Argentine. Nor could we get these Canadian isolationists to agree to any scheme of mutual defence, whether in support of the League of Nations, by whose Covenant they were bound, or in defence of the British Commonwealth. They would commit Canada to nothing. When the question arose they would consider whether the policy suggested was likely to offend the United States or not, and whether they would support it. If they did, they would send land forces to the scene of action, although how they were to get there without the British navy they were not quite clear. One speaker did suggest that in a League war, which is the only one in which the British Empire is ever to be engaged, they would be transported by navies pooled under the League!

The impression left on New Zealanders by the Toronto Conference was that its only value lay in its having so clearly manifested the dangerous length to which the disintegration of the British Commonwealth has already gone. Delegates who stated plain truths about the British navy, advocating its support by the whole Commonwealth; who affirmed the need for the co-ordination of armed forces in defence of the British system of self-government and in support of the League and world peace, were treated by a large number of delegates as if they had made a terrible *faux pas*, their advocacy being regarded as mere "boys of the bulldog breed" talk. The unity of the Commonwealth was openly denied, its existence said to depend upon the League of Nations, and its determination dogmatically predicted should the League fail to function. Concrete and vital problems were all burked. No wonder that Australian and New Zealand delegates wondered whether this really were a British Commonwealth Relations Conference,

New Zealand and Some Empire Problems

or whether they had not strayed into some Geneva assembly, filled with high ideals and pious hopes combined with impotence to take practical action.

All that has happened since the Conference has brought into high relief its absolute futility from the New Zealand point of view. The German desertion of the League, the breakdown of the Disarmament Conference, the feverish preparations for war, the growing German demand for the return of her mandated territories, the enhanced Japanese industrial competition with British manufacturers, the probable early independence of the Philippines, the difficulties of the British mercantile marine and the decline of the British navy far below the minimum strength required for security, are convincing proof that the Toronto Conference should have concerned itself with the discussion of vital practical questions, among which the defence of the Empire should have been placed first and foremost. Instead, it was occupied largely with the expression of pious generalities about the need of peace, and the support of the League and the "collective" system, to which all delegates might have subscribed without going thousands of miles across the ocean to formulate such "a pale policy."

Not only the Toronto Conference, but also the difficulties raised by the Statute of Westminster in South Africa and elsewhere, indicate how well advised our Prime Minister was when, in commending to the House of Representatives the resolution approving the draft Statute, on July 21, 1931, he expressed himself as not being

one of those who hold the view that this definite establishment of Dominion status is the final solution of the constitutional problems of the British Commonwealth. Indeed it would seem probable that the complete recognition of the equality of His Majesty's various Governments must initiate a new and very delicate series of problems. The wider the powers of the individual Governments the greater the need and the greater the difficulty of co-ordinating their activities into a common policy. The future unrestricted powers of the Dominion Parliaments must give rise to some confusion and no doubt to some conflict of views between His Majesty's various Governments.

THE WAITANGI CELEBRATIONS

It is quite evident from the protest by Colonel Stallard, a Toronto delegate, against the constitutional Bills* introduced into the Parliament of the Union of South Africa that the Statute of Westminster, instead of being a bond securing the unity of the British Commonwealth, is only the apple of discord that is hastening its disintegration.

One delegate on returning from Toronto cited these lines from the chorus in Shakespeare's *Henry V* to describe his view of the attitude of the Canadians who

with pale policy
Seek to divert the English purposes.
O England!—model to thy inward greatness,
Like little body with a mighty heart,—
What might'st thou do, that honour would thee do,
Were all thy children kind and natural!

IV. THE WAITANGI CELEBRATIONS

THE generous and public-spirited gift by the Governor-General and Her Excellency Lady Bledisloe of the Old Residency at Waitangi and of a park surrounding it was greeted with general enthusiasm. In front of the residency the Treaty of Waitangi, which brought New Zealand into the British Empire, was signed 94 years ago. Celebrations were conducted there from the second to the sixth day of February, when, before a gathering of 10,000 people, of whom 5,000 were Maoris, Waitangi was formally dedicated to the nation.

To the Maori, as an East Coast chieftain declared, the site was "holy ground, the shrine where the government and the Church of New Zealand were born." The early history of New Zealand is indeed centred in the Bay of Islands, of which Waitangi will now be the focal point. From Waitangi can be seen the Marsden Cross, marking the spot where Samuel Marsden, on Christmas day, 1814, first preached the gospel to the Maoris. Close at hand is Paihia, with the ruins of the building in which Colenso in

* See above, p. 662

New Zealand and Some Empire Problems

1835 printed in Maori the Epistles to the Ephesians and Philippians, and a few yards off by the sea-shore is a brass plate commemorating the launching of the mission schooner *Herald* in 1826 by Henry Williams, "a man brave to make peace in the Maori wars." He played a prominent part in connection with the treaty and his translation of it into Maori is classic for its picturesqueness, terseness and simplicity. Looking across the Bay from Waitangi one sees above Russell the hill on which the flagstaff with the English flag was thrice hewn down by Hone Heke because it represented the Queen's sovereignty, the evil influence that had drawn trade and money away to Auckland. In the quiet churchyard lies Tamati Waaka Nene, "sage in counsel, renowned in war," to whose influence the signing of the treaty by the Maori chiefs was mainly due.

Not only was the ground historic but many of the chief figures in the ceremony were of historic descent. Descendants of the first British resident, Mr. James Busby, who drafted the treaty, were present, while others of his descendants and those of Archdeacon Henry Williams and Captain Hobson celebrated the occasion at the gathering in London. Descendants of the chiefs who signed the treaty were there, and also Te Heu Heu, grandson of the great Taupo chief who refused to sign and to subject himself to the authority of a woman.

But there were Maoris who stood out by reason not so much of their lineage as of the fact that they represented the culture to which the Maori can attain: the Maori representatives in Parliament; Bishop Bennett, the first Maori bishop; and above all the Maori who has been so largely responsible for the renaissance of his race, Sir Apirana Ngata. He has made it his life's work to weld rival tribes into a united people, to secure for them better health, better education, to inspire them with new vigour, striving to retain for them the lands that remained theirs, and to encourage them to attain European efficiency in cultivation through their own system of Maori leadership

The Waitangi Celebrations

and communal custom. . . He took part at Waitangi in a dual capacity : as Minister for Native Affairs in the present Cabinet, and as a leader of the Maori people. He thrilled the assembled people by casting aside the top hat and black coat of civilisation, stripping himself to the waist and donning the Maori mat. His cry was not "Requiescat" but rather the "Resurgam" of the triumphant warrior. *Mere* in hand, he led some 500 bronzed braves, brandishing feather-tufted spears, in one of those *hakas* or war dances, that Domett, Browning's "Waring," thus describes in *Ranolf and Amobia* :—

The leaping, dense, conglomerate mass of men,
Now all together off the ground—in air—
Like some vast bird a moment's space—and then
Down, with a single ponderous shock—again
Down, thundering in the groaning trembling plain !
And every gesture fury could devise
And practice regulate was rampant there :
The loud slaps sounding on five hundred thighs,
Five hundred hideous faces drawn aside,
Distorted with one paroxysm wide :
Five hundred tongues, like one, protruding red,
Thrust straining out to taunt, defy, deride :
And the cold glitter of a thousand eyes
Upturning white far back into the head.

The official celebrations were simple. On February 5 the typical Maori welcomes were given by the assembled tribes to the parliamentary party and to the Governor-General ; on the 6th, the anniversary of the signing of the treaty, the tribal groups paid their respects and declared their loyalty, and after a religious ceremony His Excellency laid the foundation stone of the threshold of the *Whare Runanga*, or Maori meeting house : "This," to quote his felicitous words,

will provide a common meeting-ground, where old feuds will be forgotten and new friendships forged, where national issues can be debated and national problems approached from the Maori standpoint and explored in such a way as to assist the *Pakeha** in fully understand-

* European.

New Zealand and Some Empire Problems

ing and appreciating the Maori mind, . . . a centre where pride of race will be fostered and expanded, where Maori culture will be developed, where the Maori language in all its soft and melodious beauty will be perpetuated and where a definite impetus will be given to characteristic Maori arts and crafts.

One of the happiest features of the ceremonies was the arrival of the leading chief and representatives of the Waikato tribe, which for nearly half a century had preserved an attitude of sullen aloofness from Maori and *pakeha* alike. The effect of the Maori wars and the confiscations that supervened was to make the Waikatos one of the most suspicious and sullen tribes, so far as the advances of the *pakeha* were concerned. It took from 1896 to 1929 to obtain entry into the Waikato villages to ascertain their health and social conditions.

This great gathering of Maoris from all parts of the country gave them the opportunity, not only of discussing matters of common interest to themselves, but also of conferring with the Prime Minister and his colleagues on questions of administration, and more particularly on the vexed question of rating on Maori lands, which is regarded from the peculiar standpoint of the Maori as a legalised method of confiscation. Such a conference was the more desirable in that 75 per cent. of the adult Maori population are estimated to be in receipt of unemployment relief. Their needs being modest, the temptation is strong to rest content with their sustenance from the State and to make no effort to help themselves.

Well might the Maoris in one of their hakas refer to the Governor-General as "a tree covered with foliage, whose leaves fall as leaves of affection among all the tribes," and "as possessed of extraordinary *mana* in being able to perform the seemingly impossible task of bringing all the tribes together."

New Zealand:

March 31, 1934.

PRINTED BY W. H.
SMITH & SON LTD.,
THE ARDEN PRESS
STAMFORD ST.,
S.E., AND PUB-
LISHED BY MAC-
MILLAN AND CO.,
ST. MARTIN'S ST.,
LONDON, W.C.



A sum of 5 Paise on general books and 25 Paise on text-books, per day, shall be charged for books not returned on the date last stamped

--	--	--

